

Abbey – Ashman
Two Colonial and Pioneering Families of North America

Volume One
The American Colonists

Abbe/Abbey and Allied Families
from Beginnings in England
to the American Revolution

Margaret Abbey (Ashman) Shannon

2021 Albuquerque, New Mexico

Abbey – Ashman Two Colonial and Pioneering Families of North America
© 2021 by Margaret Abbey (Ashman) Shannon

LOC # 2018908034

Hardback

ISBN: 9781949086812

Amazon ISBN: 9798494752888

Paperback

ISBN: 9781949086805

Amazon ISBN: 9798476533788

All rights reserved. No part of this book may be reproduced or transmitted in any form or by any means, electronic or mechanical, including photocopying, recording, or by any information storage and retrieval system, without permission in writing from the copyright owner.

Copper Ave Press

Aisle 929 Books

Albuquerque, New Mexico

Dedication

To live for the moment is the prevailing passion—to live for yourself, not for your predecessors or posterity. We are fast losing the sense of historical continuity, the sense of belonging to a succession of generations originating in the past and stretching into the future.

— Christopher Lasch, *The Culture of Narcissism: American Life in an Age of Diminishing Expectations*

In loving memory of my parents
Alfred and Julia (Abbey) Ashman

And in honor of my grandchildren
Wyatt, Hannah, Kate, Zoë and Elle

May the struggles and triumphs of your ancestors be a source of strength and inspiration for you and future generations.

Preface

There was always a library in my parents' home. On the shelves, eleven volumes of Will and Ariel Durant's, *The History of Civilization* sat next to the poetry of Khalil Gibran. World War II books were alongside author Edgar Casey's explorations and works on Transactional Analysis. There were two volumes, published in 1916, that I pulled down often: *The Abbe-Abbey Genealogy*, and *The Memorial of Thomas Abbey*. I was fascinated by the lives of my ancestors. While in elementary school, I won a Daughters of the American Revolution (DAR) writing contest with a story about Captain Thomas Abbey (1731-1811) and his famous drum.

My interest in genealogy continued to grow, and I discovered more of the story of my father's Irish immigrant mother and the Ashman line. I met distant cousins online through genealogical websites and visited Enfield, Connecticut to see the statue of Thomas Abbey. The impetus to write a book about my ancestors centered around sharing this history with my grandchildren.

In 2015, when I joined the Albuquerque Genealogical Society, I had my DNA tested, found matches, and returned to the old 1916 published books about the Abbeys. I now had four granddaughters and a great niece. I saw that these family histories were about the men. Women were mentioned only in the context of their names and their position as wife or daughter. What were their stories? My knowledge of the family tree expanded. There were ancestors who had connections to royalty, one was among the first female doctors in America; there were those who were devout Puritans, as well as those who spoke out against the Puritan rigidity. My section entitled *The Lives and Role of Women* in each generation, is an attempt to look at the lives of women of that era: not through the lens of modern feminist thought, but to highlight the differences between our female ancestors and the women of today.

In 2019, I traveled through Massachusetts and Connecticut, visiting libraries, museums, cemeteries and houses that my colonial ancestors built. I came home to write. I plan to continue my chronicles beyond Volume One, which covers the origins of my maternal Abbe/Abbey ancestors in England and traced through four generations in Colonial America. They were among the first generation of a new nation, fighting for freedom, in the Revolutionary War, against those who were from the same country of origin. These ancestors had both peaceable and wartime relationships with Native Americans. They adapted some of their customs and

used their pathways, turning them into highways as the United States expanded into new territories.

Volume Two, will cover the fifth generation, Peter Abbey and six generations of his wife, Hannah Alden, tracing vast branches back to England and the pilgrims of the Mayflower.

Volume Three will follow four generations of Abbeys from New England to New York State, Connecticut, Ohio and beyond. Some eventually settled in California, Mexico and Arizona; military service took others around the globe. The women who married the Abbey men had origins in Northern Ireland, Pennsylvania and Maryland.

Volume Four will cover my paternal Ashman ancestors, who lived primarily in California. I hope to also publish a fifth volume with a focus on my parents, including stories and photographs from their lives traveling around the world.

STRUCTURE

To paraphrase the introduction of the 1916 *Abbe-Abbey Genealogy*, "A family history is never complete and we have produced only the beginning - may others continue the work." Taking up the challenge, then, I humbly offer this continuing history of my family, and urge those who follow me to continue with additional contributions.

As in the original volume, the material is presented in a common genealogical pattern. Only the Abbe/Abbey generations are numbered in Register Style. Ancestral lines going back in time, traditionally use a different numbering system (Ahnentafel). To avoid confusion using both patterns, the ancestors of the Abbe/Abbey wives are listed in bold type, followed by each generation's spouse, children and finally, facts and stories of their lives.

My information comes from documented primary and secondary sources. I have indicated which anecdotal excerpts may be hearsay only. Included are extensive in-text sources and footnotes, Wills and Inventories to illustrate details about these ancestors. Images without source citations are either my own photographs, or are copyright free images from commons.wikimedia.org.

For several generations both in England and America, Abbe was the spelling used. Captain Thomas Abbey (Chapter Five) added the "y" and it has continued to this day as the family name.

LIST OF ABBREVIATIONS USED

b. born

d. died

m. married

bapt. baptized

bur. buried

abt. about

bef. before

ca. circa/about

unm. unmarried

Dates: day/month/year

In genealogical listings: Place precedes Date; Births and Deaths precede Marriage(s).

In the 'Old' calendar, 1751 and before, the year began on March 26. Beginning in 1752, the new year began on January 1.

Currency in the British sterling system: 12p/d = one shilling; 20s (shillings) = one pound £.

Thanks to many who made this endeavor possible:

Among others, The Albuquerque Genealogical Society and the Writing and Publishing Special Interest Group; “Papa Sig” aka Michael Blackledge, for his knowledge, encouragement and support; the Albuquerque Library System, for providing a wealth of genealogical material; the research librarians, especially Lisa Kendrick, were invaluable.

Ancestry.com, FamilySearch.org, AmericanAncestors.org, and other online genealogy sites; The New England Historic and Geological Society (NEHGS) and its research librarians – including Anne Meringolo, as well as other libraries and their individual experts – including Jessica Hanson, Elizabeth Bellucci, and Sarah Lauderdale; local historical societies, museums and their knowledgeable staffs; the Boston Museum of Fine Art. The Penelope Terry Abbey Chapter of the DAR, Enfield, Connecticut and Regent Kelly Davis.

Other helpful contributors I would like to thank are: Wendy Mulligan, Connie (Fairfield) Ganz, Maise Crowther, Julie Nelson, Mara French, Leigh R. Larson, Patricia Abbot, JT and Linda Bullock, Nancy Bernard and Susan Anderson.

Thanks to my proof readers: Debra DuBois, Suzy (Killebrew) Duncan, Ginger Glasser, Bobbie de los Santos, Mike Krueger and Elizabeth (Luedemann) Fitzgerald, all of whom helped edit this book through their individual eyes, and provided patient encouragement. Many thanks to my intrepid publisher, Rose Marie Kern of *RMK Publications*, for her excellence in hours of formatting, and hand-holding.

I walked through rain-soaked cemeteries and historic homes that are centuries old and lovingly preserved for posterity. I loved every minute of it.

The isolation from the world during Covid 19’s most dangerous days gave me time to dedicate to my research and to writing. My dogs, Sophie and Maggie kept me company and dropped leashes at my feet when I needed a break.

Any errors are my own and not those of any of the many helpful souls I met along this journey. I will always welcome information and input from you the reader.

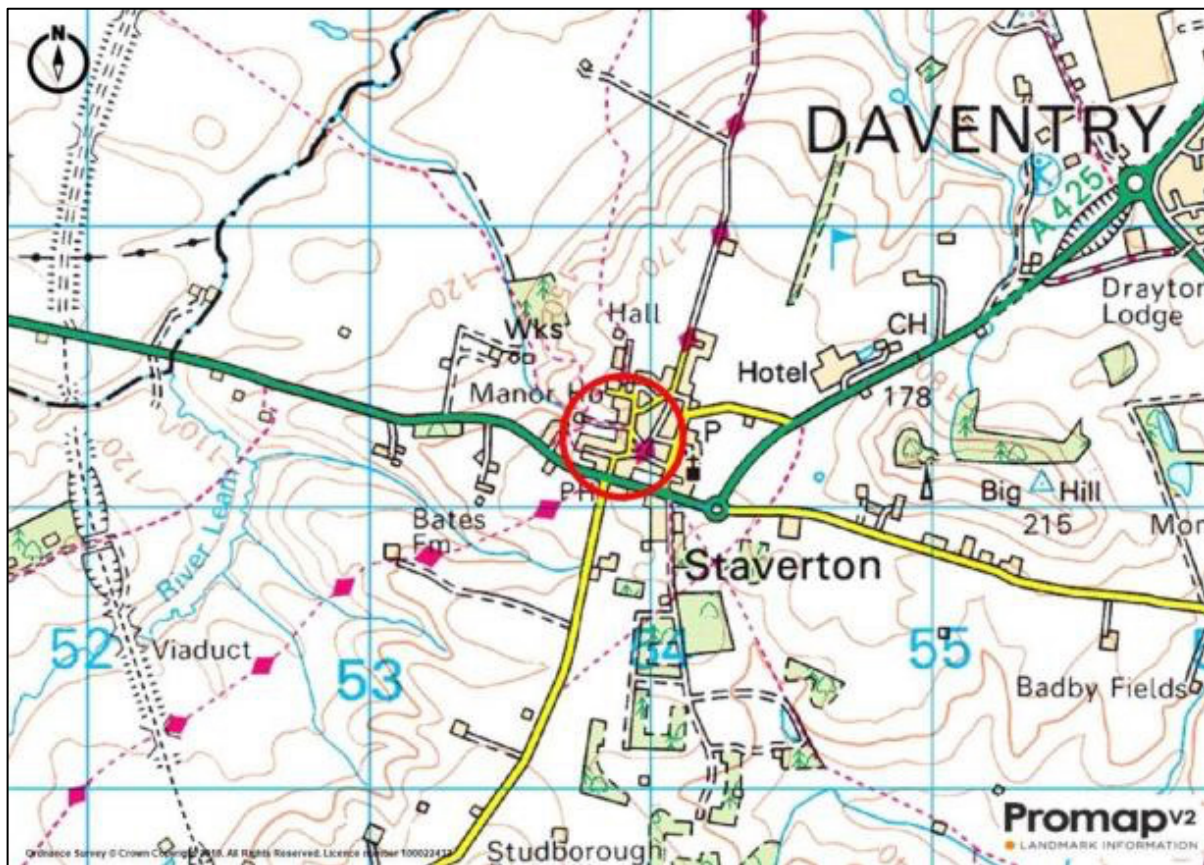
And most importantly, apologies to my husband, Richard. There is no fold-out family tree. It would have stretched across the sea and back, which is how much I love you.

Margaret A. (Molly) Shannon

Table of Contents

15	<i>Chapter One Beginnings in England</i>
21	Harberd and Cooper Family Ancestry
24	History and Inventions (ca. 1475 – 1613)
28	The Lives and Role of Women (ca. 1475 – 1613)
33	<i>Chapter Two Generation I - John & Mary (___) Abbe</i>
35	Generation One of the Abbe/Abbey Family in America
39	Mary (___), Wife of John Abbe
44	History and Inventions in This Generation (1613 – 1690)
47	The Lives and Role of Women (1613 –1690)
52	Visiting Wenham, Massachusetts
55	Travel Routes Throughout the Colonies
57	<i>Chapter Three Generation II - Thomas & Sarah (Fairfield) Abbe</i>
58	King Phillip's War
68	Sarah Fairfield - wife of Thomas Abbe
70	History and Inventions in this Generation (1656 – 1742)
72	The Lives and Role of Women (1656 – 1742)
75	Fairfield Family Ancestry
89	Elizabeth (Knight) Fairfield
91	Fishing Stage at Cape Ann and Gloucester Massachusetts
93	Fairfield Ancestry Concluded
108	Skepper/Skipper Family Ancestry
112	Fisher Family Ancestry
113	Our Royal Ancestors
121	<i>Chapter Four Generation III - Thomas & Mary (Pease) Abbe</i>
124	Generation Three of the Abbe/Abbey Family in America
128	Mary Pease wife of Thomas Abbe Jr
129	History and Inventions in this Generation (1686 – 1759)
133	The Lives and Role of Women (1686 – 1759)
138	Pease Family Ancestry
151	Pease Ancestry in England
157	Goodale/Goodall/Goodell Ancestry - Paternal Line
171	The Goodale House, Ipswich, Massachusetts
176	Visiting Plymouth and Scituate, Massachusetts

179	Adams Family Ancestry - Maternal line
185	Newton Family Ancestry
190	Vassall Family Ancestry
198	King (e) Family Ancestry
201	Lorran Family Ancestry
202	King (e) Family Ancestry Concluded
203	Vassall Family Ancestry Concluded
209	<i>Chapter Five Generation IV - Thomas & Penelope (Terry) Abbey</i>
215	The Statue of Captain Thomas Abbey
217	Poem: The Captain's Drum
219	Penelope Terry – wife of Capt. Thomas Abbey III
220	Visiting Enfield, Connecticut
221	History and Inventions in this Generation (1731 – 1817)
224	The Lives and Role of Women (1731 – 1817)
226	Terry Family Ancestry
243	Lobdell Family Ancestry
247	Helme Family Ancestry
252	Eldred Family Ancestry
255	Miller Family Ancestry
256	Eldred Family Ancestry Concluded
257	Helme Family Ancestry Continued
265	Rouse Family Ancestry
266	Helme Family Ancestry Concluded
269	Morgan Family Ancestry
281	Visiting Springfield, Massachusetts
289	Gilbert Family Ancestry
293	<i>Ending Comments</i>
295	<i>Index</i>



Staverton, a parish in the hundred of Fawsley, county Northampton, 2½ miles southwest of Daventry, its post town, and 8½ miles east of Southam. The extensive village, is surrounded by pasture lands.

The soil is of red sand, with strong clay and loam, upon a subsoil of rock.

There are fifty-two counties in England and Wales. The counties are divided into large areas known as *hundreds*, *wapentakes*, *sokes*, *liberties*, *comments*, *rapes*, *lathes*, and *wards*, which are merely names for territorial divisions of various sizes. Within each of these divisions are the *parishes* which form the smallest unit of both church and civil administration and have for many centuries formed the center of community life.

David E. Gardener, Frank Smith, *Genealogical Research in England and Wales*, Vol 1, (Salt Lake City, Utah, Bookcraft Publishers, 1956), 118.

Chapter One

Abbe/Abbye/Abbey Beginnings in England ca. 1475 – 1613

*"If you don't recount your family history, it will be lost.
Honor your own stories and tell them too.
The tales may not seem very important, but they are what binds families
and makes each of us who we are. " - Madeleine Engle¹*

The Abbe-Abbey story begins in Staverton, Northampton, England, a *staved* town, "surrounded by staves, or spikes to keep the vampires away."

This comment to my query on stackexchange.org, an excellent website for asking all sorts of questions and getting "expert" answers, made me laugh out loud. Indeed, all who do genealogical research need to be surrounded by "staves" to keep out the vampires of undocumented research and misinformation. More likely, Staverton was a town where staves or barrel slats were made, or it was indeed surrounded by a wall of wooden slats or fence.

The opening paragraph of the 1916 *Abbe-Abbey Genealogy* states, "The place of birth of John Abbe founder of the American Abbe and Abbey families, is unknown, but every indication points to one of the interior and central counties of England, as the home of the ancestors of the emigrant. It is not improbable that he was connected with the Abbye family of Staverton, *Northampton*. Stoke Bruerne, Northampton's parish registers, show that there were many marriages of Abbytes recorded there during the 16th and 17th centuries."² Since the 1916 publication, additional sources link John Abbe to the Abbye family of Staverton, Northampton. A standard error found online is locating this Abbe family in Staverton, Devon, on the south coast of England.

¹ Madeleine L'Engle Camp was an American writer of fiction, non-fiction, poetry, and young adult fiction. Her works reflect both her Christian faith and her strong interest in science, <https://www.scrapbook.com/quotes/doc/1917.html>, 10/7/2020.

² Cleveland Abbe and Josephine Genung Nichols, *Abbe-Abbey Genealogy, In Memory of John Abbe and his Descendants*, (New Haven, Connecticut, The Tuttle, Morehouse & Taylor Company, 1916), 1.

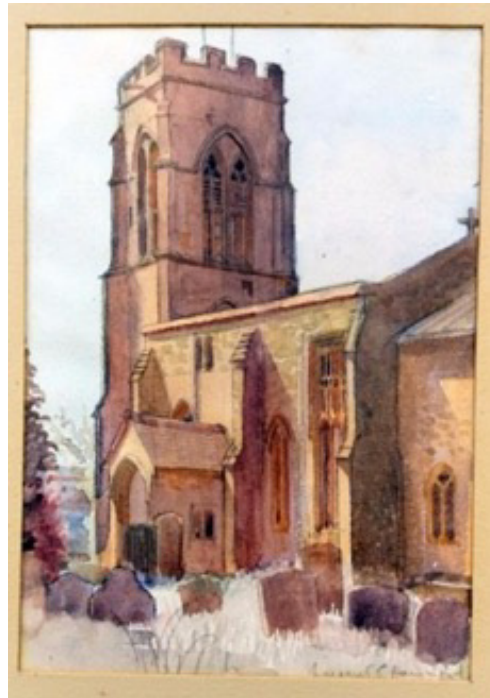
Staverton is a village and civil parish in the south-west of Northamptonshire, England.³ (Northampton is the archaic county name.) It sits at 700 feet above sea level, on the edge of an escarpment, and has views westward across the River Leam valley into the neighboring county of Warwickshire; the Malvern and Shropshire Hills are visible on fine days. Approximately a mile and a half south of the village is Arbury Hill, which is the highest point in the county at 738 feet. On the summit, there is evidence of an Iron-Age hill fort of a square shape. The River Nene rises nearby. The Jurassic Way and the Three Rivers Circular Walk pass through the parish.⁴

Before the early part of the 18th century, the original village was located behind the church. However, in 1720 a fire broke out, which caused significant damage. There may have been/or may still be Abbesses of our lineage living there; I have not done that research. The village has a manor house, situated at the end of Manor Road, and thought to have parts originating from Anglo-Saxon times. Within the town, Well Lane runs parallel to the main A425. The deeply banked sides to the lane support the idea that is an ancient right of way.

Along the western boundary of the parish runs a now-disused railway, the last mainline railway built in Britain, between 1894-1899. A village barn situated on the corner of Manor Road and Glebe Lane housed a mission for the construction laborers, the *navvies*.

St Mary the Virgin, Staverton's Parish Church, has been a site of Christian worship for well over a thousand years, although the first recorded vicar appears in records started in 1220 CE. The present church dates from about 1300 CE, with some older parts. For hundreds of years before this, possibly dating back to before 800 CE, a burial ground existed on the site, as evidenced by the raised churchyard. The main structure dates mostly from the 14th century, although traces of older architecture remain, such as the lancet window in the north-west corner, which is from the Norman period (1066 – 1154).⁵

The Abbe family is traditionally Protestant. However, since the Protestant Reformation did not begin until 1517, and the Church of England first came into being under Henry VIII in 1533, Abbesses may have been part of this parish church.

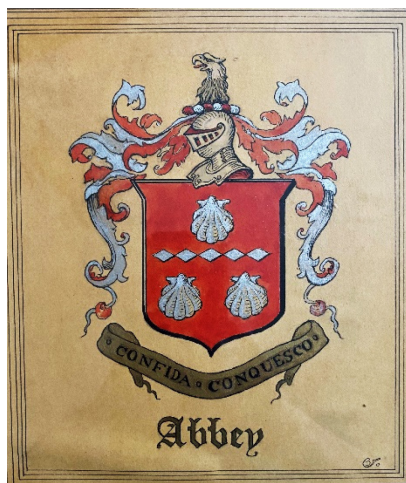


³ https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Staverton%2C_Northamptonshire, 9/20/2020.

⁴ <http://www.stavertonparish.com/info/wikipedia/>, 9/20/2020.

⁵ https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Staverton%2C_Northamptonshire; <http://www.stavertonparish.com/galleries/st-mary-the-virgin/>, 9/20/2020.

"The earliest family member found is possibly **Robert Abbe**, b. Staverton, *Westhampden* abt. 1475; July 1500 m. **Isabel** (surname unknown), b. Staverton, *Westhampden*, England 1480⁶. Note: Though often repeated in online resources, *Westhampden* is not a valid location in England; *Northampton* is the correct location.⁷ Together, Robert and Isabel Abbe had at least one child, "**John Abbe**, b. abt. 1505."



There is an interesting family legend about the origin of the family name. Robert Abbe (1475), or one of his ancestors, is said to have been an orphan or foundling "of the Abbey. "Near Staverton was The Abbey of St. James Northampton. Founded in 1104, The Abbey of St. James was notable for its relief work for the poor and the care of what they called their 'alms children.' While it can't be proven, it's undoubtedly possible Robert or one of his ancestors was *of the Abbey* - one of these alms children."

There are also some who hold to the idea that Abbe was of French origin and had a Coat of Arms: a red eagle with beak and legs of gold on a shield of silver. There is no evidence that "our" John Abbe was entitled to use these arms, or that he ever did, though this Coat of Arms was displayed in my parent's home.

Abbe-Abbey Genealogy, vi.

John Abbe, b. Staverton, Northampton England abt. 1505; m. ____ and had at least one son John Abbe, b. Staverton abt. 1530.⁸

⁶ www.leighlarson.com/robert_abbe.htm citing Jeromey Ward. All leighlarson.com sites accessed 9/20/2020.

⁷ John Marius Wilson, *The Imperial Gazetteer of England and Wales*, Vol. 6, 860, (Edinburgh, A. Fullarton & Co., 1870).

⁸ http://www.leighlarson.com/john_abbe.htm

John Abbe, b. Staverton, Northampton, England abt. 1530; m. **Joan Smith**, b. England abt. 1540.⁹ There is no further information on Joan Smith.

Another Abbe/Abbey descendant, Wendy Mulligan, aka *The Tree Dr.* on ancestry.com writes: "The *Staverton Parish Records* are accessible on ancestry.com, but I discovered whole large sections of them that have not been transcribed as of this writing. They are difficult to read but going line by line through the records I found the following Abbey baptismal records of interest because some or most of these could be (our) Thomas' sisters and brothers." Her notes regarding Images and Lines are listed below. I have included these in the following list of children of John and Joan Abbe, though in the images, no parents are listed.¹⁰

Children of John and Joan (Smith) Abbe:

- i. HELEN ABBE, bapt. Staverton, Northampton, England 1564. Image 2, 14th line of Christenings, *Staverton Records*.
- ii. JOHN ABBE, bapt. Staverton 27 May 1566; d. unknown. Image 3, 2nd line of Christenings, *Staverton Records*. The name is unreadable, my assumption of John is based on the naming patterns of the time.
- iii. FRANCIS ABBE, bapt. Staverton 1568; d. unknown. Image 4, 2nd to the last line of Christenings, *Staverton Records*.
- iv. JOANE ABBE, bapt. Staverton 1571; d. unknown Staverton (age 6 months). Image 6, 9th line *Staverton Records*.
- v. **THOMAS ABBE**, bapt. Staverton 2_ Feb 1571 (1572 new style); bur. Staverton/Roade, Northampton, England Aug 1614.¹¹ Image 6, Line 21 (last line of Christenings), *Staverton Records*, no father given.¹²
- vi. MARY ABBE, bapt. Staverton __ Jan 1574. Image 8, 9th line of Christenings, *Staverton Records*.
- vii. JOANE ABBE (second of the name), bapt. Staverton July 1575; d. unknown. Image 9, 1st line of Christenings, *Staverton Records*.¹³

John and Joan (Smith) Abbe live through the reigns of four English monarchs: Henry VIII, Edward IV, Mary I, and Elizabeth I.

⁹ http://www.leighlarson.com/john_abbe1.htm

¹⁰ The Tree Dr. on ancestry.com, *The Origin of the Thomas Abbey Family in Staverton Northampton, England*, 10 Feb, 2017.

¹¹ *Northamptonshire, England, Church of England Baptisms, Marriages and Burials 1532 – 1812*, Reference #: 300P/172, <online database>, (Provo, Utah, Ancestry.com Operations, Inc., 2014), *Staverton Parish Registers* (original). There is a second record, possibly a copy of his burial, same database, Roade Parish Registers, 4 or 14 April?, 11/15/2020.

¹² www.leighlarson.com/john_abbe1.htm; *Northamptonshire, England, Church of England Baptisms, Marriages and Burials, 1532-1812*, (ancestry.com), 9/20/2020; *Northamptonshire Record Office, Northampton, England, Parish Registers*, (ancestry.com), Reference #: 300P/172, 9/20/2020.

¹³ *Northamptonshire Record Office, Northampton Parish Registers*, Reference #: 300P/172, (ancestry.com), 9/20/2020.

Thomas Abbe, youngest son of John and Joan (Smith) Abbe, was baptized at Staverton, Northampton, England 2_ Feb 1571. In some sources, he is called *Thomas Abbe of Roade*. Roade is a neighboring village in Northampton, England, about 17 miles southwest of Staverton, where Thomas Abbe was called a *husbandman*, or farmer.¹⁴

Thomas Abbe Sr., m. Staverton May/June 1608 **Elyzabeth (Elizabeth) Harberd**, Image 43, 3rd line of marriages in the *Staverton Parish Records*. Elizabeth Harberd, is likely the mother of John Abbe, the immigrant to Massachusetts, and his siblings.

Elizabeth Harberd, possibly bapt. Edlesborough, Buckinghamshire, England 30 January 1590, daughter of John Harberd¹⁵, with no children recorded from any first marriage. Edlesborough is about 45 miles southeast of Staverton. This may be too far a distance, as the yeoman and lower classes didn't move around much, and usually married the girl next door. Edlesborough is just too far away for Thomas to go there looking for a wife, and there is no evidence that his Harberd family moved to Staverton or Roade.¹⁶ Alternately: I found a 19 January 1606, baptism of an Elizabeth Harberd, Spratton Parish, Northampton, England.¹⁷ Spratton Parish is 19.5 miles northeast of Staverton. This data seemed likely given the location; however, a 1606 baptism would make her 2 years old at her marriage!

Children:

- i. ELIZABETH ABBE, bapt. 22/28 Nov 1608, daughter of Thomas Abbey.¹⁸ Image 43, 11th line, *Staverton Parish Records*.
- ii. THOMAS ABBE JR., bapt. Staverton, Northampton, England 22 Sept 1610, d. unknown. Image 45, 7th line, *Staverton Parish Records*.
- iii. MARY ABBE, bapt. Staverton 22 Sept 1612; d. unknown. Image 47, 6th line, *Staverton Parish Records*.
1. iv. JOHN ABBE the immigrant, bapt. Staverton 13 Aug 1613.¹⁹ Image 48, the 3rd line under Christenings 1613, *Staverton Parish Records*.

¹⁴ leighlarson.com/thomas_abbe_sr.htm citing Jeromey Ward; *Northamptonshire, England, Church of England Baptisms, Marriages and Burials, 1532-1812, Staverton Parish Records, Northampton Record Office*: Image 6 is the christening record for Thomas father of John Abbey Line 21, last line of Christenings: "Thomas Abbey bapt. Feb 1571;" (1572 new style. No father given.), transcription by The Tree Dr., (ancestry.com), 9/20/2020 for this and other Tree Dr. notes; *Northamptonshire Record Office; Northampton Parish Registers*, Reference #: 300P/172, (ancestry.com), 9/21/2020.

¹⁵ *The England & Wales, Christening Index, 1530-1980; England, Select Births and Christenings, 1538-1975, England and Wales Christening Index*, (ancestry.com), 9/20/2020; *Northamptonshire Record Office; Northampton, England Parish Registers*; Reference #: 295p/2; 9/20/2020; *Northamptonshire, England, Church of England Baptisms, Marriages and Burials, 1532-1812*, (ancestry.com), 9/20/2020.

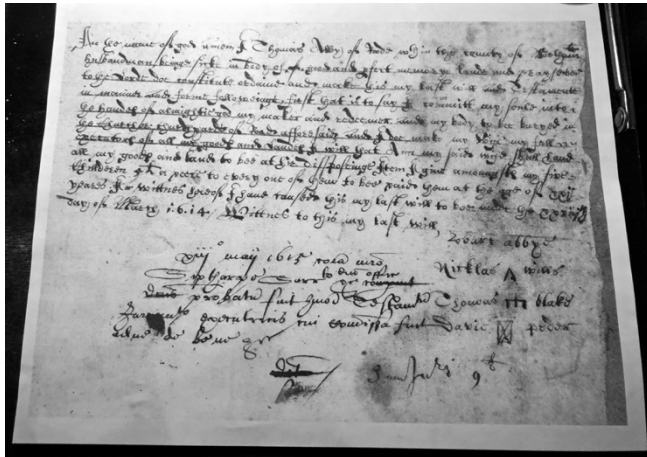
¹⁶ Personal email with Wendy Mulligan, The Tree Dr. on ancestry.com, 11/15/2020.

¹⁷ *Northampton Record Office; Northampton, England; Parish Registers*, Reference #: 295p/2, (ancestry.com), 9/20/2020.

¹⁸ *Staverton Parish Records, Northampton Record Office*, Image 43, line 11; Tree Dr., (ancestry.com), 9/20/2020.

¹⁹ *Staverton Parish Records, Northampton Record Office*, Image 48, 3rd line under Christenings 1613, "John the son of Thomas Abbey was baptized the ___day of Aug 1613," Tree Dr., (ancestry.com), 9/20/2020.

Thomas Abbe Sr., did leave a brief Will, dated 27 March 1614, and in it calls himself *Thomas Abbe of Roade* and asks to be buried in the church yard of Roade. (Previously noted records have him buried in Staverton.)²⁰ He mentions his wife, but does not name her. He mentions that his five children, (one additional to the list above), are each to receive five pounds sterling when they reach 21 years of age. He does not name his children. One of the witnesses to his Will is Robert Abbe. Image 49, 4th line of burials in the *Staverton Parish Records* has the burial record of Thomas Abbe, ___ August 1614."²¹



In 1917, all the headstones, which were 100 years old or older, were removed from the St. Mary's of Roade churchyard and stood against a wall. Ten years later, they were used as a footpath. Were we to visit the church today, we might find (or walk upon), the headstone of Thomas Abbe, if indeed he was buried in Roade, rather than Staverton.

Thomas Abbe's 1614 Will with thanks to Wendy Mulligan

Wendy Mulligan, *The Tree Dr.*, provided this additional information from the parish records of St. Mary's of Roade:²²

²⁰ UK, *Extracted Probate Records, 1269 – 1975*, <online database>, (Provo, Utah, Ancestry.com Operations Inc., 2009): Abby, Thomas Abbe 1615, Roade, Northamptonshire, England, *Burial Book*, Northamptonshire, Rutland – *Calendar of Wills, 1510-1652, Second Series, Original Wills*, Chapter 1610-1644, text: 1615 Abby, Thomas: Roade R. 138, 11/16/2020.

²¹The Tree Dr., 20 Feb 2017, (ancestry.com), 9/20/2020. Northamptonshire, England, *Church of England Baptisms, Marriages and Burials 1532 – 1812*, Reference #: 300P/172, <online database>, (Provo, Utah, Ancestry.com Operations, Inc., 2014), *Staverton Parish Registers* (original). There is a second record, possibly a copy of his burial, same database, *Roade Parish Registers*, 4 or 14 April?, 11/15/2020.

²² Personal email with Wendy Mulligan, The Tree Dr. on ancestry.com, 11/15/2020. I want to express my thanks and great appreciation to Wendy Mulligan, *The Tree Doctor*, ancestry.com for her research of primary sources from Staverton, and Roade Northampton. She was also gracious to review this chapter and the next. She posted in 2016: "Years ago, long before the internet, someone visited Staverton and abstracted the parish records of John Abbey's christening and other family records. When the first genealogical internet bulletin boards started up in the 1990s, this information found its way to the bulletin boards and public family trees. Never content to just copy a tree, I wanted to examine and link the source records to my tree's Abbey branch. Ancestry.com has the Staverton parish records (post-1530), so I was puzzled when John Abbey's baptismal record and other Abbey records did not come up in a search. A little investigation revealed why; transcribing and indexing whole large sections of the early records has not been completed. But I found the Abbey records by going page by page and have been inputting transcriptions and corrections, which I believe will make the records start showing up in searches once Ancestry has indexed my transcriptions. So that anyone can look at these records for themselves and link to them, I include for

There is no record (there) of a fifth child born to Thomas Abbe and Elizabeth Harberd.

- Robert Abbe and wife Jane baptized two sons: Robert, bapt. 20 Apr 1613 and Henry Abbe, bapt. 20 Jan 1615. This Robert Abbe may be the witness to the Will of Thomas Abbe, ancestor. We have no way of knowing their relationship, though by the ages of their children, they may be brothers, or cousins.
- William Abbe and wife Francisca, baptized two sons: Reginald, bapt. 28 Nov 1616 and William, bapt. 27 Nov 1617.
- Francis Abbe had daughter Elizabeth, bapt. 20 Jan 1617. Francis is, most likely, brother to "our" Thomas Abbe.

This new information brings some clarity as it confirms there are Abbes in the parish records of both St. Mary's, Staverton and St. Mary's, Roade, Northampton. Since the *Staverton Parish Records* don't go back to 1530 it will take the examination of Wills and other records to prove this line. The Roade church's baptismal records start in 1587. I will leave it here.

Harberd and Cooper Family Ancestry

Harberd finds its origins with the ancient Anglo-Saxon culture of Britain, primarily in the southeast county of Suffolk. It comes from a name for a person who ran a lodging house. It is a metonymic form of the surname Harberer and is derived from the Old English word, *herebeorg*, which means shelter or lodging.

The origin of Cooper/Couper/Cowper is Anglo Saxon, deriving from the German kuper, a derivative of kup – a container. As an English name, Cowper was first used in the 8th century and was occupational for a *cooper*, that is, a maker of barrels.

There are no confirmed records of the birth or baptism of **Elizabeth Harberd** wife of Thomas Abbe mother of immigrant ancestor John Abbe. As mentioned previously, there are records of a baptism of an Elizabeth Harberd in Edlesborough, Buckinghamshire, England 30 January 1590, whose father might possibly have been John Harberd. However, Edlesborough is at too great a distance from Staverton for this to be likely. A few sources name her father as Thomas Harberd, but most indicate her father was **John Harberd**, b./bapt. 1579. I could not find any documented information on the mother of Elizabeth Harberd. *The Tree Dr.* did find mention of a 1588 marriage in Staverton of John Herberd and Elianor Abbey.²³

your information, an image number, and other information because it's not easy to read these records." At that time, she was still in the process of going page by page through the Staverton Parish Record looking for Abbeys. "The Staverton parish records of the 1500s are difficult to read, but it is still possible to read many of them. Then you get into the 1600s, and it's much worse. Many whole pages are not readable at all." Her dedication is invaluable.

²³ Personal email with Wendy Mulligan, The Tree Dr. on ancestry.com, 11/15/2020.

John Harberd of Edlesborough, was the son of **Raffe Harberd**, b. Edlesborough, Buckinghamshire, England 1550; d. Buckinghamshire, England 1583;²⁴ m. Edlesborough, 12 May 1573 **Alles Cowper**/Couper/Cooper.²⁵ Alles may have passed away in 1582, at age 22, or in 1652, at age 92. Quite a difference, but as both dates are unsourced, there is no way to prove either one.

Alles Cowper, b. Buckinghamshire, England 1560, making her 13 years old at the time of the marriage, which is questionable to our modern sensibilities, but her marrying at that age was possible then. She may have been the daughter of **William Cowper**/Couper/Cooper,²⁶ b. England 1533; who may have d. Buckinghamshire, England, 1652.

The next page shows The Tree Dr.'s findings in the *Harberd* records from the Staverton Parish records (1565-1640): She writes, "Please note these may not be all the records because parts of some pages were illegible due to damage to the original or poor photographic work. From what I remember, about 90 percent of it was readable with some effort. Many early baptismal records don't list any parents so that space is left blank on some of the records."



The county flower of this landlocked region is the cowslip.

²⁴ *England & Wales, Christening Index, 1530-1980*, (ancestry.com), 9/20/2020.

²⁵ *England Select Marriages 1538-1973*, <online database>, (Provo, Utah, Ancestry.com Operations Inc., 2014), Family History Library (FHL) film #496686, 9/20/2020; *Extracted Church of England Parish Records; Buckinghamshire Register of Marriages 1552-1812*, <online database>, (Lehi, Utah, Ancestry.com Operations Inc., 2018), 9/20/2020.

²⁶ *England, Select Births and Christenings, 1538-1975*, (ancestry.com), 9/20/2020;
<https://www.ancestry.co.uk/genealogy/records/william-cowper-24-15b83p6>, 9/20/2020.

1581	Sep		Harberd	Thomas	Mar	Agnes Abbey	
1583			Harberd	Thomas	bap		
1584	Dec		Herberd	Richard	bap		
1586	Oct		Harbert	Joane	bap	dau Thomas	
1588	Jan		Herberd	John	Mar	Elleanor Abbey	
1589	Feb		Herberd	Agnes	bap		
1593	Dec		Herberd	John	bap		
1598	Oct		Herbert	Willm	Mar	Elizabeth Hewerd	
1608			Harberd	Elizabeth	Mar	Thomas Abbey	
1609	Aug		Harberd	Joan	Mar	Thomas Hynary?	
1610			Harbert	Margaret	bur	dau John	
1610			Harbert	Richard	bur	son John	
1610			Harbert	John	bur		
1611	May		Harbert	Elin	Mar	WM? William	
1616	Jan		Harbert	Anne	bur	wife of Thomas husbandman	
1620	Jan		Harbert	Thomas	bap	Richard&Mary	
1622	Aug		Harbert	Richard	bap	Richard&Mary	
1624	Feb		Harbert	Anne	bap	Richard&Mary	
1624	Aug		Harbert	Thomas	Mar	Dorithy Withfed?	
1625	Jul		Harbert	Anne	bap	Thomas&Dorithy	
1625	Oct		Harbert	Anne	bur	Thomas&Dorithy	
1625			Harberd	Richard	stat	signed	
1626			Harbard	Thomas	bur	husbandman	
1626			Harbert	Elizabeth	bap	Thomas&Dorithy	
1628			Harbard	Thomas	bap	Thomas&Dorithy	
1628	Sept		Harbard	Joan	bap	Richard&Mary	
1632			Harbard	Alice	bap	Richard&Mary	
1632			Harbard	John	bur	a single man	
1632			Harbart	William	bap	Thomas&Dorithy	
1634			Harbard		bap	Thomas&Dorithy	

Harberd records from the Staverton Parish records (1565-1640)

History and Inventions ca. 1475 - 1613

1475, the year of Robert Abbe's birth, falls at the end of the Medieval Era, or Middle Ages, during which the church and the aristocracy mainly determined the lives of the people. In the church, women could become nuns, and many did, not out of calling, but out of necessity. The lands and the wealth she brought to a marriage determined a noble woman's position. Though the material is abundant on women of the nobility, especially royal wives and queens, who were often well educated, there is little documentation about the lives of women in the lower classes. Life was equally difficult for men and women in the lower class. Women worked alongside men in the fields and the in the medieval guilds as equals or near equals. However, most women, including the first generations of Abbe men's wives, lived and died unrecorded.

During this time, England allies herself with Burgundy in a war against France. In 1478, the first copy of *Canterbury Tales* was printed and published. There is also an explosion of momentous sailing discoveries: Bartolomeu Dias, from Portugal, rounds the Cape of Good Hope in 1488; Columbus reached the Bahamas in 1492; British explorer John Cabot sailed on a northerly course trying to find a trade route to Asia and discovered Newfoundland/ Nova Scotia; and Vasco da Gama reached India in 1498.

In 1491, King Henry VIII was born, and in 1500, the Early Modern Era, also known as the Renaissance, and the Age of Exploration begins. It is a time characterized by global interest and the reign of the Tudors in England (1485-1603).

Michelangelo finished the Sistine Chapel in 1512. In 1517, the Protestant Reformation began as Martin Luther, a German professor of theology, priest, author, composer, Augustinian monk nails his *Ninety-Five Theses* on the church door at Wittenberg, protesting the Catholic practice of selling indulgences.²⁷

World exploration continues as Magellan sails from Spain, searching for a passageway to the south of South America to reach the Pacific Ocean and the Far East. By 1520 he found such a passage that today we know as the Strait of Magellan. After Magellan died in the Philippines, Juan Sebastián Elcano, a Spanish naval explorer on the journey, took command of the *Victoria*, one of Magellan's fleet, and completed the Earth's first circumnavigation.



Martin Luther

²⁷ commons.wikimedia.org, 9/20/2020.



In Aug 1531, approximately one year after the birth of John Abbe. a great comet returns to the night skies. It is now known as Halley's Comet, named after Edmond Halley, who died in 1742. The comet returns approximately every 75 years.²⁸

Henry VIII severed ties with the Catholic Church and declared himself to be head of the Church of England, marrying Anne Boleyn. Henry, best known for his six marriages, is also known as "the father of the Royal Navy and for his radical changes to the English Constitution, which ushered in the theory of "the divine right of kings." During much of his reign, he was considered "one of the most charismatic rulers to sit on the English throne." However, as he aged, he became severely obese, and his physical and mental health suffered, contributing to his death in 1547.²⁹ Edward VI, his son with Jane Seymour, succeeds him on the throne.



The religious Reformation occasioned by Henry VIII "was widely believed to have unleashed anti-Christian forces," and the Act of 1542 began a succession of Witchcraft Acts in England, attempting to govern witchcraft and provide penalties for its practice. Male literature on "dangerous women" became prevalent, warning men against females who did not abide by prescribed behaviors. Prescriptions, aiming to teach women obedience, modesty, silence, and how to behave correctly, proving their ultimate worth, were common themes in books.



Between 1553 – 1558, Mary I, Queen of Scots, Mary Tudor, daughter of Henry VIII and Catherine of Aragon, also known as *Bloody Mary*, sits on the throne and attempts to enforce a conversion back to Catholicism.

Image left - Mary, Queen of Scots by Nicholas Hilliard, 1578

In 1558, Elizabeth I, age 25, after ordering the beheading of her half-sister, Mary Queen of Scots, becomes Queen Elizabeth I (1558-1603). Sometimes called *The Virgin Queen*, *Gloriana*, or *Good Queen Bess*, Elizabeth was the last of the five monarchs of the House of Tudor. The daughter of Henry VIII and Anne Boleyn, she was a remarkable woman. One of her first actions as Queen was establishing an English Protestant church, today the Church of England. Her forty-four years on

²⁸ This is part of the Bayeux Tapestry commemorating the Battle of Hastings in 1066. Halley's comet appears in the image top center. King Harold II of England took it as a bad omen and indeed, he was killed in the battle. <https://www.pigeonroost.net/history-of-halleys-comet/>; commons.wikimedia.org 9/20/2020.

²⁹ *Portrait of Henry VIII*, by Hans Holbein the Younger, Google Art Project.jpg.

the throne provided a welcome stability for the kingdom and helped forge a national identity. Elizabeth died, unmarried, in 1603. Westminster Abbey holds her tomb, which is shared with her half-sister Mary I. The Latin inscription on their grave translates to "Consorts in realm and tomb, here we sleep, Elizabeth and Mary, sisters, in the hope of resurrection." Pope Sixtus V said, "She is only a woman, only mistress of half an island, and yet she makes herself feared by Spain, by France, by the Empire, by all."³⁰

During her reign, the five children of John and and Joan (Smith) Abbe are born.

There are several exciting inventions during this time. In 1550, Frenchman, Ambrose Pare, begins creating artificial limbs, and in 1559, an Italian invents ice cream; however, it doesn't become readily available in England until the early 1700s.

By 1574, horses are replacing oxen as draught animals in England, which would eventually impact Thomas Abbe (1571). In my research on farming and diet of this era, I found that the poor consumed mainly bread, cheese, milk, and beer, with small portions of meat, fish and vegetables, and occasionally some fruit. Potatoes were just arriving in England and became increasingly influential. At a somewhat higher social level, families ate an enormous variety of meats, especially beef, mutton, veal, lamb, pork, chicken, and duck. The holiday goose was a special treat. Many rural families, and some townspeople, tended a small garden. These gardens produced vegetables such as asparagus, cucumbers, spinach, lettuce, beans, cabbage, carrots, leeks, peas, and medicinal and flavoring herbs. Some farmers also raised apricots, grapes, berries, apples, pears, plums, currants, and cherries.

Jost Burgi, in 1577 Switzerland, developed the first clock with a minute hand. In 1580, the volcano Katla erupted in Iceland. Twenty eruptions of this volcano, between 930 – 1918, have contributed 4percent of total global volcanic carbon dioxide emissions.

In 1588, under Elizabeth I, England destroyed the Spanish Armada, using a new naval strategy that took advantage of the winds. The victory gave heart to the Protestant cause across Europe and the belief that God was with them. Commemorative medals bore the saying, "God blew, and they are scattered."³¹

Thomas Abbe was seventeen.



³⁰ https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Elizabeth_Tudor, 9/20/2020.

³¹ George Gower's *Armada Portrait of Elizabeth I* (ca. 1588) at Woburn Abbey. The portrait was made to commemorate the defeat of the Spanish Armada, depicted in the background. 9/20/2020.

In 1589, an English clergyman, William Lee, developed the world's first industrial machinery, to knit stockings. In 1590, a Dutch spectacles maker, experimenting with several lenses in a tube, discovered that nearby objects appeared greatly enlarged, thereby inventing the modern microscope. And in 1590, Elizabeth Harberd the future wife of Thomas Abbe, was born.

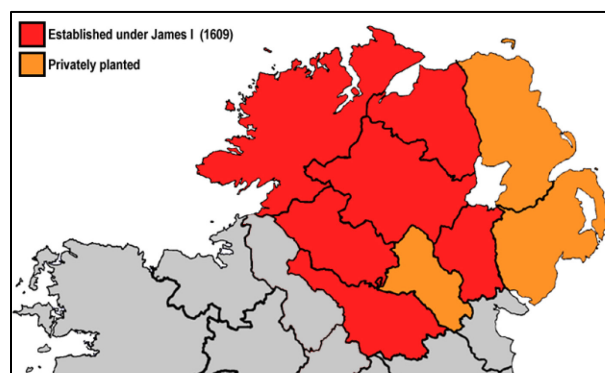
By 1592, several of William Shakespeare's plays were on the London stage. His 1590 - 92 play, *The Taming of the Shrew*, contrasts an ideal Renaissance woman, Bianca, with an outspoken woman, or shew of the worst degree, her sister Katherine. Shakespeare produced most of his known works between 1589 - 1613. He died in 1616 at age 52. Elsewhere in the literary world, Edmund Spenser published *The Faerie Queen* in 1590, and in 1605, Miguel Cervantes published *Don Quixote*.

In 1593 Italy, Galileo developed the first thermometer. In 1596, a flush toilet was illustrated in an English pamphlet, though it would be 200 years before it became commonplace. In 1600, William Gilbert, physician to Queen Elizabeth, concludes that the Earth is a magnet and coins the term *magnetic pole*. He also gives electricity its name; in Latin *vis electrica*.

In 1603, Queen Elizabeth I dies, naming King James VI of Scotland, her nephew and son of Mary Queen of Scots, as her successor. He ascends the throne, becoming James I of England.

As Thomas and Elizabeth (Harberd) Abbe begin their family, King James, despite a dislike for England's extreme Puritans, agrees to the moderates' request for an official translation of the Bible, to be known as the Authorized King James Bible. Some accounts of the process (1604 - 1611) indicate "instructions were given to the translators to limit the Puritan influence on this new translation." Other reports say this Bible was one of Puritans and Anglicans' most significant accomplishments working together." However, the persecution of Puritans in England grew. In 1609, Puritan separatists began to leave, first for the Netherlands, and in 1620 for Plymouth Colony, a number of my ancestral family members among them.

Between 1606 - 1609, English and Scottish Protestant colonists force the settlement of the Ulster Plantation in Northern Ireland. Many of the native Irish/Gaelic peoples lose their lands and their distinctive Ulster-Scottish culture. The area includes County Armagh, where several of my father's ancestors, the Holland and Gardiner families, originated.³²



³² https://commons.wikimedia.org/wiki/File:Plantation_of_Ulster.png.

In 1607, Jamestown³³ is founded in Virginia and became the first permanent English settlement. Only eight of the twenty-eight settlers survive the first winter, foreshadowing conditions to come for the 1620 Plymouth Colony.

Naval exploration continues around the globe. In 1608, Frenchmen interested in trading animal furs with the Indians built a settlement at Quebec. In 1609, Henry Hudson, employed by the Dutch East India Company, anchors off Manhattan Island and trades with local Indians. He sails up the river, to be named after him, to look for a waterway to the Far East. In 1610, he sailed into Hudson Bay, thinking he has sailed through the Northwest Passage to the Pacific Ocean.



Between 1609 and 1615, Galileo shows the telescope's wonders to the pontifical court in Italy, trying to produce scriptural confirmation of the view that the Earth revolves around the sun. He is rebuffed and eventually ordered, by the Pope, to abandon the opinion that his theory of *heliocentrism* is physically accurate. Long conflict ensues. In 1634, the court placed him under house arrest, where he remained until he died in 1642. He is known as the father of observational astronomy, modern physics, and the scientific method. Both Albert Einstein and Stephen Hawking refer to him as the father of modern science.³⁴

The Lives and Role of Women ca. 1475 - 1613

Despite being ruled by Queens, women in these generations had almost no legal power. Marriage, a woman's primary vocation, whatever her social status, cost her personal property rights. Over 90 percent of English women entered marriage at an average age of 25/26, though generations for nobility were younger. Many cities and townswomen married for the first time in their thirties and forties. It was not unusual for orphaned young women to delay marriage until the late twenties or early thirties to help support their younger siblings. Roughly a fourth of all English brides were pregnant at their weddings. The Reformation also closed the convents and monasteries, which had been places of refuge for single women, and called on former monks

³³ As descendants of William Vassall, we can join the Jamestown Society; <http://www.jamestowne.org>, 9/20/2020.

³⁴ <https://www.timetoast.com/timelines/economic-timeline-1600-to-2016>; <https://www.thoughtco.com/renaissance-timeline-4158077>; <https://fireonearth.wordpress.com/timeline/>, both websites checked 9/20/2020; *Galileo Galilei and Doge of Venice*, Bertini fresco.

and nuns to marry. A single woman now had to marry or enter into domestic service. A dowry, and the presumption that she would have and raise children, were expected of every bride.

Women healers played a significant role in medical care, though medical men disapproved. Women served in parishes and hospitals, as well as in private families. They delivered nursing care as well as pharmaceutical, medical and surgical services. Childbirth was predominantly women's business, and physicians only attended under the most extreme circumstances. Midwives offered support, experience, and knowledge, yet only half of all babies born survived to adulthood.

Church services were one place where women of all classes could appear in public. However, the only women allowed to express themselves were upper-class women, but not sufficiently. In the Early Modern period, noble and upper-class women saw an increase in literacy, giving birth to female literature. Writings on religion and poetry were often published. Still, many diaries and commentaries on motherhood or society, especially those condemning men's subjugation, or arguing for women's inherent worth, remained in manuscript form.³⁵

Curious about the day's fashion, I explored *1550-1600 Western European Fashion* on wikipedia.org³⁶ and found a wealth of information and galleries of photographs of male, female, and children's styles and shoes. I invite the reader to explore. In the 1550s, middle and upper-class women in Europe wore dresses which included a smock, stays, *kirtle* (slip), gown, forepart, sleeves, ruff, and a partlet or chemise. The lower classes had similar garments, though made of coarser fabric and fewer layers. Underneath, no undergarments were worn. In England, Queen Elizabeth dictated what kinds of dresses women were allowed to wear, many of which displayed surface decoration, notably embroidery and *black-work*, a form of embroidery worked in black thread.

By the middle of the 16th century, corsets were a commonly worn garment among European and English women. These gradually began to incorporate a *busk*, a long, flat piece of whalebone or wood sewn into a corset casing to maintain its stiff shape. For the upper classes, homemade cosmetics involved mercury, lead, arsenic, and leeches in achieving the pale beauty deemed appropriate during those times. Queen Elizabeth, in later years, wore a mask of white lead powder. Many women used kohl and burnt matches to darken their eyes, berries to stain their lips, and young boys' urine to fade their freckles. Several websites have recipes for such cosmetics.³⁷

³⁵ *Women in World History, Early Modern Period*, <http://chnm.gmu.edu/wwh/modules/lesson4/lesson4.php?s=0>, 9/20/2020.

³⁶ https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/1550-1600_in_Western_European_fashion, 9/20/2020.

³⁷ <https://www.bhcosmetics.com/pages/resources-makeup-and-cosmetics-history>;
<https://www.webmd.com/beauty/history-makeup>, both websites checked 9/20/202.



Fashions depicted above would have been worn by the wealthy and upper classes.
[wikimediacommons.org](https://commons.wikimedia.org/)



Everyday fashion of the 1600's worn by colonists in America.
<https://www.landofthebrave.info/colonial-clothing.htm>

An Atlantic Crossing in 1635

Merchant ships, such as the *Bonaventure* (which brought John Abbe to America), had four masts and were steered using the *whipstaff*, a device stretching from the top deck of the stern down to the tiller, which was sometimes located more than a deck below. There were numerous compartments below decks for the crew, passengers, and storage. Merchant ships had a few cannons mounted and often painted other cannons on the hull to scare potential attackers. A typical merchant ship was about 350 tons, 130 feet long, 45 feet wide, 25 feet tall. Under good wind, it could reach about 10 knots but mostly cruised around 5 knots.

Food brought on board might have been oats and hay for cattle, bread, *victuals*, water, milk, fowl, cheese, eggs, fresh fish. A typical meal consisted of mutton broil, turkey, and good *sack**. When the wind was strong and the waves high, the ship bounced around. Many of the women and children became seasick, dizzy and light-headed, and could scarcely stand or walk without falling unless they took hold of something.

An account of the journey reads: "We saw porpoises and *crampushes* (whales) as big as an ox, puffing and spewing up water as they went by the ship. Many *bonnyetoes* (bonitos) were leaping and playing about the ship. This is a fish a little larger than a cod, but less than a porpoise. Many dolphins were playing about the ship; many seafoal, *hagbats* (a type of fish), and others. We saw mighty whales, spewing water like chimney smoke, making the sea about them white and hoary as described in the book of Job.

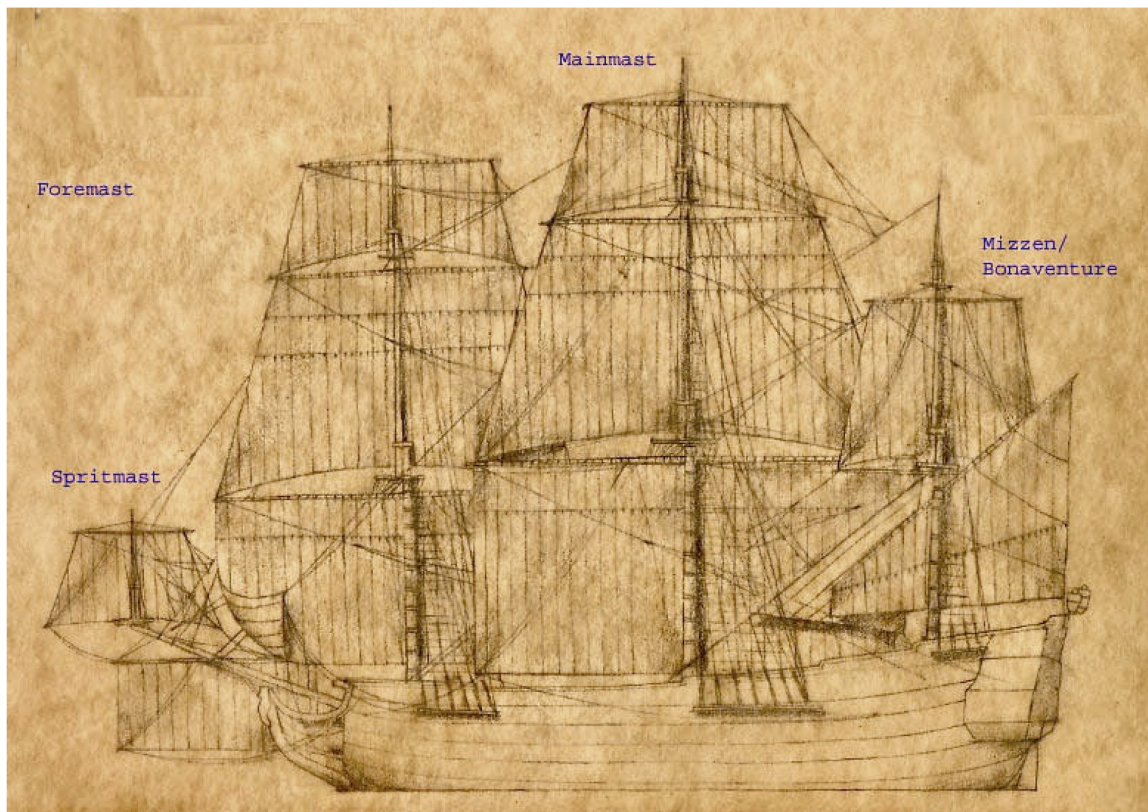
The weather was variable. Either, the wind blew the rain so strong that the rain leaked through the sides of the ship and got the bedding wet. Or, it was so hot that people and cattle were afflicted with faintness, sweating, and heat. The goodness of our God caused a north by northeast wind to come up about noon, which relieved the heat and helped us forward on our way. When the wind was against us, we floated along the coast. Some days, there was also a great fog and mist all day. Other days, the wind was so strong that the preacher's loudest voice could not be heard while leading the services."

**sack* was a fortified white wine, popular in 16th and 17th century England, imported from Spain or the Canary Islands. The name may have come from the French word *sec* meaning "dry."

<https://blaisdell.org/Crossing%20the%20Atlantic%20in%201635.docx.pdf>; www.angelfire.com

*"The cure for anything is saltwater - sweat, tears, or the sea."*³⁸

*"No man is worth his salt who is not ready at all times to risk his well-being,
to risk his body, to risk his life, in a great cause."*³⁹



A ship similar to the *Peter Bonaventure*

³⁸ <https://www.seventhwaveuk.com/content/80-salt-quotations-and-proverbs>, attributed to Karen Blixen or an old Swedish proverb, 9/20/2020.

³⁹ <https://www.seventhwaveuk.com/content/80-salt-quotations-and-proverbs>, Theodore Roosevelt, 9/20/2020.

Chapter Two

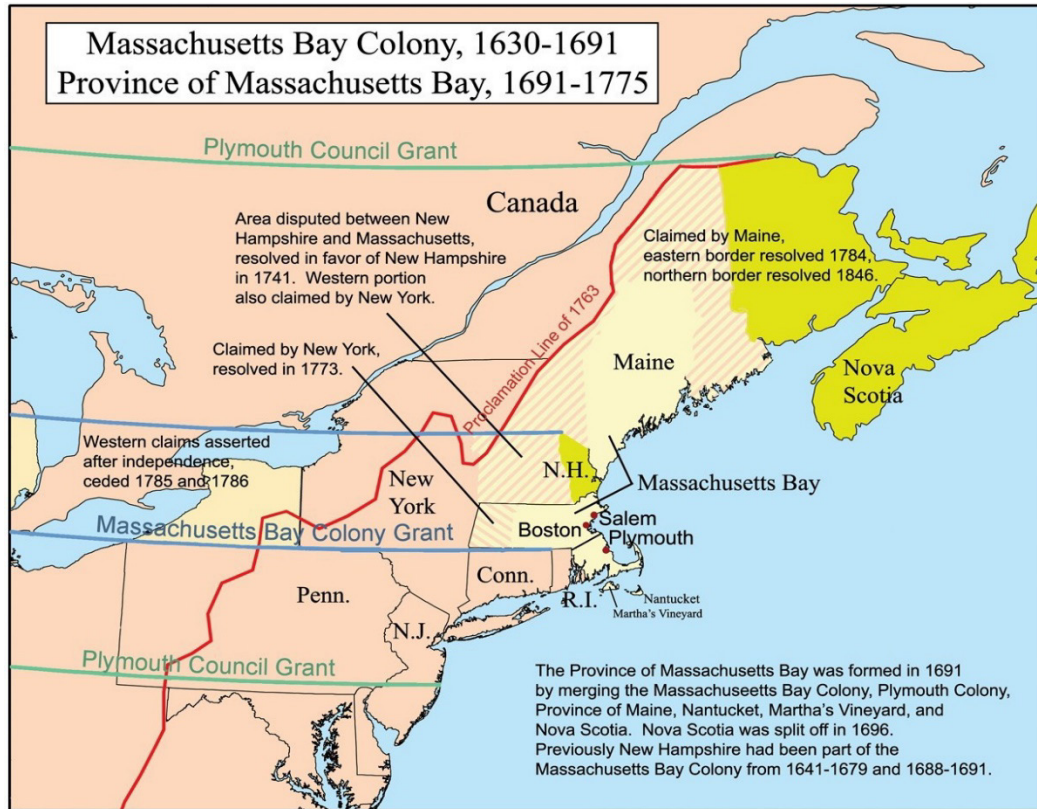
Generation One of the Abbe/Abbey Family in America

*John Abbe and Mary (____) Abbe.
1613 – 1689/90*

Twenty-seven years before our Abbe ancestors set foot in the New World, three ships landed on 13 May 1607 in Jamestown, Virginia, establishing the first English settlement in the United States. Students of Colonial history can find a wealth of resources about the Jamestown settlement, Captain John Smith, tobacco, Pocahontas, and the first few years of peaceful coexistence. With Jamestown's initial success, many additional newcomers arrived and began to spread out, take up land, plant crops, and create new settlements along the eastern seaboard. Stirrings of unrest and war between the Native peoples and the newcomers soon began.⁴⁰

On 11 November 1620, some 14 years before John Abbe's arrival, *The Mayflower* arrived in New England from Plymouth, England. Although the Pilgrims aboard had initially intended to settle near the Hudson River in New York, dangerous shoals and low winds forced the ship to seek shelter at Cape Cod. Of the 102 passengers, mostly English Puritans and Separatists, almost half would die before that first winter was over. Those who survived, Abbe/Abbey ancestors among them, are credited with creating the oldest, continuously inhabited English settlement in what would become the United States.

⁴⁰ <http://www.jamestowne.org>, 9/20/2020.



In the first ten years following the *Mayflower's* landing, most of the 800 colonists arriving in Plymouth and the Massachusetts Bay Colony were from England. Unlike the settlement of Virginia, Maryland, and New Amsterdam, most New England colonists immigrated for religious rather than economic reasons.

Many of them were middle class, skilled craftsmen and merchants, rather than nobility. They flourished with some assistance from Native Americans, who introduced them to new world grains such as corn, which kept the colonists from starving.

In 1626, The Dutch bought Manhattan Island from the Indians. In 1628, the Puritans settled Salem, Massachusetts and in 1630 they established the city of Boston. In the ensuing years, religious conflicts within the Massachusetts Bay Colony led some settlers, our ancestors among them, to leave Massachusetts and organize the colonies of Connecticut, Rhode Island, Maine, and New Hampshire in the process.

New England was inhabited by Algonquin-speaking tribes when the first colonists arrived, including the Abenaki, the Penobscots, the Pequots, the Wampanoags, and many others. The Wampanoags occupied southeastern Massachusetts, Rhode Island, and the islands of Martha's Vineyard and Nantucket. The Narragansetts inhabited most of Rhode Island, particularly around Narragansett Bay. The Connecticut region was occupied by the Mohegan and Pequot tribes before colonization.

Generation One of the Abbe/Abbey Family in America
John Abbe and Mary (____) Abbe
1613 – 1689/90

Leaving behind the vampires of Staverton, England, John Abbe arrived into this land of plenty and hardship, having set sail on the merchant ship *Bonaventure*, on 2 January 1634.⁴¹

From the approximate age as given at his death, John Abbe was born about 1613. The first mention of this John Abbe is on a register of the names of all “y(e) passengers w(which) passed from y(e) Porte of London for a whole yeare endinge an X(mas) 1635. Those underwritten are to be transported to Virginia imbarqued in y(e) Merch(t) Bonaventure - Jo: Abby 22 yeares.”⁴²

The abbreviation *Jo* sometimes stood for Joseph, but there are proven instances where it stands for John.⁴³ He had a wife, Mary (assumed maiden name of Loring), but whether she voyaged with him from England or the couple met in Massachusetts's Colony is unknown. More on that mystery to follow.

According to Kristy Lawrie Gravlin, in an article written on 31 January 2016, John and Mary are listed on a register of passengers on the *Bonaventure*, which passed from London to Virginia, though that is not necessarily where many ships, with that same stated goal, landed. Abbe and his fellow travelers ended up in New England. John Abbe (Jo) is listed as being about 22 years old on the voyage.⁴⁴

If this is true, then John and Mary were married in England before sailing. In checking passenger lists for the *Bonaventure*, I found John listed, but not a Mary Abbe or a Mary Loring; or any other Loring's, namely her parents.⁴⁵ However, if we chose to trust the 1635 Massachusetts marriage records, John Abbe, m. Mary _____, soon after he arrived in the colonies. This seems likely as the Puritan leaders did not allow young men to remain unmarried for long because they were thought to be disruptive to the community.

John and Mary (____) Abbe's first son is born a year after this marriage date, and two years after John and his small family removed to Wenham, Massachusetts. Research indicates that infant mortality rates were comparatively low during this time, as were childhood death instances. Mary had seven children in seventeen years, so there may have been a few miscarriages, but no children's recorded deaths.

⁴¹ U.S. and Canada, *Passenger and Immigration Lists Index, 1500s-1900s, Salem, Massachusetts, 1635, 1*, <online database>, (Provo, Utah, Ancestry.com_Operations, Inc., 2010), 9/20/2020; Frederick A. Virkus, editor, *Immigrant Ancestors: A List of 2,500 Immigrants to America before 1750*, (Baltimore, Genealogical Publishing Co., 1964), *Salem, Massachusetts; 1634-1635*; 5.

⁴² Abbe & Nichols, *Abbe-Abbey Genealogy*, 1.

⁴³ *Ibid.*

⁴⁴ Kristy Lawrie Gravlin, *The Abbe family, and Their Descendants*, (Kendall County Record, 31 Jan 2016).

⁴⁵ Passenger lists found on olivetreegenealogy.com and packrat-pro.com 9/20/2020.

John Abbe's children, probably all by his first wife Mary (____) Abbe:

- i. JOHN ABBE JR., b. Salem, Essex County, Massachusetts 15 Dec 1636; d. Windham, Connecticut 11 Dec 1700; m. (1) 1664 possibly Charity Goodale (1645-1681)⁴⁶; six children; m. (2) perhaps Hannah (Goldsmith), a widow with children.
- ii. SARAH ABBE, b. Salem, 1638; d. 20 June 1704 Wenham, Essex County, Massachusetts.
- iii. MARAH ABBE, current research gives her name as Mariah (Mercy/Marah) Abbe, b. Salem, 1642; d. Wenham, 2 May 1721; m. 1679 Daniel Killam, b. Dennington, Suffolk, England 15 Mar 1620; d. Wenham 1699; m. (2) Alexander Maxcy/Maxwell, b. Scotland, 21 Dec 1623; d. Wenham 1694.
- iv. SAMUEL ABBE, b. Wenham 1646; d. Windham, Connecticut 8 Mar 1697; m. Wenham 12 Oct 1672 Mary Knowlton, b. Ipswich, Massachusetts 1653; d. Windham aft. 1701; twelve children. Samuel and his wife entered testimony in several cases and were opposed to the fanaticism of the Salem Witch trials. Their eldest daughter Mary Abbe is the ancestor of Wendy Mulligan, the Tree Dr.; Mary m. Isaac Goodale, whom we will meet again in the next chapter.⁴⁷
- v. REBECCA ABBE, b. Wenham abt. 1647; d. Wenham June 1704; m. Wenham 13 May 1667⁴⁸ Richard Kimball, b. Watertown 13 Oct 1643, son of Henry and Mary (Wyatt) Kimball; d. Wenham 30 July 1715. They had three children in eleven years. Her father's Will of 1683 mentions Rebecca, and she signed papers regarding his estate in 1702/03.
- vi. OBADIAH ABBE, earlier records indicate his birth took place between 1647-1652. More likely, it occurred in Wenham, between 1650-52; d. Enfield, Hartford County, Connecticut 28 Oct 1732 (age 82); m. Enfield 21 Aug 1697, Sarah Tibbals, b. Milford Connecticut 29 Nov 1654, daughter of Thomas Tibbals of Milford; d. Connecticut aft. 1700. She had been married previously and had children and possibly step-children by those marriages. His father, John Abbe, secured for Obadiah (from ages 18-21) an apprenticeship with Richard Goldsmith, shoemaker. (This was most likely the then husband of his father's second wife, Marah/Mary (Goldsmith) Abbe.)
2. vii. **THOMAS ABBE (SR.)**, b. Wenham abt. 1653; d. Enfield, Connecticut 7 May 1728 (abt. age 75); m. Marblehead, Massachusetts 16 Dec 1683, **Sarah Fairfield**, b. Reading, Massachusetts 24 Dec 1655; d. Enfield 27 Nov 1742 (age 86).

What follows are dates and references to John Abbe in Massachusetts Bay Colony from the *Abbe-Abbey Genealogy*, and other research:

The first mention of John Abbe is in the Salem records of 1637.⁴⁹ He is granted a one-acre lott for a house, the next one beyond the gunsmith's lot. He also received 3 acres of planting ground beyond Castle Hill. He is listed as an inhabitant of the town on the second day of the 11th month,

⁴⁶ Abbe & Nichols, *Abbe-Abbey Genealogy*, 7, "Isaac Goodale called John Abbe uncle."

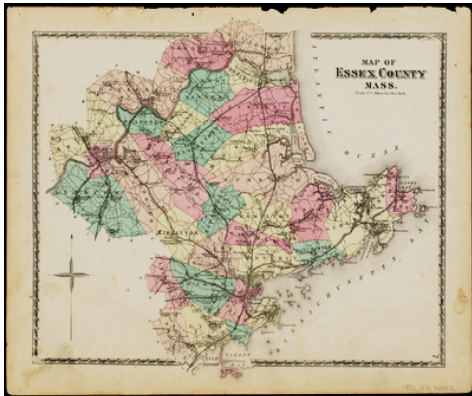
⁴⁷ Personal email with Wendy Mulligan, The Tree Dr., 5 Nov 2020.

⁴⁸ Abbe & Nichols, *Abbe-Abbey Genealogy*, 11, referencing *Wenham Records*.

⁴⁹ Abbe & Nichols, *Abbe-Abbey Genealogy*, 1, referencing *Salem Records*, 1: 11; Kristy Lawrie Gravlin, *Kendall County Record*, 31 Jan 2016.

1636. In 1638 he had a further grant of 5 acres, nere to Mr. Throgmortons' hoggehouse. There are three in his family at this time.

In 1642, John Abbe was granted 10 acres, (along with several other 10-acre grants), laid out near to Kings Lot on the Beverley side near Basse River. Later that same year, these acres were exchanged for 10 acres of land near Enon. This year, Mr. Fiske (pastor) organized a church at Enon with seven families as members. The following year, Enon's name was changed to Wenham, while a permanent church organization was affected in 1644. A small part of the population, church members, controlled both civil and religious life. It was not until 1833 that an amendment to the Massachusetts Constitution separated church and town.⁵⁰



Essex County was created by the General Court of the Massachusetts Bay Colony on May 10, 1643, when it was ordered that the whole plantation within this jurisdiction be divided into four *shires*. Named after the county in England, Essex then comprised the towns of Salem, Lynn, Wenham, Ipswich, Rowley, Newbury, Gloucester and Andover. A shire is a county, province or territory in England.

Map of Essex County Massachusetts D.G. Beers & Co 1872, Salem State University Archives and Special Collections.

In 1644, it was agreed that John Abby, "shall have all that waste ground which lyeth between ye end of ye lott which he lives upon and ye meadow which belongs to ye town, leaving a pole's bredth most convenient for a way."⁵¹ In 1653, there is a list of engagements with Goodman Haws about the mill, and "John Aby gives a day and a half of his labor" toward its erection. Others contribute in like manner, some also giving the use of oxen.

In 1655, Mr. Fiske left the town, followed by some church members. It wasn't until 1657 that Mr. Newman was procured as pastor. In November 1657, from a total of 14£ 19s, John Abey was assessed 1£, 5s, which was the same sum paid by eleven others of the twenty-four church members. In 1659, he again pays the same amount in "in corne or cattle." In 1660, John Abbe was assessed as Goodman Abey at 8s toward a new meeting house or repairing the old one. In 1663, the townsmen erected a new meeting house.

On the 6th of the 11th month 1661, John Abbe Sr. and Edward Waldron had a town grant of land, equally divided. The use of the title *Senior* at this time helps to place the birth of his son John. In 1663, Goodman Abey Sr. and John Clarke joined the selectmen to make the minister's current year's rate. In both 1669 and 1671, John Abbe appears as constable, an office of great local power and responsibility.

⁵⁰ https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Wenham,_Massachusetts, 9/20/2020.

⁵¹ Abbe & Nichols, *Abbe-Abbey Genealogy*, 2, referencing *Wenham Town Records, Worchester*.

On 9 September 1672, Mary (____) Abbe passed away. "Mary, the wife of John Abbey Sr. dyed 9 September 1672."⁵² Her youngest son, our ancestor Thomas Abbe was about 19 years old.

Two years later, on 25 November 1674, John Abbe Sr. remarries, choosing a widow of the area, Mary (Perkins) Goldsmith as his second wife; b. 1615 England, she was widowed when her husband Richard Goldsmith was struck by lightning on 18 May 1674. "John Abbie and Marah Goldsmith, m. 25 Nov 1674." There are no children of this marriage.⁵³

Records indicate that between 1644-1670, Mary/Marah and Mr. Goldsmith had seven, possibly eight children, before his death. She was living in 1683. Mr. Goldsmith first appears in early Massachusetts records in Wenham, where "on the 23rd day of the year 1644 he has 2 acres granted to him by the meetinghouse to dispose of which way he please."⁵⁴ He appears to have been sworn constable on 28 October 1647, and become a church member in 1648.

Richard Goldsmith (shoemaker) was killed by lightning Sunday, 18 May 1673, in the house of the parish minister, Mr. Newman, in the presence of the Reverend Mr. Higginson. A dog under his chair was killed in the same stroke. The incident is alluded to by Increase Mather in his writing, *Remarkable Providences* which can be read at archive.org.⁵⁵

The Estate of Richard Gouldsmith

Administration on the estate of Richard Gouldsmith granted 30 September 1673, to Mary Goldsmith, widow; Inventory of 15£, clear. The Court ordered the estate remain in her hands. Inventory taken 26: 3: 1673 by John Abye Sr. and Walter Fayerfield and included: two cows, one mare and one colte, 11£; three swine 1£,13s; beads, beading, beadsteds and an old chest 5£; a pott, Iron *were* and wooden Lumber in the house 2£; 17s: total 50£, 10s. There is also due 4£, 5s; 18s; 2li. Goldsmith owed debts to a Mr. William Brown, farmer Porter, Captain Corwene, Lote Conote, Mr. Wade, Mr. *Wainrit*, Goodman Woodward, and Mr. Battor of 39£, 13s, 4d. The estate cleared 16£, 14s, 8d. Attested in Ipswich Court 30 September 1673 by Mary the relict of Richard Gouldsmith. (*Essex Co Probate Files*, Docket 11,077).⁵⁶

About a year later Mary/Marah Goldsmith married John Abye Sr.

On 3 April 1675, John Abbe, at age 62, deeds 10 acres of land in Wenham to his son Samuel; Thomas, John Jr. and Mary Abbe being witnesses. In 1679, the 4th month, John Abbe Sr. is witness to the Will of Edward Walden of Salem.

⁵² *Massachusetts Town and Vital Records, 1620-1988, Wenham: Vital Records Transcripts, Wenham: Deaths to the end of the year 1849*, 183, <online database>, (Provo, Utah, Ancestry.com_Operations Inc., 2011), 9/20/2020.

⁵³ *Massachusetts, Town and Vital Records, 1620-1988, Wenham: Births, Marriages and Deaths*, 87, (ancestry.com), 9/20/2020; *U.S. New England Marriages Prior to 1700*, 1, <online database>, (Provo, Utah, Ancestry.com Operations Inc., 2012), 9/20/2020.

⁵⁴ *Wenham Town Records 1642-1683*, 1: 5, (books.google.com), search for Goldsmith, 9/20/2020.

⁵⁵ Increase Mather, *Remarkable Providences Illustrative of the earlier days of American Colonization*, (London Reeves and Turner, 1890), (archive.org), 57-58, 9/20/2020.

⁵⁶ *Essex County, MA: Early Probate Records, 1635-1681, Vol 2: 377-378*, (americanancestors.org), 11/21/2020.

“In 1683, John Abbe, who had been supporting his youngest son Thomas, who lived with him and cared for him, dismissed Thomas on account of his ‘bad behavior’ and called his eldest son John Junior to take charge of him and his affairs. John Jr. proceeded early to build a new home, as the old one was unlivable. John Sr. gave his son John Jr., his houses and lands in return for the care of himself and his wife.

One interesting note found in the Kendall Record article:

John Sr. left two shillings each to his living children Sarah, Mary, Rebecca, Obadiah and Thomas (a shilling was 1/20th of a pound, just as a nickel is 1/20th of a U.S. dollar.) There was not a great deal of hard money around 1683, so any amount was better than none. But based on the relationship to a dollar, John Abbe gave his five children a dime apiece.⁵⁷

Between 1689-1702, John Abbe Sr., died Salem Village, Essex, Massachusetts, about age 76.⁵⁸ Though we don't know if John Abbe Sr. knew about, or was involved in, the colonial revolts and uprisings around him, we know he was involved in church and community affairs. Perhaps he had some suspicion that pending troubles, notably King Phillips War and the French and Indian Wars, which would affect his sons and sons-in-law.

Mary (___) - Wife of John Abbe

Many possibilities arose every time I queried the maiden name of Mary (___) Abbe. None of these lines of inquiry is sure. The only ones that can be proven:

Mary __ and John Abbe had seven children in nineteen years.

Mary __ Abbe, d. Wenham, Massachusetts 9 September 1672, at the age of 56.⁵⁹

The *Abbe-Abbey Genealogy* has this:

John Abbe, m. Mary (___), b. Whitechurch, Canonicorum, Dorsetshire, England 15 Oct 1615; d. Wenham, Essex County, Massachusetts 9 Sept 1672, age 56/7. She was doubtless the mother of all his children. Her name is given as Mary Loring by Frederick Orr Woodruff, who says that the name was found in the *Enfield Records* by one who researches for him there.⁶⁰ (Woodruff was a genealogist in the 1920s whose family connected with the Abbes of Wenham by marriage.)

⁵⁷ Gravlin, *Kendall County Record*, 31 Jan 2016.

⁵⁸ Abbe & Nichols, *Abbe-Abbey Genealogy*, 3,4; U.S. *Find a Grave Index 1600's – Current*, Memorial #38758303, <online database>, (Provo, Utah, Ancestry.com Operations Inc, 2012), 9/20/2020: most information listed is from the Abbe Genealogy, incorrect place of birth.

⁵⁹ *Massachusetts Town and Vital Records, 1620-1988, Wenham, Deaths to the end of the year 1849*, 183, (ancestry.com), 9/20/2020.

⁶⁰ Abbe & Nichols, *Abbe-Abbey Genealogy*, 5 ff.

There is a multi-volume collection of *Enfield Town Records*, but they started in 1685. Mary (___) Abbe, d. Wenham 1672. I checked the index for these records, and there is no record for anyone named Loring. Paul Bader of awkerkamp.org found the same. I have no idea which Enfield, or other, documents Frederick Orr Worrdruff was referencing.⁶¹

The Kendall Record story states: "John and Mary marry in England before sailing on the *Bonaventure*." No marriage records exist for John Abbe in England. Packrat-pro.com, which has passenger lists to the colonies, has no Mary (___) Abbe nor anyone named Loring(e). Research has not revealed if and how Mary (___) Abbe might have traveled to the colonies before or during 1634/5. Aboard the *Bonaventure*, there is *Mary Carlton*, age 23, *Mary Ashley*, age 24, and *Mary Saunders*, age 26. I tried to research these three women, but can only find their 1635 arrival record.

I researched several other leads, only to return to the proposition that Mary's ancestry is unknown. Though we don't know much about her family before she married John Abbe, we can be reasonably sure that Mary Abbe's life was quite difficult. She, John, and their children may have lived in a relatively simple structure, probably consisting of one large room with a prominent central chimney. This may have been known as an English wigwam.

They may have moved from a wigwam style home into a wood framed structure. In the coming generations, a second-story overhang on the front or side, and a lean-to on the home's rear, may have been added to the house. The entrance, a simple and serviceable "board and batten" (a type of siding) door, was located on the building's long side. The roofline was most likely of a steep pitch and thatched. Timber or unpainted wood with narrow clapboard and minimal external decoration comprised the building materials.⁶²

There is mention of John Abbe having land, paying the pastor's salary in "corne and cattle," which leads me to believe he was a farmer. Puritan women seldom worked in the fields with their husbands. Mary's days may have been filled with spinning thread, weaving cloth, collecting milk and eggs, perhaps to supplement the family income. She and her older daughters would have attended to spinning and sewing, preserving food and animal husbandry, cooking and cleaning, and raising the younger children - all the tasks of running a household.

The baptism of children at the local meeting house often occurred within a week of their birth. The mother was usually not present because she was still recovering from the delivery, and the father usually chose the child's name. The family passed on familial names, and when infants died, reusing the names was commonplace. If an adult died without children, his (or her) siblings often named their children in memory.⁶³ We will see in this many of the family lines, often leading to quite some confusion. Perhaps her children's names might hold a clue for future research into Mary (___) Abbe's parents or siblings.

⁶¹ http://awerkamp.org/StoryViewer.aspx?s=a7c1b3d160e847d28e10b4e23247869b_9/20/2020.

⁶² <http://www.salemweb.com/guide/arch/first.php>, 9/20/2020.

⁶³ https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Massachusetts_Bay_Colony, 9/20/2020.

Pioneer Village was built in 1930 to mark the tercentennial of Massachusetts. The village sits on 3 acres of land and contains various examples of colonial architecture: dugouts, wigwams, thatched roof cottages, and the Governor's Faire House. Culinary and medicinal gardens and a blacksmith shop further interpret early 17th century colonial life. Pioneer Village is nestled between the woods and the ocean, a 10-minute drive from downtown Salem. I recommend touring Salem Pioneer Village as well as Plimoth Plantation to see how the early colonists lived.⁶⁴

*English wigwams at the Pioneers' Village,
Salem Public Library*



Interior of home at Plimoth Plantation
Author's Photo - June 2019



Women at the Pioneer Village
Author's Photo - June 2019

⁶⁴ <https://digitalheritage.noblenet.org/salem/items/show/46>, 2/28/2021.

John Abbe's Will and Estate Papers
Written in Wenham, Massachusetts, and delivered 3 August 1683 ⁶⁵

Know all men By these presents that I, John Abbe (Sr.) of Wenham in the County of Essex being sensible of my own & my wives inability to Carry on my affaires So as to provide for our Comfortable Livelihood by reason of our age & weakness of Body Attending vs by reason thereof Doe make Choice of & Request my son John Abbe Jr. as my ffeiofe in trust to take into his hands my house & all my Lands in Wenham together with what right I have in that Land which was sometime Richard Goldsmith's to occupy & improve for mine & his mutual Benefit, So long as my wife & I or either of us shall live: & for his encouragement to manage my affaires as above said & he provide Comfortably for my own & my wives maintenance I do hereby Give and Bequeath to him my aforesaid ffeiofe all my houses & Lands forever Except what I do hereby Give out of it to the rest of my Children viz Samuel, Sarah, Marah, Rebeca, Obadiah & Thomas & to each of them as followeth viz to Samuel I having already Given him a Lell of Land I give him one Shilling more & to all the rest of my Children above mentioned viz Sarah, Marah, Rebeca, Obadiah & Thomas two Shillings apiece or to so many of them as shall survive at the decease of myself & wife: & in Case God shall take away my Son John above said before the Decease of myself & wife if his Heirs Shall Continue to manage & Carry on my affaires as my above said ffeioffe ought to do then they Shall have the houses & Lands above said as therein ordered & in Confirmation of what is above written I have here vnto set to my hand & Seale Signed Sealed & Delivered August the 3 1683 in the presence of Thomas ffiske Sr.: John Abbe Senjr (X), Martha ffiske.

John Abbey Sen(jr) did acknowledge this writing above written to be his act & deed August y(e) 3(d): 1683 before me - Samuel Appleton Assistant.⁶⁶

On the outside of a second document is the inscription:

John Abbey's Disposal of his Estate 1683 In Ips in ye Reg(r)office for ye probate of Will for s(d) County of Essex, December 1702 p mee Danl Rogers Reg.

It seems John Abbe Jr. failed to probate his father's Will, but did sell his father's lands and removed to Windham, Connecticut, where he died, 11 December 1700. In 1702, his brother Thomas Abbe laid claim to his father's estate and the courts gave administrative power to Thomas Abbe, then of Enfield, Connecticut. The court documents follow:

John Appleton Esq. Commissioned by his Excellency Joseph Dudley Capt. General and Governor in Chief in & over her Majesty's Province of ye Massachusetts Bay in New England, with the advice and Consent of her Majesty's Counsel of said province for the Probate of Wills and Granting Letters of administration. Within the said County of Essex & c.

To Thomas Abbe of Enfield in ye County of Hampshire son to John Abbe Sr. of Wenham-Deceased Intestate-Greeting-Trusting in yr Care and fidelity I do by These presents Commit unto you full power to administer all & singular the Goods, Chattels, Rights & Credits of the said Deceased & well & faithfully dispose of ye same according to law which to him while he Lived & at ye time of his Death did appertain & belong, to ask sue for demand Levy Receive & Recover and to pay all Debts in which the Deceased stood bound so far as his Goods Chattels Rights & Credits Can extend according to the value thereof, and to make a true & perfect Inventory of all & singular the Goods Chattels Rights and Credits of the Deceased and to Exhibit the same into the Registry office of ye said County at or before the Last Day of February next Ensuing, and to render a plain & true account of ye said adminjo upon Oath at or before ye Twentieth Day of December which Will be in ye year of or Lord God One Thousand Seven hundred & Three-and I do by These presents Ordain Constitute and appoint you administrator of all & singular the Goods Chattels Rights & Credits of ye Deceased aforesaid. In Testimony Whereof I have here unto Set my hand & caused the Seale of said office to be affixed-Dated in Ipswich the 12th Day of December anno. 1702. Annoq.R: Reginae Annae Angliae &c primo.

Examd-11 John Appleton, Daniel Rogers Regr.⁶⁷

Know All men by these presents, That We Thomas Abbe of Enfield in ye County of Hampshire as principle and Walter Fairfield Sr. & Thomas Edwards both of Wenham as sureties within His Majesties Province of the Massachusetts Bay in New England are holden and stand firmly bound and obliged unto John Appleton Esq. Judge of

⁶⁵ Abbe & Nichols, *Abbe-Abbey Genealogy*, 3,4; *Essex, Massachusetts Probate Records 1648-1840*, file #3, <online database>, (Provo, Utah, Ancestry.com Operations Inc., 1997), 9/20/2020.

⁶⁶ Abbe & Nichols, *Abbe-Abbey Genealogy*, 3; <https://www.wikitree.com/wiki/Abbe-11#Estate.2FAffidavits>.

⁶⁷ *Essex County, Massachusetts: Probate File Papers, 1638-1991, Essex Cases 1-1999*, 3:1-3:8, (americanancestors.org from records supplied by the Massachusetts Supreme Judicial Court Archives. Original source: Recorded Book 307, p 456, Essex Probate Office), 7/10/2021.

the Probate of Wills and granting Administration within the said County of Essex in the full sum of Two hundred Pounds Current Money in New England. To be paid unto the said John Appleton Esq. his Successors in the said Office or Assignees. To the true payment whereof We bind ourselves, and each of us, our, and each of our heirs, Executors and Administrators, jointly and severally for the whole and in the whole firmly by these presents Sealed with our Seals. Dated the Eleventh day of December Anno Domini. One thousand 702 Annoque Regni Reginae Annae primo.

The condition of this present Obligation is such, That if the above-bounden Thomas Abbe administrator to all & singular the Goods, Chattels, Rights & Credits of his father John Abbe Sr. late of Wenham Deceased to make or cause to be made a true and perfect Inventory of all and singular the Goods, Chattels, Rights and Credits of the said Deceased, which have or shall come to the hands and possession or knowledge of him the said administrator or into the hands and possession of any other person or persons for him. And the same so made, do exhibitor cause to be exhibited into the Registry of the Court of Probate for the aforesaid County of Essex at or before the Last day of February next ensuing. And the same Goods, Chattels, Rights and Credits of the said Deceased, at the time of Death, which at any time after shall come into the hands and possession of any other person or persons for him do well and truly administer according to Law. And further do make, or cause to be made a just and true Account of his said Administration upon Oath, at or before the Twentieth day of December which will be in the year of our Lord, One thousand 703.

And all the rest & residue of the said Goods, Chattels, Rights & Credits which shall be found remaining upon the said Administrators Accompt (the same being first examined and allowed of by the Judge or Judges for the time being of Probate of Wills and granting Administrations within the County of Essex aforesaid) shall deliver and pay unto such person or persons respectively as the said Judge or Judges by his or their Decree or Sentence pursuant to Law shall limit and appoint. And if it shall hereafter appear, that any Last Will and Testament was made by the said Deceased: And the Executor or Executors therein named do exhibit the same into the Court of Probate for the said County of Essex making request to have it allowed and approved accordingly. If the said administrator within bounden being there unto required do render and deliver the said Letters of Administration (Approbation of such Testament being first had and made) unto the said Court. Then the before written obligation to be void and of none effect, or else to abide and remain in full force and virtue.

Thomas TA Abbey (mark & seal) Walter Fairfield (seal) Thomas O. Edward (seal)
Sealed and delivered in presence of Francis Crumpton & Daniel Rogers.⁶⁸

This Inventory of the Estate of John Abbe Senior formerly of Wenham deceased about thirteen years since Intestate we who names are here unto subscribed on this twenty fourth of February 1702/3 did at the Request of Thomas Abbe one of the sons of the deceased and Administrator of his father's estate, apprise the said deceased his house and land in Wenham on which he lived for many years, as we ever understood we being his near neighbors for many years, his homestead being about twenty and three acers of upland and meadow together with the housing and fences, with his Right in the Common all which we valued at ninety and two pounds. We also being Informed that the said deceased in his lifetime did to accommodate his son Obadiah according to his desire with a trade for his future benefit when the said Obadiah was eighteen years old give to Richard Goldsmith three years' service of his said son Obadiah and until he was one and twenty years could to learn him to be a shoemaker and all the said time his said father did find his said son meat and drink and Clothes washing and Lodging which we do Judge to be worth thirty pounds. His Marke Richard **RH** Hutton & Joseph fowler, Appraisers

The estate debtor to his son Thomas Abbe for several things for which our said father John Abbe Senior was Indebted to his son Thomas Abbe before his death, the account whereof was settled and allowed, which debt is thirty and two pounds, this 24th February 1702/3.

Richard Kimball for himself & Rebeca his wife His X Mark
Thomas Abbe his T marke
Mary Killam Her I Mark"⁶⁹

⁶⁸ *Essex County, Massachusetts Probate Index, 1638-1840*, <online database>, (Provo, Utah, Ancestry.com Operations Inc., 1997), Salem, Massachusetts, Essex County, Recorded Book 307: 456, 7/10/2021.

⁶⁹ Abbe & Nichols, *Abbe-Abbey Genealogy*, 3,4; Essex County Registry of Probate- Docket No. 3, *Essex County, Massachusetts: Probate File Records 1638-1881*, Volume: *Essex Cases 1-1999*, 3:1-3:2, (americanancestors.com), 7/10/2021

History and Inventions in This Generation 1613 – 1690⁷⁰

Our colonial ancestors traveled across often dangerous seas to escape religious persecution and to build new lives. They risked their well-being, and their very lives, and when they arrived, tears and the sweat of labor were needed to carve out a new home. Interestingly, the first patent in North America was granted in 1641 to Samuel Winslow by the General Court of Massachusetts for an original method of making salt. Though my research uncovered a fascinating history of salt, I could not find a description of Winslow's process.



I did find this bit of trivia: in April 1633, eight months before John Abbe sailed for the colonies, Mr. Johnson in England received a banana tree from the Bahamas. He put it in his shop. These were the first bananas seen in England.⁷¹

In 1651, Oliver Cromwell led the English Parliament in passing the first Navigation Act. While Britain reaped financial benefit, the Navigation Acts caused resentment in the colonies and were a major contributing factor to the American Revolution. Though these Acts are essential in the overall scheme of history, our ancestors might have found more use for Otto von Guericke's invention of an air pump, found fascination with Dutch mathematician and scientist Christian Huygen's pendulum clock, or in the coming years, been enchanted by Cuckoo clocks from the Black Forest region of Germany. In 1652 tea arrives in Britain.

Charles II (1660 - 1685) was restored to the English throne after years of exile during the Puritan Commonwealth. During his reign, known as the Restoration, there continued to be a struggle between Anglicans, Catholics, and Dissenters. From 1665 - 1666, the *Great Plague* swept London, the last major epidemic of the bubonic plague, killing an estimated 7,000 per week and 100,000 in total. In September of 1666, the Great Fire of London ravaged the city for four days destroying 13,200 homes and eighty-one churches.

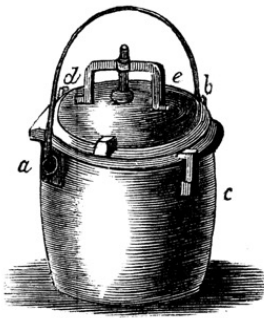
During this time, Newton invents the reflecting telescope. In 1670, there is the first mention of the candy cane, and Dom Perignon invents champagne, though I doubt the ancestors of this generation tasted either.

In 1677, the Massachusetts Bay Colony absorbed the Province of Maine. The first map of New England, printed in North America, was a geographical guide to Reverend William Hubbard's *History of King Philip's War*.⁷²

⁷⁰ <https://www.shmoop.com/study-guides/history/colonial-new-england/timeline/>, 9/20/2020.

⁷¹ Watercolor of a cluster of banana trees in Suriname, painted by Louise von Panhuys, commons.wikimedia.org, 7/10/2021.

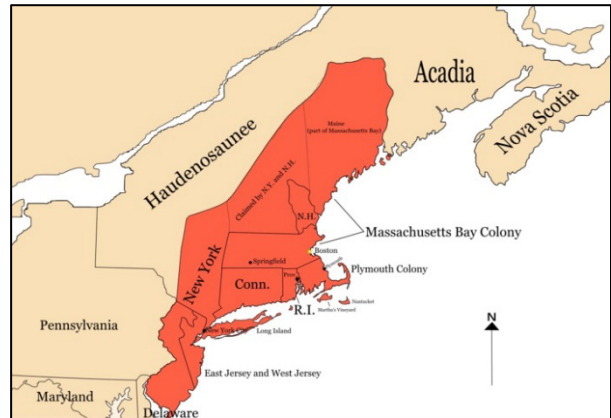
⁷² Rev. William Hubbard, *The History of the Indian Wars in New England From the First Settlement to the Termination of the War with King Philip in 1677*, (archive.org), 9/20/2020; For the Native view, <https://nativeheritageproject.com/2012/09/02/king-philips-war/>, 9/20/2020.



There is irony in the “pressure cooker” of colonial life and war with the Native Americans coinciding with the 1679 invention of the actual pressure cooker. I found an “InstaPot” in my Christmas gifts this past year; I now know its origins are 340 years old!⁷³

Also, in 1679, Boston burned. The fire, one of the most damaging in colonial history, was believed to have been set by religious dissidents and caused 200,000 pounds worth of damages.

The inauguration of New Hampshire as a royal colony took place in 1680. Between 1685–89, James II reigned as the last Roman Catholic Monarch in England. He moves to reduce colonial autonomy, and his dependence on Parliament, by combining Connecticut, Massachusetts, Plymouth, Rhode Island, New York, New Hampshire, East Jersey, and West Jersey into a single colony: *The Dominion of New England*.⁷⁴



William III and Mary II (1689–1694)⁷⁵ officially replace James II as monarchs of England after James, Mary's father, flees to France. William and Mary's so-called *Glorious Revolution* is successful and includes:

- The English Bill of Rights - Parliament controls taxation and all Englishmen enjoy certain “undoubted” rights, such as trial by jury.
- The Toleration Act - only Anglicans can hold office and Protestant dissenters, but not Catholics, can now worship freely.
- The Mutiny Act - Parliament, not the military, regulates mutinies.

The Glorious Revolution allows the English Parliament to achieve a supremacy in the British government that has lasted to this day. Soon after, Europe's *War of the Grand Alliance* (1689 - 1697), is fought between the Habsburg and Bourbon dynasties, spilling over into North America, as Indian allies of the French attack English frontier settlements. This first of several wars pitting English colonists against the French and

⁷³Pressure Cooker (1864), from tinned cast iron made by Georg Gutbrod in Stuttgart, Germany, commons.wikimedia.org, 7/10/2021.

⁷⁴ Map from commons.wikimedia.org, 7/10/2021.

⁷⁵ William and Mary, engraving by R. White 1690, owned by the National Army Museum, London. (Public domain)

their Native American allies, is called *King William's War*. It begins after English King William III joins the League of Augsburg against France.

The Glorious Revolution also sparks further revolts in the colonies. In April 1689, Boston militiamen seize Governor-in-Chief Andros and put him in jail. The New England colonies overthrow The Dominion of New England and begin to reestablish governments as they existed before the acts of James II. Rebellions and controversies ensue as colonists struggle for control of North America.

From the founding of the Plymouth Colony in 1620, the vast majority of the colonists lived in rural farming villages on their property; less than 10 percent lived in cities. Each village consisted of houses, a community garden, and a meetinghouse to host church services. These were self-governing religious congregations of farmers (yeomen) and their families. High-level officials gave out land plots to male settlers, or proprietors, who then divided the land among themselves. Enough land to support a family was the intention for every white man who was not an indentured servant. When sons married, fathers gave them gifts of land, livestock, or farming equipment; daughters received household goods, farm animals, and cash. Families increased their productivity by exchanging goods and labor with each other. They loaned livestock and grazing land to one another and worked together to spin yarn, sew quilts, and harvest crops.

By the mid-1630s, the Puritans had invited hundreds of additional colonists from England and took over large areas of what came to be known as New England.

Diseases brought by the colonists started to ravage the Native American population. By 1650, about 90 percent of the Native Americans living in New England died due to disease. Growing resentment between Native Americans and settlers eventually led to King Phillip's War in 1675, which decimated the Wampanoag and Narragansett tribes. Surrender and enslavement, or migration west was the fate of the Native Americans that survived the War. More on this conflict in the next chapter.



Colonists also declared war on local wildlife that they deemed a threat, such as the local wolf population. According to the book, *Disguised as the Devil: A History of Lyme Disease and Witch Accusations*, wolves were considered flat out pests. They became the pariah of the wilderness – dark, insidious predators biting at the heels of civilization. They had a price on their heads from almost the moment of contact with the

English colonists, especially as the wolves began to add pork, beef, and mutton to their diet. In 1678, Salem Village was rimmed by a set of wolf traps. In Massachusetts, the last wolf bounty was paid in the 19th century at the end of a successful eradication program that took over 200 years to complete.⁷⁶

⁷⁶ M.M. Drymon, *Disguised as the Devil: A History of Lyme Disease and Witch Accusations*, (Portland, Maine, Wyeth Ave. Press, 2008), 141; <http://www.caninest.com/wolf-coloring/>, 7/10/2021.

While the Native populations declined, the number of colonists flourished. By 1676, Boston had 4,000 residents. The colonists continued to build up the city, constructing its first post office in 1639, the first bank in 1674, and published its first American newspaper in 1690 titled, *Publick Occurrences: Both Foreign and Domestick*. Schools were also built, including the first American public school, called the *Boston Latin School*. Every town with more than fifty inhabitants was legally required to have a school.

From the moment they landed in the New World, the Massachusetts Bay Colonists established a government that reflected their personal and religious ideals. Only the most devout Puritans could participate in civil government, which held authority over everyone. The Puritans - those who wished to "purify" the Anglican church - came to the New World precisely to escape religious persecution and create their community to live only among like-minded people. As a result, they frequently persecuted other colonists who didn't share their religious views, including Catholics, Lutherans, Anabaptists, Antinomians, Quakers, Ranters, in short, anyone who held different beliefs. Those who did not belong to the official state religion were heretics and blasphemers who put barriers in the way of salvation; they were also considered traitors to their country. Warning: several of our ancestors fit this description.

The Lives and Role of Women 1613 –1690⁷⁷

Through modern-day lenses, it seems that Puritan women did not have a voice, nor could they participate in the church or community's decisions. Puritan ministers furthered male supremacy in their writings and sermons. They preached that the soul had two parts, the immortal masculine half and the mortal feminine half. The Puritans believed that Eve's role in original sin exemplified a woman's inherent moral weakness. They feared that women were much more susceptible to temptations and possessed qualities that could be exploited and become sinful.

There was a strong imperative to marry, those who did not were ostracized. The average age of marriage was 26 for men and 23 for women. Courtship practices were strict, and weddings were simple affairs. A woman was to love, obey, and further the interests and will of her husband. If she was a good mate, she had fulfilled her God-given duty.

Second marriages were not uncommon, and widows and widowers faced social and economic pressures to remarry. Single women were considered "incomplete." On average, most widows and widowers remarried within 6 months to a year. Pregnancy, birth, and death governed colonial women's lives. Women were pregnant or nursing during most of their reproductive years and averaged seven births. They often died in childbirth, and many of their children died as infants or small children. Families were larger among the Puritans than any other group, and

⁷⁷ <https://www.womenhistoryblog.com/2007/10/puritan-women.html>, 9/20/2020.

they disapproved of doing anything to prevent pregnancy. Discipline for children could be harsh, and the Puritans practiced the custom of *sending out*, where other families took in children for training, discipline, or apprenticeship.

In an agricultural economy, women were expected to be productive and yet one-third to one-half of the paupers in a town were likely to be women. Colonial laws frowned on singleness and idleness. In 1643, the town of Salem ordered "that Margaret Page shall (be sent) to Boston jail as a lazy, idle, loitering person where she may be set to work for her living." In Massachusetts and Connecticut, an idle person could be openly whipped on his or her naked body, not exceeding fifteen stripes.⁷⁸

Married women were not allowed to possess property (even property bequeathed them in a Will), sign contracts, or conduct business. Their husbands owned everything, including the couple's children. Only widows who did not remarry could make a Will, buy or sell property, run a business, act as a guardian, have the right to sue, or be sued. A widow received a one-third interest in the personal property of her deceased husband (one-half if there were no children).⁷⁹

Women had to dress modestly, covering their hair and arms. Women found guilty of immodest dress could be stripped to the waist and whipped until their backs were bloody. That, it seems, would expose their bodies further! "Let your Dress, your Conversation, and the whole Business of your life be to please your husband and make him happy," was a frequent admonition.

Those who have studied primary sources of the time might argue that Puritan women delighted in their husbands, children, and God. Rather than being legalistic and joyless, Puritans were passionately expressive in their relationships, even poetic. They "dressed according to their class and time's fashions, with a full array of colors." Puritanism regarded men and women as spiritual equals. The men might be the church leaders, but discipline and morality were women's virtues. Though they had no official standing, women exercised a lot of informal influence. Few men, especially religious leaders, could survive the widespread disapproval of a community's women.

Through her husband, a colonial wife could participate in the public life of the colony. When a man cast a vote in any sort of election, he discharged the option on behalf of his family. If the husband were indisposed at the time of the election, wives were generally allowed to cast the family vote in his place.

Puritans believed in the individual's value as God's creation, the equality of men and women, and the importance of role differentiation for both sexes. The wife was not seen as inferior or slavish, but rather possessed equal value with her husband, with unique responsibilities of equal

⁷⁸ Mimi Abramovitz, *The Family Ethic: The Female Pauper and Public Aid, Pre-1900*, *Social Service Review*, Vol 59, no 1, 1985, pp 121–135, JSTOR, www.jstor.org/stable/30011790, 11/18. 2020.

⁷⁹ <https://genfiles.com/articles/womens-rights/>, 9/20/2020.

importance. Puritan husbands and wives were most unabashed in their affection for each other, as evidenced by love letters from the time.

Women were also not required to submit to *all* men. The submission was only to the decisions made by her "own husband," and not even then, if he compromised her commitment to Christ by asking her to sin. He could not lawfully strike her, nor could he command her anything contrary to God's laws; civil codes explicitly defined the rules.⁸⁰ Husbands were the first to protect their wives from prosecution during the 17th century witch trials.

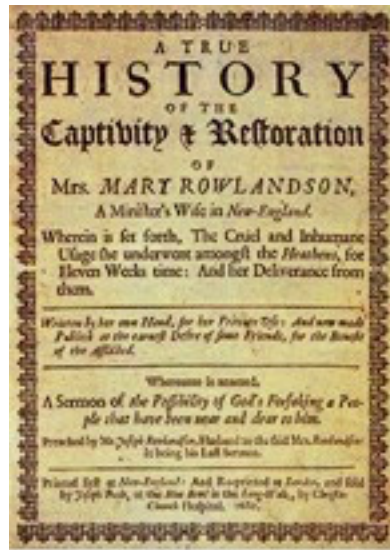
Women could divorce their husbands in certain circumstances: adultery, willful desertion, and physical cruelty. Marriage was the only place for sex, and severe punishment awaited those who crossed that boundary. One Puritan moral imperative was strict observance of the Sabbath. Among numerous possible offenses, kissing one's wife in public on a Sunday was outlawed.⁸¹

Authority over their children, servants, and the home's affairs was a woman's expected domain. Puritan women viewed motherhood as a glorious gift, a cause for earnest prayer and petitioning. "A quiver full of them (children)," meant blessing and honor, never a burden. The typical woman in Colonial America ran a household and attended to domestic duties. Their most important work, however, was being a mother, raising the next generation of Puritans.

The Puritans believed everyone should be able to read the scriptures. Reading was taught to women, though writing was generally not. Women's literature and works of the time were often from the upper classes. Essays exist from Anne Bradstreet, a Puritan female poet and writer, and a Puritan autobiography by Sarah Goodhue. Margaret Winthrop, the wife of Governor Winthrop, was known for the love letters written to her husband.

⁸⁰ <https://www.bartleby.com/essay/Gender-Roles-In-Colonial-America-FKCCBEVWL9P>, 9/20/2020;
<https://studylib.net/doc/8124062/understanding-puritan-womanhood-in-feminist-america>, 9/20/2020.

⁸¹ <https://www.womenhistoryblog.com/2007/10/puritan-women.html>, 9/20/2020.



(a)



(b)

Mary Rowlandson, who, after surviving capture by the Narragansett Indians, wrote *A Narrative of the Captivity and Restoration of Mrs. Mary Rowlandson*, first published in London, then in Cambridge, Massachusetts in 1682. She became the founder of a significant literary and historical genre, *the captivity narrative*. This narrative was the first book in English published by a woman in North America.

These four women may provide the most extensive documentation from a female perspective; their accounts serve as a representation, rather than an exception, of the Puritan woman's experience. In fundamental ways, the Puritan women's mindset differed from that of most modern feminists. By dedication to causes outside of themselves, living lives committed to God's Word, anticipating a judgment before a holy God, and desiring a glorious eternity, Puritan men and women encouraged womanhood according to the standards of Scripture. They upheld equality of the sexes in marriage and society, valuing covenant love and submission as essential for obedience, enjoyment, and order.⁸²

Author Charlaine Harris, who specializes in mysteries with Vampires, is quoted as saying, "My gran had always told me that a woman, any woman worth her salt, could do whatever she had to!"⁸³ Our colonial foremothers certainly "did whatever they had to do." From my contemporary mindset that included waiting two centuries for the Suffragette movement and the rise of feminism. Readers, please take my comment with a grain of salt!

⁸² <https://studylib.net/doc/8124062/understanding-puritan-womanhood-in-feminist-america>, 9/20/2020.

⁸³ <https://www.inspiringquotes.us/topic/4548-salt>, 9/20/2020.



French-Andrews house in
Topsfield, Massachusetts,
Author's Photo - June 2019.

Colonial Foods

At home, the thrifty New Englanders found dozens of uses for cod, either fresh or dried or salted. They used it to make fish cakes, chowder, boiled dinners, and fish hash. The hash was served at breakfast with oatmeal, eggs, hot bread, and sometimes fried ham. Perhaps the most famous Massachusetts food tradition is the cooking of *Baked Beans* on Saturday night.

This typical Saturday night supper originated in Puritan Boston. The Sabbath started at sundown on Saturday, and according to Puritan belief, no work was to be done until sundown Sunday. Therefore, the bean pot was put in the low heat of the fireplace oven on Saturday morning so that the beans would be ready by suppertime. The slow baking pot gave off fragrant aromas of onions, salt pork, and molasses all day. The leftovers from supper were kept warm in the fireplace and served for Sunday breakfast. When the recipe for baked beans was first developed, maple sugar or syrup was used as a sweetener. After trade developed with the West Indies, less expensive molasses was added to the beans.

Eventually, other foods were added to the Saturday night suppers. A moist, dark-brown bread of cornmeal, rye flour, molasses, buttermilk, and raisins, was steamed in cylindrical molds and served with the baked beans. Coleslaw, pickles, and applesauce were also traditional side dishes. *Indian Pudding*, which shared the fireplace oven with the beans in the last hours of baking, was also served on Saturday night. This pudding was made with milk, molasses, and, when they could be obtained, cinnamon and nutmeg.

Long before the pilgrims arrived, the Massachuset Indians combined crushed cranberries with dried deer meat and melted fat to make *pemmican*. The cranberry is one of the few native American fruits, along with the blueberry and some grape varieties.

Hilde Gabriel Lee, *Taste of the States: A Food History of America*, (Howell Press, Charlottesville VA 1992), 18-21.
<http://www.foodtimeline.org/statefoods.html#colonialma>

Visiting Wenham, Massachusetts

Before the English arrived, the area that would become Wenham, Massachusetts, had been home to Native American Algonquian peoples, a peaceful, agricultural group who planted and stored corn. The English who settled were largely immigrants from Great Wenham and Little Wenham in Suffolk County. In September 1643, the General Court of Massachusetts granted that Wenham should become a town.



My 2019 visit to Wenham revealed a town that has retained much of its historic character and rural scenery. After exiting the interstate, about 22 miles north of Boston, I found myself on a narrow, two-lane winding road bordered by stone walls and hardwood trees; a road without the wide shoulders that we enjoy “out west.” The town’s central intersection featured the church, a small post-office, a teahouse, the courthouse, and the Wenham Museum which occupies the 1664 Claflin-Richard’s house.

That day, the Museum was unfortunately closed for a changing of exhibits. I made my way past volunteers to have a brief visit with the director. In the lobby area, there was a display of ice cutting machinery and photos from that industry, an industry, based at Wenham Lake, which had kept the town afloat for years. I wondered if there were also museum artifacts relating to the many shoe shops in Wenham that later did piece work for shoe factories in Danvers and Lynn. John Abbe’s youngest son, Obadiah Abbe, apprenticed with Richard Goldsmith, a shoemaker.



Author’s photo, June 2019

The Museum director pointed me toward the Old Cemetery a few blocks away on Main Street or Route 1A. Early cemeteries were often built on hillsides because that land was not arable for farming, and Old Cemetery was no different. I wandered through mud, catching glimpses of ancient stones, their markings unreadable due to time and weather, lichen and moss. Back in town, I encountered a lovely woman and asked if she knew where the Old Fairfield Burying Ground was located. “Follow me!” and I did, past stately homes with expansive yards, arriving a few blocks away from the teahouse on William Fairfield Drive. There, tucked atop a tree covered hillside, was the resting place of many other ancestors in this family line. A small sign indicated this was the *Fairfield Burying Ground*. The oldest monument commemorates William Fairfield, the eldest son of Walter and Sarah Fairfield, who died in 1742. Walter was the eldest son of John and Elizabeth (___) Fairfield, the original 1638 planter. More on this generation in the next chapter.

Wenham is home to the Wenham-Hamilton library, where I found dedicated and able volunteers who assisted me on-site and by email. Wenham boasts many open views of farmlands, lakes,

woodlands, and features nearly 300 acres of parks, playgrounds, and recreational lands. The community is blessed with an active, involved citizenry of around 5,000, whose major goal has always been to “protect what is precious from the past while continuing to plan for future generations.” One travel brochure stated, “a walk along Wenham's lovely main street provides a timeless picture of beautiful old homes, gardens, and yards, punctuated by friendly faces, giving one a general sense of connection to all that is right about New England small-town life.”⁸⁴

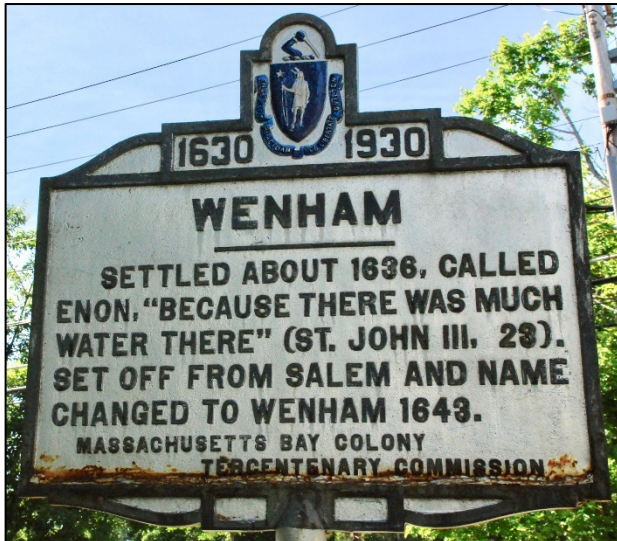


Wenham in Fall used with permission by Jay Burnham Photography (jayburnham.photodeck.com)

⁸⁴ wenhamma.gov, 7/10/2021.

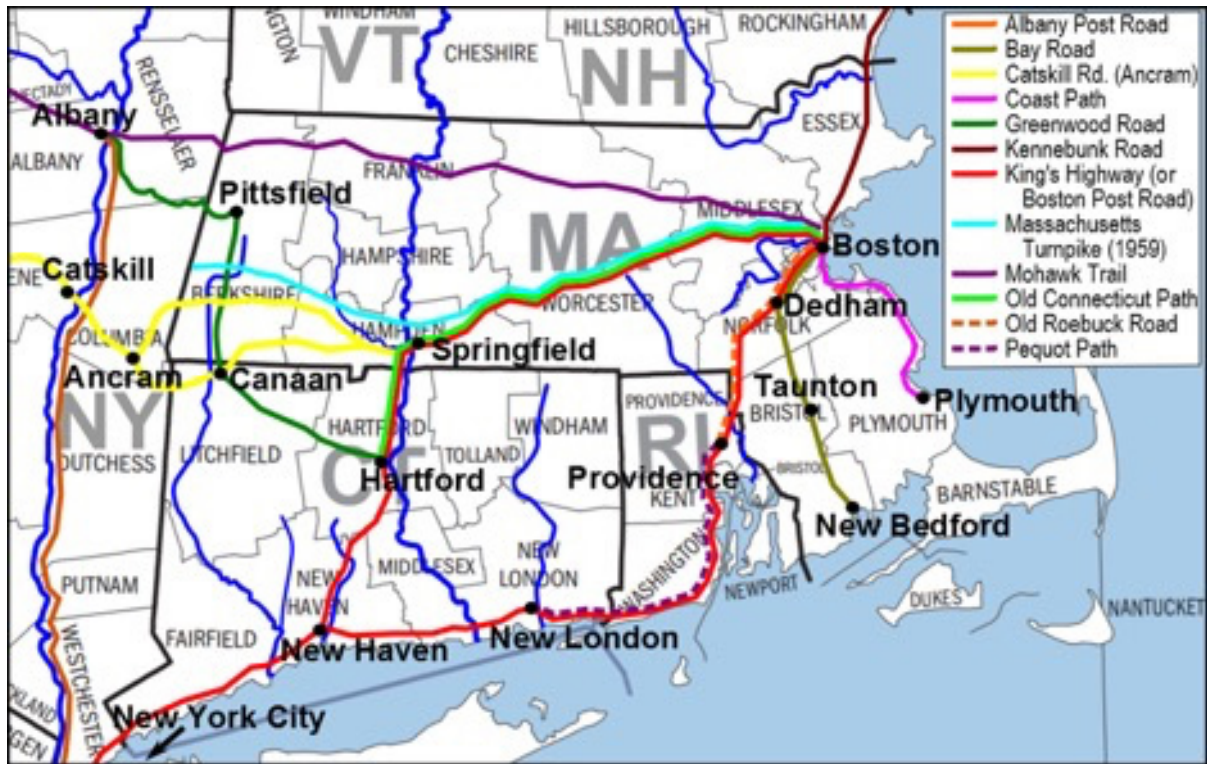


Wenham Cemetery - Also known as Old Cemetery. Located on Main Street (Rte 1A)
Wenham, Essex, Massachusetts. (wenhamma.gov)



"The eastern part of the town is traversed by the rugged and precipitous ring of hills, which skirts almost the entire length of Salem harbor upon the north, and which seems like a rampart raised by nature, as a barrier to the wild fury of the winds and waves."

Adeline P. Cole, Wenham Historical Association, *Notes on Wenham History 1643- 1943*, (Salem, Massachusetts, Newcomb & Glass C., Printers), 14.

Travel Routes Throughout the Colonies

The **Coast Path**, designated a public highway in 1639, was a 45-mile migration route between Plymouth and Boston near the shore of Massachusetts. It began as part of a much longer American Indian trail with extensions as far north as Maine and New Brunswick (see Kennebunk Road). Letters mention that Governor Winthrop traveled the route for two days in 1631 to meet with Governor Bradford. On that trip Winthrop was carried across the streams on the backs of Indians.

The **Kennebunk Trail/Road** was a 170-mile route mostly near the Atlantic shore from Boston, Massachusetts to Augusta, Maine. Indians used the route to connect to English fisherman in Maine and New Brunswick, as well as to Pilgrim settlers to the south in Plymouth, Massachusetts. It was also used from 1630-1761 as a migration route for settlers from Rhode Island, Connecticut, New Hampshire and Maine. Starting in the 1670s the Kennebunk Road served as a northern extension of the King's Highway. The Kennebunk Trail started as an Indian footpath, Europeans expanded it into a horse path, then a wagon road, stagecoach route with inns, and then a turnpike (toll road) by the early 1800s.

The **Old Connecticut Path** was a pre-historic Indian path. It originally went about 94 miles from Boston to Springfield, Massachusetts, and then another 26 miles south to Hartford, Connecticut. It was the first eastern North American trail that led west from settlements on the Atlantic seacoast into the interior of America (Connecticut River Valley). It was used by colonists as early

as 1630. In those first years Indians also carried corn from the Connecticut River Valley over the path to help supply starving colonists in Boston.

The Connecticut River itself was also an important transportation route which attracted early settlers. Starting in the 1650s the Old Connecticut Path route was used as the upper fork of the Boston Post Road to New York City, also known as the **King's Highway** which eventually extended as far south as Charleston, South Carolina. In the 1760s stagecoaches began to traverse these roads carrying regular mail and passengers. Inns for stagecoach passengers usually were established near the time of American Revolution. Nevertheless, travel between colonial towns was more often by sea than it was over land until just before the American Revolution.



The **Old Roebuck Road** was another ancient American Indian footpath. In colonial days Europeans expanded the trail into a wagon road going 43 miles from goes from Boston (founded 1630) to Providence, Rhode Island or Narragansett Bay, (established 1636). The Old Roebuck Road attracted European settlers along its route in Massachusetts and Rhode Island because it provided access to markets for settler goods and services.⁸⁵

Wenham boundary marker from 1710
(half-mile stone from Old Bay Road)
Author's photo – June 2019

⁸⁵ Map and data gleaned from various pages @familysearch.org, 7/10/2021.

Chapter Three

Generation Two of the Abbe/Abbey Family in America

*Thomas Abbe and Sarah Fairfield
1656 – 1742*

*It is indeed a desirable thing to be well descended,
but the glory belongs to our ancestors. Plutarch*

This chapter was challenging and exciting to research and write, with its exploration of the Abbe, Fairfield and Skepper/Skipper connections. There is a great deal of information, some sourced, some not, on these families. Primary family names include Abbe, Fairfield, Knight, Skepper/Skipper, and the additional branches of Wentworth and Hildyard; De La See, Haldenby, Legard and the Plantagenet Kings Geoffrey and King Edward III of England. Dates covered range from 1113 to 1742. Historical information, inventions, and women's lives and roles will pertain only to this second generation in America from 1656 – 1742. But, reader beware, along with royal connections, there are oaths involving murder and pipe bombs, and a cemetery called the Dark Corner Cemetery. It sounds like a place in which vampires might sleep!

Thomas Abbe and Sarah Fairfield
1656 – 1742

2. Thomas Abbe son of John¹ Abbe and Mary ___ Abbe, b. probably Wenham, Massachusetts abt. 1650-1656 according to *Abbe-Abbey Genealogy*.⁸⁶ 5 February 1656, per numerous sources, is his recorded date of birth. 1656 was also a leap year.⁸⁷

On 29 March 1675, Thomas Abbe, age 19, witnessed a deed made by his father, conveying property to his brother Samuel. At first, Thomas took care of his parents and lived on the homestead. Then about 1683, some complaint was made by his father, who turned him away and had his eldest son John Abbe Jr. assume the charge of the place for himself and his aged wife.

Between the years 1675-78, Thomas Abbe was active in the military life of the day. He was a soldier in King Philip's War and was wounded taking the Indian Fort in the Great Swamp Fight at Narragansett, Rhode Island 19 December 1675. Major Samuel Appleton (who witnessed John Abbe Sr.'s Will) commanded the Massachusetts forces for the expedition against Narragansett Fort. On a list of the soldiers, whom the Court, in May 1676, voted to repay for losses of those who were "Damnified" by the burning of Major Appleton's tent at Narragansett, appears the name of Thomas Abbe: 3£, 16s. His name is also on the rolls of Major Appleton's Company in the Narragansett Campaign. *Soldiers in King Philip's War, The Beginnings of Hostilities*, found on ancestry.com also lists Thomas Abbe.

King Philip's War

King Philip's War has been considered the single greatest calamity in seventeenth-century New England and is thought by many to be the deadliest war in the history of European settlement in North America. Over 600 colonists and 3,000 Native Americans died. The war was named after the Wampanoag chief, Metacom, who had adopted the English name, Philip, to honor the friendly relations between his father, Massasoit and the Pilgrims. The immediate cause for the outbreak of the war was the trial and execution of three of Metacom's men by the colonists, after colonists had been killed in skirmishes over land rights.

⁸⁶ Abbe & Nichols, *Abbe-Abbey Genealogy*, 12-14; covers not only his date of birth but much of the biographic information listed in this chapter.

⁸⁷ *Massachusetts, Town and Vital Records, 1620-1988, Wenham: Births, Marriages and Deaths*, 83, (ancestry.com), 9/20/2020.



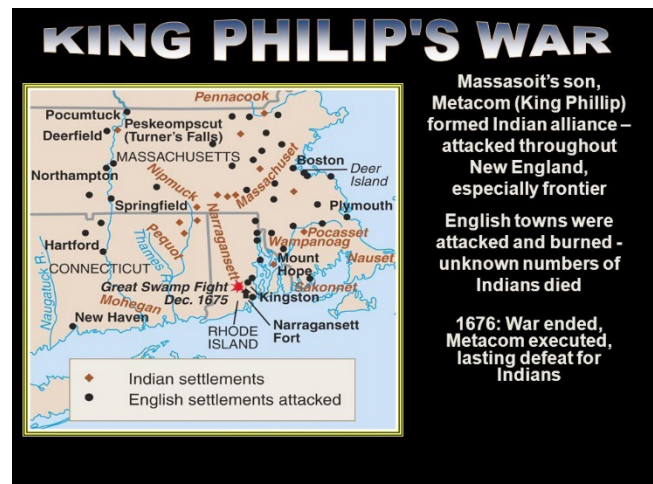
On 8 December 1675, having evidence that the Narragansetts were assisting Metacom, members of the Massachusetts militia, including Thomas Abbe of Wenham, gathered in Dedham, Massachusetts and marched to the villages of Kingston and West Kingston in Rhode Island. On 19 December 1675, the Narragansett Fort was captured in the Great Swamp Fight. Over 100 colonists were either killed or wounded. The combined force of the New England militia inflicted a huge number of Narragansett casualties, including many hundred women and children.

Metacom fled to his ancestral home at Mt. Hope, where he was killed and beheaded. His head was displayed in Plymouth for twenty years.

The war largely ended with Metacom's death. By the end of the conflict, the Wampanoags and their Narragansett allies were almost destroyed.

Only 400 Wampanoag survived and those believed involved in the fighting, were caught, killed, or shipped into slavery in Bermuda by the colonists.

Among those sent to Bermuda was Metacom's son. A sizable number of Bermudians today claim ancestry from these exiles. Other survivors joined western and northern tribes or refugee communities as captives or tribal members.



Other Abbe/Abbey ancestors and their sons (many of whom we will meet in Volume Two) who fought in the King Philip's War were: Nathaniel Hayward, son of Thomas Hayward of Bridgewater, John Shaw, son of Abraham Shaw of Dedham, 1637, John Whitmarsh, son of John Whitmarsh, who arrived with Hall's party from Weymouth, England in 1635, and Miles Morgan, of Springfield.⁸⁸

⁸⁸ Freeman, *The Memorial of Captain Thomas Abbey*, 103; <https://nativeheritageproject.com/2012/09/02/king-philips-war/>; https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Great_Swamp_Fight; https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/King_Philip%27s_War, all accessed 9/20/2020.

In 1680, Thomas Abbe was deposed in Essex County, Massachusetts, though the reason is unclear.⁸⁹ By 1683, Thomas relocated to Enfield, Connecticut, known then as Freshwater Plantation. He was one of the original proprietors of that town with the 11th lot, east side, north of the south corner as his home lot. He became one of the prominent men to the settlement and is mentioned frequently in the records of Enfield: Selectman in 1686, 1689, 1706, 1707, 1709, 1710; the viewer of fences 1689 and several other years; estate agent in 1703; assessor in 1705.

On 10 April 1683, at a meeting of the Committee for Freshwater Plantation on a land list: "No. 18 Thomas Abbe 3 acres meadow, 4 field land; No. 42 Obadiah Abbe, Thomas' brother, 4 acres meadow, 3 field land."⁹⁰ Obadiah had the 8th lot from the south corner east side as his home lot.

Present at the 18 June 1683 meeting of the Committee for Enfield were:

John Pynchon (son of William Pynchon, known as the founder of the present-day town of Springfield, Massachusetts, Lieut. Stebbins, Dan(n) J. Burt, Dea(n) B(n) Parsons. They granted to Henry Abell...; to Thomas Abbe, thirty-five acres meadow, four acres and a home lot of eleven acres; and to Joseph West ... provided they settle at Enfield by *Micasltide* come two years each one of them, or else such grant to be void.

Micasltide is interpreted to be *Michaelmas*; *The Feast of Saint Michael the Archangel*, a Christian festival observed in some Western liturgical calendars on 29 September. Michaelmas was one of the four quarter days of the financial year.

Miriam-Webster.com

Thomas Abbe, m. Marblehead, Massachusetts 16 Dec 1683 **Sarah Fairfield**, b. Reading, Massachusetts 24 Dec 1655, d. Enfield, Connecticut 27 Nov 1742 (age 86), daughter of Walter and Sarah (Skipper) Fairfield. She had been married (1) to ___Needham. She was a widow by 1682. *The Wenham Records* has the following:

Thomas Abbe and Sarah Fairfield of Wenham were married the 17th Day of December 1683, being lawfully published with the consent of their parents Walter Fairfield, and his witness with Moses Maverick Gear and Elizabeth Fairfield.

Elizabeth was Walter's mother and Sarah's grandmother. Marblehead and Wenham both record the marriage.⁹¹

⁸⁹ *Massachusetts Archives*; Columbia Point MA, *Index to the Deponent Records of the County of Essex, Massachusetts*: Vol 7: 362, <online database>, (Provo, Utah, Ancestry.com Operations, Inc., 2000), 9/20/2020.

⁹⁰ Abbe & Nichols, *Abbe-Abbey Genealogy*, 12-14.

⁹¹ Abbe & Nichols, *Abbe-Abbey Genealogy*, 14; *Massachusetts, Compiled Marriages, 1633-1850*, <online database>, (Provo Utah, Ancestry.com Operations, Inc., 2005): source: Family History Library (FHL), Salt Lake City, Utah, film # 0767598, 9/20/2020; *Massachusetts, Town and Vital Records, 1620-1988, Wenham: Births, Marriages, Deaths*, 5 (ancestry.com), 9/20/2020; *Massachusetts, Town and Vital Records, 1620-1988, Marblehead: Births, Marriages and Deaths*, 3, line 45, (ancestry.com), 9/20/2020; *New England Marriages Prior to 1700*, 1: Abby, Thomas (d. 1728), m. Sarah (Fairfield) [Needham] wid., 17 Dec 1683/ 16 Dec 1683; Marblehead, Wenham, (ancestry.com), 9/20/2020.

Children:

- i. SARAH ABBE, b. Enfield, Connecticut 31 Mar 1684; d. 16 Feb 1732; m. Shubael Geer, son of Thomas Geer and Deborah Davis; ten children: three sons, seven daughters.⁹² Note: Shubael was in Major Appleton's company alongside his brother-in-law, ancestor Thomas Abbe Jr. at the Great Swamp Fight.
- 3. ii. **THOMAS ABBE JR.**, b. 30 Oct 1686; m. (1) **Mary Pease**, m. (2) Mrs. Rebecca Pierce. MARY ABBE, b. 3 Feb 1688; d. 15 Oct 1705.⁹³ Many family and published records have wrongly stated that Mary, daughter of Thomas and Sarah, m. James Pease Sr. Her cousin Mary, b. 16 Sept 1684, daughter of John and Hannah (___) Abbe, was the one who m. 15 Nov 1710 James Pease Sr. The *Wenham Records* read: "Mary the daughter of Thomas Abbe by Sarah his wife, d. 15 Oct 1705." The Will of Richard Abbe is further proof."⁹⁴
- iv. JOHN ABBE, b. Enfield 27 Sept 1692; d. East Hartford, Hartford County, Connecticut 30 Oct 1790; m. Hannah Boardman, daughter of Daniel Noyes Boardman and Hannah Mary (Wright) Boardman, b. Wethersfield, Hartford County, Connecticut 10 Dec 1708. John was a farmer and one of the first settlers of Upper King Street, Enfield.
- i. TABITHA ABBE, b. 29 Mar 1696; d. 17 May 1728 (she is called Abigail in her father's Will, probably through a scribe's mistake); m. Enfield 19 Nov 1713, John Warner of Enfield, b. 29 Mar 1696/7. Children b. Enfield: Nathaniel, b. 11 Oct 1714; John Jr., b. 28 Aug 1716; Daniel, b. 25 May 1719.
- ii. ELIZABETH ABBE, b. 1702; d. Somers or Granby, Connecticut 16 Nov 1784; m. (1) Enfield 28 Nov 1723 Benjamin Bement, b. Enfield 1698, son of John Bement; son Benjamin Jr., b. Enfield 1724. They later removed to the part of Simsbury now called Granby. The couple had five children before Benjamin Bement's death in 1744. Elizabeth, m. (2) 1747 Samuel Felt.

The Committee met at Enfield on 7 April 1684. The house lot of Thomas Abbe was next to the Minister's:

Next on the south side thereof and adjoining there-to lies the house lot of Thomas Abbe, 11 rods in breadth Southward and running in length Eastward as the lot for the ministry doth 160 rods." Next to the lot of Thomas Abbe southward, lies the house lot and home lot of Mr. Peltiah Glover Jr., 12 rods in breadth and runs in length eastward from the Street on the West 160 rods. Next was Daniel Collins' lot of twelve rods. Next adjoining to Daniel Collins afores(d) on the North lies Southward the home lot of Obadiah Abbe (Thomas' brother) 12 rods in breadth, and in length from the Street on the West back Westward, one hundred sixty rods. Next was John Ferman's lot.

⁹² *The Geer Genealogy: a historical record of George and Thomas Geer and their descendants in the United States from 1623 to 1923*, <online database>, (Provo, Utah, Ancestry.com Operations, Inc., 2005), 299-300, 9/20/2020.

⁹³ *Massachusetts, Town and Vital Records, 1620-1988, Wenham Vital Records Transcripts, Wenham Deaths, to the end of the year 1849*, 183, (ancestry.com), 9/20/2020.

⁹⁴ Abbe & Nichols, *Abbe-Abbey Genealogy*, 14,16.

At an 8 March 1687 meeting for the Committee for Enfield, John Pease Sen(r), Isaac Gleason and Thomas Abbe were selectmen for the following year. Thomas Abbe was also one of the selectmen chosen 20 May 1689, and viewer of fences 11 February 1689.

In 1689, the French and Indian Wars, also known as King William's War, begin. The combined forces of the French and Indians attacked towns in New York, Maine, New Hampshire, and Massachusetts. Connecticut sent troops to assist, Thomas Abbe among them.

At the town meeting on 7 January 1691, it was ordered also that those persons returned (from the wars mentioned above) who neglected their days in cutting bushes in August last according to a warning, shall make good and perform a day's work for the same in cutting bushes on the commons where the selectmen shall appoint them, sometime about this full of the moon, in June next, or otherwise shall pay 2s 6d which shall be levied upon each person that neglects and hath not done his day's work accordingly, by the 24th day of June next, the persons that did not work last year, who are unless they pay the fine of 2s 6d to do and perform each of them a day's work. Going to war was not an excuse for neglecting one's civic duties!

At the time aforementioned are Thomas Hale, Lieut. Isaac Meacham Ju(r), Thomas Geer, W(m) Simons, Zachariah Booth, W(m) Booth, Thomas Howard, Johnathan Bush, Ephraim French, Thomas Bishop, Nathaniel Horton, Benj(n) Jones, Thomas Abbe, Obadiah Abbe, Isaac Gleason, John Bemet, Joseph West, Benj(n) West, Samuel Orsborne and that now may escape the penalty in case of neglect, the selectmen are ordered to return the names of any of the Afore s(d) mentions persons, under their hands who have not performed their respective days' work before 24 June next, unto Mr. Pynchon who is then forthwith to issue out warrants to the Constable for levying two shillings and sixpence on each person then returned defective.

17th century colonial militia units were usually called **train bands** or, sometimes, trained bands. Typically, each town would elect three officers to lead its train band with the ranks of Captain, Lieutenant, and Ensign. As the populations of towns varied widely, larger towns usually had more than one train band. Thomas Abbe was Sergeant in 1711 and Lieutenant of the Enfield Trained Band in 1713.

Abbe & Nichols, *Abbe-Abbey Genealogy*, 12.

I could not find a context for the following court case:

Thomas Abbe of Enfield (by appeal of the Judgement of the County Court held at Hartford the 7th of September 1693) is Plaintiff, Contra John Elsworth of Windsor, Defendant, in an action of Replevin, of one horse, one Mare, and two Oxen, with their gear and other impounded, which were Unlawfully impounded to the damage of Tenn pounds. In this Action the Jury then found for their Plaintiff Costs.⁹⁵

⁹⁵ *Connecticut: Minutes of the Court of Assistants, 1669-1711*, <online database>, (americanancestors.org, New England Historic Genealogical Society, 2013) originally published as Helen Schatvert Ullmann, CG, FASG, *Colony of Connecticut, Minutes of the Court of Assistants, 1669-1711*, (Boston, NEHGS 2009), 11/30/2020.

There are several documents in the files at Essex, Massachusetts, regarding a lawsuit arising out of Thomas' break with his father John Abbe Sr. of Wenham in about 1700. The case is that of Thomas Abbe of Enfield vs. Peter Legro of Wenham for trespass (and the defendant is allowed to substitute his landlord Nathaniel Waldron as the defendant.) In 1696, Nathaniel Waldron bought the lands formerly belonging to John Abbe Sr., from John Abbe Jr., who had inherited his father's land. After the sale, John Abbe Jr. removed to Windham, Connecticut, where he died 11 December 1700.

Shortly after, Thomas Abbe, then of Enfield, Hartford County, Connecticut, laid claim to his father's estate, and the lawsuit followed. Thomas Abbe made his father-in-law, Walter Fairfield of Wenham, his attorney. Walter was also the Representative of Wenham to the General Court of Massachusetts in 1689. Sarah, Thomas' wife, was the granddaughter of John Fairfield, an original proprietor of Wenham. Some of these papers help prove various relationships and distinctly call Thomas Abbe of Enfield, the son of the older John Abbe of Wenham.

For some reason, possibly because John Abbe Jr. failed to probate the Will his father signed in 1683, the Court determined that John Abbe Sr. had died intestate and in December 1702 granted administration of his estate to Thomas. Richard Hutton and Joseph Fowler, whom Thomas commissioned to appraise the estate, valued the property, 23 acres of upland and meadow, the housing, fences, and other appurtenances in Wenham, together with John Sr.'s right in the Common at 92£.

There is also an accounting of his son Obadiah's three years of service to Richard Goldsmith and payment due to Goldsmith of 30£ for room and board. Thomas Abbe and his remaining siblings then settled the account of John Abbe Sr.'s estate.⁹⁶ These documents are found in the preceding chapter under the Will of John Abbe Sr.

Enfield's records hold the following passages; it is interesting to note that many of the land measurements are bounded by rocks and trees and located in proximity to neighboring families whose daughters in the coming generations will marry into the Abbe/Abbey line:

Thomas Abbe is "possessed by Grant and measuring out to him (viz) a Home lot as it is in page 25 which is 11 acres be it more or less length from the Street Westward & ye Common land East bounded North on the Minister's lot, south on A lot called Peletiah Glover's. Also, he is possessed of A lot in the west division in y(e) south Field it being 8 acres more or less, it is bounded East on the County Highway, Simeon Booth on the Southwest by the *Grate* River, North with Pease length 80 rods, breadth 17.

Also, another lot in the south Field in the 3(d) division it Being 26 ½ acres be it more or less Bounded North on the Highway that runneth between the 3(d) and 2(d) division bounded West on W(d) Bancroft, South by the Highway that runs Between 3(d) and 4th division, W(m) Simons

⁹⁶ Abbe & Nichols, *Abbe-Abbey Genealogy*, 4.

on the East. Also, a lot at Schantuck the ends Bounded by the banks North with Sam(l) Terry south with John Burroughs it being 2 acres more or less.

Thomas' son, Thomas Abbe Jr. will marry "the girl next door," Mary Pease, daughter of John Pease Sr., mentioned in the 8 March 1687 Enfield meeting.

Thomas' grandson, Thomas Abbey III, will marry Samuel Terry's granddaughter, Penelope Terry.

Also, 3 ½ acres of meadow Bounded on the sides and west end by upland, Easterly end by a Pine Tree, this meadow lyeth upon a brook called Braud Brook. Another lot lying upon Schantuck River above the sawmill which land he hath instead of ½ acre of meadow and instead of Land the Town had for a Highway over Schantuck, this land is 7 acres more or less, it being bounded East by the river, west by the upland and by a White Oak Tree.

Thomas Abbe is also possessed of a piece of meadow by Grant of the Town on 15 March 1700, and it is measured to Him lying in Freshwater Brook Containing 4 acres more or less bounded by Obadiah Abbe on the west and by the upland South 16 rods, North 20. The land belonging to Obadiah Abbe, Thomas' brother, was willed in 1732, to Thomas' grandson Obadiah, by his great uncle.⁹⁷

According to Enfield records, more land is assigned to Thomas Abbe Sr. on 22nd June 1723:

He is poss(d) of a Farm or tract of land lying In the Mountains Near the North East Corner of the Township of Enfield Lying 160 rods in length, and 150 rods in width Easterly and westerly and is butted and bounded south East corner on a Chestnut Tree near A mountain with A Heap of Stones at y(e) root of s(d) Tree, North East Corner with A rock and a Heap of Stones up it with A bush marked by it, Northwest Corner with a Chestnut and A heap of Stones, The afore s(d) Land as it is butted and Bounded is 150 Acres be it more or less. Laid out by Tom Jones, the town Measurer.

There is also laid out to Thomas Abbe on 11 June 1724, two pieces (*peaces*) of s(d) division Land, the one lying near the old sawmill and bounds westerly by a Red Oak Tree a path, Southerly and Northerly 12 acres more or less being 55 rods in length Easterly and westerly and 35 rods wide.

The other peace (piece) or Tract of land lyeth in the East precinct near a sawmill Called Hampshire and is bounded Northerly on Abbes Brook or meadow and runs 100 rods as s(d) Brook or meadow runs, and 32 rods wide and bounds Southerly on Common land and westerly on A pine Tree marked with the letters **TA** and Easterly with Timothy Roots meadow, this piece of land is 20 acres more or less. Laid out by Thomas Jones, Town Measurer.⁹⁸

⁹⁷ Abbe & Nichols, *Abbe-Abbey Genealogy*, 11.

⁹⁸ Abbe & Nichols, *Abbe-Abbey Genealogy*, 13.

At the Enfield Historical Society's, Old Town Hall Museum, which sits across Enfield Street from the Enfield Congregational United Church of Christ and the Thomas Abbey memorial, there is an exhibit of the *Trees Found on Abbe Farm*. William Friday, of the Enfield Historical Society was an excellent guide and host during my visit there.



William "Bill" Friday

Author visiting the Old Town Museum
in Enfield



Saws from the French - Andrew House
Topsfield, Massachusetts
Author's photo - June 2019



Old Town Hall Museum sign

Thomas Abbe Sr., died in Enfield, Hartford, Connecticut 17 May 1728, age 72; buried in the Enfield Street Cemetery, Enfield, Hartford County, Connecticut.⁹⁹

Sarah lives some fourteen more years. Sarah (Fairfield) Abbe, died Enfield 27 November 1742, age 86; and is buried in the Enfield Street Cemetery.¹⁰⁰

Thomas Abbe's Will, made 12 December 1726, probated 30 August 1728, mentions the following:

- Wife Sarah
- Son Thomas executor and to inherit the homestead and 57 acres
- Son John, to inherit land at Scantic Bridge
- Daughters Sarah Geer and Tabitha Warner have the cattle.

Witnesses were Obadiah Abbe, John Pease Jr., and Joseph Sexton. He styles himself Thomas Senior, a *husbandman* (a person who cultivates the land; a farmer.)¹⁰¹

I found it interesting that he does not name his daughter Elizabeth, who was still living. (Transcription and all errors my own.)

⁹⁹ Abbe & Nichols, *Abbe-Abbey Genealogy*, 12; *Colonial Families of the USA, 1607-1775*, <online database>, (Lehi, Utah, Ancestry.com Operations, Inc., 2016), 3: 3, 9/20/2020; U.S., *Find a Grave Index, 1600s-Current*, Memorial #159042579; (ancestry.com), has Abbe genealogy information, 9/20/2020.

¹⁰⁰ Abbe & Nichols, *Abbe-Abbey Genealogy*, 14; U.S., *Find a Grave Index, 1600s-Current*, Memorial #159043978, (ancestry.com), 9/20/2020.

¹⁰¹ Abbe & Nichols, *Abbe-Abbey Genealogy*, 12; *Hampshire County, Massachusetts: Probate File Papers, 1660-1889*, <online database>, (americanancestors.org, New England Historic Genealogical Society, 2016, 2017, from records supplied by the Massachusetts Supreme Judicial Court Archives and the Hampshire County Court. Digitized images provided by FamilySearch.org), Hampshire Box 1, 51:1-9:1 – 1-9:4, 9/20/2020.

The Will of Thomas Abbe of Enfield¹⁰²

In the name of God, Amen, the Twelfth day of December, Anno Domino 1728. Thomas Abbe Sen of Enfield in the county of Hampshire in New England, husbandman, being sick and weak in Body but of perfect mind and memory, thanks be given unto God therefore. Calling to mind the mortality of my body, and known that is appointed for all men, once to die, do make and ordain this my Last Will and Testament, that is to say, first and principally I give and commend my soul into the hand of God that gave it. And for my body I commend it to the earth to be buried in a Christian like and decent manner at the discretion of my executor. Nothing doubting but at the general resurrection I shall receive ... again by ye mighty power of God; And as touching such worldly estate wherewith it hath pleased God to bless me in this life, I give, desire and dispose of the same in ye following manner and form...

Imprimis, I give and bequeath to Sarah, my well-beloved wife (one *fire*) (the entire?) rooms in ye house I now dwell in, together with the ... of half my orchard with all my household goods and ... all during ye term of life and no longer.

I give to my son Thomas Abbe, whom I appoint my sole executor to this my Last Will and Testament, the several parcels of land and chattels hereafter mentioned viz my house and homestead where I now dwell; my fifty-seven acre lot in third division in ye south field; my seven acre lot upon Scantick adjoining upon James Pease's land; half my meadow upon Abbe Brook so called; together with all my whole right of second division on both first and second grant; one ox, three steers, coming four years old; and steer coming three years old; one horse and three calves and all debts due to my estate with ye use of one half of my grass land in my ... and half my orchard ... in my Life .. with all my ... whatsoever; only he is to pay all debts that is due from my estate.

To my son John Abbe, my lot adjoining to Benjamin Jones' homelot is on ye north side of ye Jones' lot; half my twenty-four-acre lot in ye third division in the south field; my two-acre lot at Scantick bridge and half my meadow upon Abbe's Brook so called.

...& finally I give to my two daughters (viz) Sarah Geer & Tabitha (not Abigail as one historian noted) Warner all my Cattle of what sort or kind so ever, and also all my household goods that there is or shall be remaining after me and my wife's decease to be equally divided; and do hereby utterly disallow, revoke and disannul all and every former Testament Will legacies request and executors by me in any ways before this final names willed and bequeathed, Ratifying and confirming this and no other to be my Last Will and Testament in witness hereof I have hereunto set my hand and seal the day and year above written by ye Sr. Thomas Abbe as his Last Will and Testament in ye presence of us ye subscribers:

Obadiah Abbe
Thomas Abbe
John Pease Jur.
Joseph Sexton

T (his mark)

Upon 30th day of August 1728 Obadiah Abbe and Joseph Sexton made oath that they together with John Peese, Thomas Abbe signed and sealed the afore written... and declared it to be his Last Will and Testament and that to the best of their judgment he was of sound mind and memory as he did it. Johnathan Seagle is to take his oath as above before me his Will I approve and allow of... Sam Partridge, Judge of Probate.

¹⁰² *Hampshire County, MA: Probate File Papers, 1660-1889*, <online database>, (AmericanAncestors.org, New England Historic Genealogical Society, 2016, 2017), (From records supplied by the Massachusetts Supreme Judicial Court Archives and the Hampshire County Court. Digitized images provided by FamilySearch.org), 11/21/2020.

Sarah Fairfield, m. 1673 (1) Daniel Needham,¹⁰⁵ b. Massachusetts 1650 (parents unknown). Daniel d. Salem, Essex, Massachusetts 1676. Sarah had a child called Philip Parsons Jr., born between her two recorded marriages:

- June 1679 – The charge of fornication is leveled against Sarah (Fairfield) Needham and Phillip Parsons.
- November 1679 – The Court orders her appearance; her father Walter is bound for her appearance at the next Ipswich court.
- March 1680 - Walter Fairfield being bound to bring Sarah (Fairfield) Needham to Court and not appearing. The Court declared his bond forfeited, he petitioned, and the bond was moderated. (EQC 7: 363)
- June 1681 - Sarah presented for fornication, an arrest warrant dated 29 June 1681 was issued, and the search for Sarah was to include Salem, Marblehead, Lin, and Wenham. When eventually she was found to have borne a child, the Court imposed a fine.¹⁰⁶

Phillip Parsons Jr. was born ca. 1680, three months after fornication charges. He received funds from his grandfather Walter Fairfield, in Enfield, Massachusetts on 16 January 1726.¹⁰⁷ Phillip, died Enfield, Hartford, Connecticut after 1726. *Find a Grave* has a date of death of 1747 in Enfield, and that he had a son Nathaniel, wife Mary (Pope) Parsons.¹⁰⁸ This information is unsourced, and I have not done further research.

Sarah Fairfield, married at Marblehead, Massachusetts 16 December 1683 Thomas Abbe and with her son Philip Parsons Jr., moved to Enfield, Connecticut, where she would bear six more children. Sarah, died in Enfield on 27 November 1742, age 86, and is buried at the Enfield Street Cemetery.¹⁰⁹

¹⁰⁵ U.S., *New England Marriages Prior to 1700*, <online database>, (Provo, Utah, Ancestry.com Operations Inc., 2012), 530, 9/21/2020.

¹⁰⁶ George Francis Dow, ed., *Records and Files of the Quarterly Courts of Essex County, Massachusetts, 1680-1683*, (Salem, Mass., Essex Institute 1921), 8: 140,148, (archive.org), 9/21/2020; *Fairfieldfamily.com*, website and database, © 2004-2019 Connie Fairfield Ganz, 9/21/2020.

¹⁰⁷ <http://www.fairfieldfamily.com/database/html/0010001.htm#id1349>, 9/21/2020.

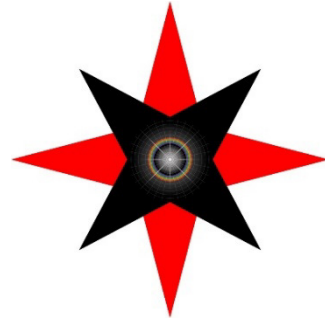
¹⁰⁸ U.S., *Find a Grave Index, 1600's-Current*, Memorial #142011969, (ancestry.com), 9/21/2020.

¹⁰⁹ Abbe & Nichols, *Abbe-Abbey Genealogy*, 14; U.S., *Find a Grave Index, 1600s-Current*, Memorial #159043978 (ancestry.com), has Abbe biography, 9/22/2020.

History and Inventions in this Generation 1656 - 1742

Thomas Abbe and Sarah Fairfield were born during the reign of James II of England.

In 1656, two Englishwomen, Ann Austin and Mary Fisher were the first Quakers to immigrate to the colonies, landing in Boston. They came from Barbados, where Quakers had established a missionary center. Their liberal teachings, advocating sexual equality and opposing slavery, enraged the Puritan colonial government, and the women were arrested and jailed for 5 years, then deported back to Barbados. By the time Thomas Abbe was born, the Massachusetts colonial government had enacted their first ban on Quakers¹¹⁰, and in 1658 it ordered Quakers banished from the colony "under penalty of death." Several of our ancestors, covered in later chapters, found solace in Rhode Island and other colonies sympathetic to Quakers. Massachusetts' later repealed its anti-Quaker laws.



In 1701, Yale College in New Haven, Connecticut, was founded. At the same time, slavery has taken hold in the colonies, and in 1703, Massachusetts required those who liberate slaves to provide a bond of 50£, or more, in the event that the freedman becomes a public charge. It was also illegal for whites and blacks to marry. Connecticut enacts the punishment of "whipping" to any slaves who disturb the peace, or assault whites. Even Rhode Island makes it illegal for blacks and Indians to walk at night, without passes.

From 1702-1713, Queen Anne's War or the War of Spanish Succession was the second in a series of French and Indian Wars fought between France and England in North America to control the continent. In late February 1704, Deerfield, Massachusetts, is destroyed, and 100 residents are abducted and taken overland, nearly 300 miles to Montreal. Deerfield is about 100 miles west of the Boston Area and 44 miles north of Enfield. In 1706, Benjamin Franklin is born in Boston.

In 1714, Cotton Mather preached a sermon in which he states his belief in the *Copernican* theory of the universe, which places the sun at the center and planets in orbit around it. The traditional, or *Ptolemaic* view, held that all celestial bodies revolved around the earth. Cotton's father, Increase Mather, wrote of the death of Richard Goldsmith by lightning mentioned in the previous chapter.¹¹¹

The French establish New Orleans in 1718. In 1721, a smallpox epidemic in Boston prompted Cotton Mather and Zabdiel Boylston, a Boston physician, to experiment with vaccination. Mather had learned of the practice from Onesimus, his slave, who had himself been inoculated as a child and knew injection to be a widely accepted medical practice in Africa.

¹¹⁰ Quaker Star, free image from clipartmax.com, 9/22/2020.

¹¹¹ <https://public.wsu.edu/~campbelld/amlit/1701.htm>, 9/22/2020.



The Reverend **Cotton Mather** (1663-1728) was a Boston born, New England Puritan minister, prolific author, and pamphleteer. He left a scientific legacy due to his hybridization experiments on corn, and his promotion of inoculation for disease prevention, though he is most frequently remembered today for his involvement in the Salem Witch Trials. Mather thought Christ was returning, but only when Satan was defeated and "the outbreak of witchcraft accusations in the colonies was part of God's plan to destroy the devil." He was subsequently denied the presidency of Harvard College which his father, the Reverend Increase Mather, had held.

https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Cotton_Mather; Diane Robotti Frances, *Chronicles of Old Salem*, (New York, Bonanza Books, 1848).

Benjamin Franklin leaves Boston for Philadelphia in 1723, a trip he chronicles in his autobiography. By 1728, Thomas Abbe Sr. has died.

Franklin purchased and published the Pennsylvania gazette in 1729, which later became the *Saturday Evening Post*. In 1729, North Carolina becomes a colony, and the Old South Meeting House is built in Boston. This will become a key meeting place for revolutionaries and is where the Boston Tea Party meetings occurred. The first public library in the American colonies is founded in Philadelphia by Benjamin Franklin in 1731, as was his *Junto Club*, a group of socially progressive artisans. Sir Isaac Newton's law of universal gravitation found in his three-volume work, *Principia*, is translated from Latin into English.

George Washington is born on 22 February 1732 in the Virginia Colony. Construction begins in Philadelphia on the Pennsylvania State House, better known as *Independence Hall*. Benjamin Franklin begins publishing *Poor Richard's Almanac* and the Colony of Georgia is founded.

Into this burgeoning society, a religious revival movement begins in 1734. It becomes known as *The Great Awakening*. Fiery sermons (fire and brimstone!) are preached to crowds in Northampton, Massachusetts, by Johnathan Edwards and others. Edwards will preach into the next generation at the Congregational Church in Enfield, and our ancestors were most likely in the congregation. In 1736, John and Charles Wesley arrived in the Georgia colony at the invitation of founder James Oglethorpe, bringing Methodism's ideas to the American colonies. My ordination as a United Methodist clergywoman took place 266 years later!

In 1735, John Peter Zenger, a New York editor, was acquitted of libel, establishing the Freedom of the Press. In 1737, Boston held the first city-wide celebration of St. Patrick's Day.

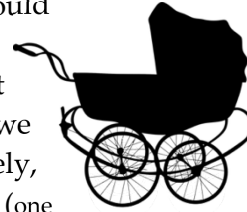
The Rocky Mountains are first sighted in 1739, by French explorers Pierre and Paul Mallet. In 1740, Captain Vitus Bering, a Dane employed by Russia, discovers Alaska. Also, in these years, several slave uprisings occur in South Carolina, resulting in numerous deaths. In 1742, there was

the discovery of coalfields in West Virginia, and Benjamin Franklin invents the *Franklin Stove*, a circulating stove, and a better and safer way to heat homes.¹¹²

Sarah (Fairfield) Abbe, died in Enfield 27 November 1742.

*The Lives and Role of Women 1656 – 1742*¹¹³

In 1733, the Duke of Devonshire wanted something in which he could transport his children. He turned to architect and Renaissance man William Kent who developed a *perambulator* (pictured left). This basket on wheels was first pulled by a pony; later, it would evolve into what we know as a stroller. I would imagine Sarah Abbe never saw one. Most likely, she carried her children swaddled on a *cradleboard*, (one example pictured left) if they weren't in older children's arms.



Dressing colonial boys and girls alike until the age of seven was the norm. When Puritan children were babies, they weren't allowed to crawl because only animals crawled. People should always walk erect in the Puritan view, so small children wore long petticoats and gowns. A woolen blanket then covered the infant, and they were placed in a wooden or wicker cradle, hooded to protect from cold draughts.¹¹⁴

Puritan cradles were very long and narrow, so children could not curl up in the fetal position. Parents didn't want them to arch their backs so that they would "grow up straight."¹¹⁵ Babies were often swaddled to a board for twelve to twenty-four hours at a time until the age of 6 months. Older children in the family often cared for the babies. Since the colonists didn't have screen doors, animals were always wandering in and out of the house. The boards holding the swaddled babies were also hung on pegs so that the animals couldn't step on or nibble on the child. Underneath all that swaddling, babies wore a diaper, then known as a "clout," and just as in Elizabethan times, changing the diaper took place every three days.

¹¹² <http://www.localhistories.org/amertime.html>; https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Timeline_of_Colonial_America; <https://www.thoughtco.com/american-history-timeline-1726-1750-104295> for all historical information in this section.

<https://www.landofthebrave.info/colonial-women.htm><http://www.localhistories.org/amertime.html>

<https://www.thoughtco.com/american-history-timeline-1726-1750-104295>

https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Timeline_of_Colonial_America, all websites on this page checked 9/21/2020.

¹¹³ <http://www.womenhistoryblog.com/2008/05/life-of-colonial-wife.html>, 9/21/2020.

https://www.ducksters.com/history/colonial_america/womens_roles.php, 9/21/2020.

¹¹⁴ <https://pediatrics.aappublications.org/content/54/1/71>, 9/21/2020.

¹¹⁵ http://www.countytimes.com/passport/author-colonial-kids-faced-unusual-upbringing/article_e3e0af6d-6e9c-593c-b2e9-c40f47701751.html, 9/21/2020.

Colonial children often wore a sizeable padded cap on their heads called a *Puddin*, and a large padded ring around their stomach. The colonists believe that every time a baby fell, its brain would get mushier and mushier to the consistency of pudding, thus the expression “puddin’ head.”¹¹⁶

Life for Sarah (Fairfield) Abbe was much the same as for her mother-in-law, Mary Abbe in the previous generation. Among her domestic duties, she may have made her soap, boiled from fat and lye, and she was the one responsible for washing clothes and bedding. Food came into the home in its raw form, and it was female labor that turned wheat into bread, milk into butter, grain into beer, and meat into bacon. Most likely, she cooked over an open fire, baked in a home brick oven, the circulating stove being a luxury commodity, not seen in the Connecticut wilderness. With few options for the long-term preservation of food, the survival of households through long winters depended on women’s work in stocking the root cellars, drying fruits, and salting meats.

Many colonists lived in relatively crude structures, including dugouts, wigwams, and dirt-floor huts made using wattle and daub construction. Construction improved in later years, houses were sheathed with clapboard and had thatch or plank roofs and wooden chimneys. Windows would have been few, small, and placed randomly. Simply framed, if they later contained glass, it was diagonal shaped leaded panes. Wealthier individuals would extend their home by adding a lean-to on the back, which allowed a more extensive kitchen (possibly with a brick or stone chimney including an oven), additional rooms, and a sleeping loft. These houses were the precursors to what is now called the saltbox style of architecture.¹¹⁷



Author’s photos from Plimoth Plantation and Pioneer Village, June 2019



¹¹⁶ Ibid., 9/21/2020.

¹¹⁷ https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Massachusetts_Bay_Colony, 9/21/2020.

The poor took breakfast early in the day; the rich could wait until later morning. For most people, breakfast consisted of bread, cornmeal mush and milk, or bread and milk together, and tea. There was no meal called lunch; instead, dinner was the mid-day meal. An everyday dinner might feature one or two meats with pudding, bread, tarts, root vegetables, pickles, vinegar, salt, and cheese. Supper was the evening meal. It was usually light, perhaps the leftovers from the other meals. Each family also needed raisins, currants, suet, flour, eggs, cranberries, apples, and where there were children, food for "intermeal eatings."



Author's photo from Plimoth Plantation, June 2019

Women also tended herb gardens for food preparation and for healing the sick, which was an overwhelmingly female task. Towns were generally dirty without garbage collection and proper sewers, leading to various diseases with few doctors and limited medical knowledge to heal the sick.

One website gave a few folk remedies which involved herbs and a lot of toads:

- For dysentery - combine red wine with powdered human bones.
- For a fever - use herbs such as elderflower and boneset.
- For bedwetting - rub the grease from church bells or urinate on the grave of a child, of the same sex.

As stated in Chapter Two, Puritan colonial women did possess some authority, mainly control over their children, servants, and home affairs. Women who stepped outside of the traditional gender roles were especially dangerous. They represented a world turned upside down, a world in which men simply were unable to make sense of their position. Women who "broke the roles" faced public ridicule and occasional legal admonishment for their actions. In the late 1600s, trials for fornication and infanticide directed explicitly at women increased. And of course, the fail-safe plan for dealing with women in power: witchcraft accusations. This punishment was particularly significant because the woman accused was rarely able to gain public support for her cause.

Fairfield Family Ancestry

(Fairfeild, Faierfield, Farfeild, Faierfeild, Fayerfield, Fayarfieald)

Fairfield seems to be a habitational name from the Old English *faeger*, meaning beautiful and *feld* meaning open country. The surname and the lands are found across England in the counties of Cumberland, Lancashire, Derbyshire, Somerset, and Kent. Matthew's *American Armory and Blue Book*, 1907 gives a description of a Coat of Arms belonging to John Fairfield, one of the original proprietors of Wenham, Massachusetts 1643:

Arms - "Gules, a lion rampant crowned or; Crest - On a mount vert two doves billing ppr."

No authority is given for the description, and so far, no English book of heraldry has been found which gives such a coat of arms. Additional Stories regarding the Fairfield coat of arms can be found in Wynn Cowan's, *Descendants of John Fairfield of Wenham*, v-vii.

archive.org

There are several books, numerous websites, and even more online Family Trees for the Fairfields who immigrated to the colonies. There are facts and interesting family stories, court records and photographs, and a good deal of misinformation. I have tried to keep to documented information. According to tradition, the Fairfields descended from the Huguenot *Beauchamp* family, which left France for England shortly before St. Bartholomew's Day. Among the distinguished descendants of the Fairfield family are: John Fairfield (1797-1847) twice Governor of the State of Maine and William Fairfield Warren, first president of Boston University.¹¹⁸

In most instances, I would now move backward in time, one generation after the other, to explore the ancestry of the women who married the Abbey men. In this case, the early death of John Fairfield, Walter's father, and the ensuing legal and family troubles with his widow's new husband make it necessary to begin with the first Fairfield immigrant, John Fairfield Sr.

John Fairfield Sr., the immigrant of Charlestown, Salem, and Wenham, is considered the patriarch of the Fairfields of Wenham, and his descendants made a strong mark on the town and the larger Commonwealth of Massachusetts. Details of his life before evidence in colonial court records is still in question. We don't know for sure where he was born, or when. The date of his immigration to the colonies is uncertain; we don't know the full name of the women to whom he was married, in either of his marriages, though that the second was named Elizabeth ____ can be proven.

¹¹⁸ Freeman, *Memorial of Captain Thomas Abbey*, 87 (reprint).

It is supposed that he was born Copford Green, Lexden, Essex, England 16 April 1610. This birth date is the most repeated and "fits" the baptism record for his son Walter: "Father John, mother Elisabeth."¹¹⁹

Colonial records indicate that he married a second time: m. (2) 7/17 June 1632 Elizabeth ____ (Knight?), b. England 1 Apr 1615. A note attached to these unsourced records indicates that they may include recordings of prior marriages in England, and marriages in the colonies. Absent original documents, all we know for certain is that the name of John Fairfield's second wife was Elizabeth.

Children:

- i. **ENSIGN WALTER FAIRFIELD**, b. possibly 1631/2 England; d. 20 July 1723; m. Sarah Skipper.
- ii. **JOHN FAIRFIELD JR.**, b. Salem, Massachusetts 27 June 1641; d. Ipswich 1672; m. 26 Mar 1666 Sarah Geare (Geer), daughter of William Geare who is later named in the 1664 case of the Fairfield brothers vs. Richard Coy. Sarah m. (2) Daniel Killam 13 Apr 1673.
- iii. **BENJAMIN FAIRFIELD**, b. 21 July 1646; d. Reading, Massachusetts 14 July 1666.

In 1638, a John Fairfield arrived in Charleston, Massachusetts.¹²⁰ This record is not proof of "our" John Fairfield, but court and land records for his life in the colonies begin in 1638. There are no records for the immigration of a first wife, Elizabeth, or a son Walter, from England. Connie Fairfield Ganz, the author of a family history on the Fairfields, writes:

If son Walter was born in 1631, then John, Elisabeth, and Walter immigrated sometime between 1631 and 1638 when John's name first appears in colonial records. If Elisabeth immigrated, is she John's only wife, or did he marry a second Elizabeth? Was either Elizabeth's surname Knight; and which one was Walter's mother?

John Fairfield owned land in Charlestown, Massachusetts in 1638 by which others, namely George Bunker, bounded their property.¹²¹ The 1639 *Charleston Book of Possession* published his ownership of land. He is also listed as a proprietor, or original landowner, in 1638 Charlestown.¹²²

¹¹⁹ Godfrey Memorial Library, comp., *American Genealogical-Biographical Index (AGBI)*, 52: 150, John Fairfield, b. 1610 England/Massachusetts; occupation: farmer; Source: Wynn Cowan Fairfield, *Descendants of John Fairfield of Wenham, v.1, First Five Generations*, 1, 3, 52, 58, <online database>, (Provo, Utah, Ancestry.com Operations, Inc., 1999). 9/22/2020; England, *Select Births and Christenings, 1538-1975*, FHL film#583320, (ancestry.com), 9/21/2020.

¹²⁰ U.S. and Canada, *Passenger and Immigration Lists Index 1500-1900's*, 103: Source: Meredith, B. Colket, Jr., *Founders of Early American Families: Emigrants from Europe 1607-1657*, (ancestry.com), 9/21/2020.

¹²¹ Connie Fairfield Ganz, *The Fairfields of Wenham*, (Lake Oswego, Oregon, Allegra Print & Imaging, 2013), 1, referencing: *Charlestown Book of Possessions, Boston Record Commissioners Report Volume III: 3-4, 26, 28, 40.*

¹²² Charles Henry Pope, *Pioneers of Massachusetts*, (Baltimore, Maryland, Genealogical Pub. Co., Baltimore, 1965), (archive.org), 160, 9/21/2020.

A decade before payment, John died. Connie Ganz writes:

[illegible]

John bought 18 acres from William Fisk in May of 1640 and had house and grounds in co-partnership with Joseph Batchelder. This Fairfield House no longer stands, but the western end of later owned property became the *Fairfield Burying Ground*, now located on William Fairfield Dr. in Wenham. During the time in which he was expanding his landholdings, John was admitted to the Salem church¹²⁷ on 25 August 1639, where he most likely heard sermons by the renowned Reverend Hugh Peters. "Continuing on the "prescribed path to respectable citizenship,"¹²⁸ He took the Oath of Freeman on 13 May 1640; other records indicate 13 May 1639.

¹²⁴ *Ibid.*

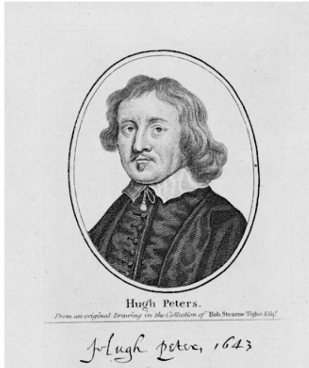
¹²⁵ Fairfield, *Descendants of John Fairfield of Wenham*, (New York: n.pub., 1953), 1, (archive.org), 9/21/2020.

¹²⁶ https://www.visitma.com/wp-content/uploads/2013/06/North_of_Boston_basic.jpg

¹²⁷ Richard Donald Pierce, ed., *The Records of the First Church in Salem, Massachusetts 1629-1736*, (Salem, The Essex Institute, 1974), 8.

¹²⁸ Ganz, *The Fairfields of Wenham*, 10.

¹²⁹ Lucius R Paige, *List of Freemen of Massachusetts 1630-1691*, (Baltimore, Maryland, Genealogical Publishing Company, 1978) 17, date of 13 May 1640, <online database>, (Provo, Utah, Ancestry.com Operations Inc., 2000),



The Reverend Hugh Peters became pastor of the Salem church in 1636. He was involved with creating the first seminary in the colony and argued for its placement in Salem. Governor Winthrop and others disagreed and instead chose a site across the Charles River in Cambridge for the newly formed Harvard College. Peters left the Salem church in 1641 to return to England. He later became Oliver Cromwell's chaplain and participated in the execution of Charles I. After the restoration of the monarch, in 1660, Peters was condemned for 'regicide.' He was beheaded and then drawn and quartered.

Ganz, *The Fairfield's of Wenham*, 8, from <http://www.firstchurchinsalem.org/the-long-history>, 7/10/2021.

Becoming a freeman was a vital step to good stature in the community. That John accepted this indicates he was willing to take the Freeman Oath - in and of itself, an indication of certain value systems; for instance, most Quakers did not take the Oath, and only a small portion of the population chose to pursue freeman status. The *Oath* was a vow of obedience to the Company's government and a promise not to conspire against it. No original is known to exist today, though there is an exciting story on wikipedia.com, *Oath of a Freeman*, discussing Mark Hoffman and his forgery of an "original oath," which includes murder and pipe bombs!¹³⁰

Up until 1641, documents in America about John Fairfield make no mention of marriage, spouse, or children. Then, from the records of the First Church at Salem, we learn of the existence and identity, to some extent, of his immediate family. On 13 April 1641, the wife of *Mr. Farefeild* was admitted to the Salem Church.¹³¹ Two weeks later, on 27 April 1641, the birth of John Fairfield Jr., son, was recorded at First Church Salem.¹³² John Fairfield Sr. purchased his house and land about this same time.¹³³

Less than two years later, the Enon area of Salem became known as Wenham. "No name is more conspicuous in the first century and a half of the history of the town than that of the Fairfield family."¹³⁴ Chapter Two, *John Abbe 1st Generation in America*, includes some Wenham history. A reference in the *Salem Town Record* of 1643 states:

9/21/2020; *Massachusetts, Compiled Census and Census Substitutes Index, 1790-1890*, date of 13 May 1639, <online database>, (Provo, Utah, Ancestry.com Operations, Inc., 1999), 9/21/2020.

¹³⁰ https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Oath_of_a_Freeman, 9/21/2020.

¹³¹ Pierce, *Records of The First Church Salem 1629-1736*, 11.

¹³² Pierce, *Records of The First Church Salem 1629-1736*, 18.

¹³³ Ganz, *The Fairfield's of Wenham*, 11.

¹³⁴ Myron O. Allen, *The History of Wenham: Civil and Ecclesiastical, from its settlement in 1639, to 1860*, (Boston, Mass., Bazin & Chandler, 1860), 136, (archive.org), 9/21/2020.

Strict laws governed daily life in 1600's Massachusetts, and the establishment of a Quarterly Court in 1628/9 took place to regulate offenses and complaints.

Creation of the Quarterly Court of Massachusetts

The following is from the work of Connie Fairfield Ganz, whose listing of the many court dates involving the Fairfield ancestors contributed greatly to this work:

The charter of The Governor and Company of Massachusetts Bay in New England, granted 4 March 1628/9 provided that annually there should be chosen from among the freemen of the Company, a Governor, Deputy-Governor and eighteen Assistants. Among the duties prescribed for this governing body was that of holding upon every last Wednesday in Hillary, Easter, Trinity and Mich[aelm]as terms respectively forever, one great, general, and solemn Assembly, from which four General Assemblies shall be styled and called the Four Great and General Courts of the said Company. For several years this Court exercised the entire judicial powers of the Colony but with the increase of population there came a necessity for additional tribunals, and at a session of the General Court held in Boston on 3 March 1635/6, the following law was adopted:

Further, it is ordered, that there shall be four Courts kept every quarter: 1) at Ipswich, to which Newberry shall belong; 2) at Salem, to which Saugus shall belong; 3) at New Towne, to which Charlton, Concord, Medford, & Watertown shall belong; 4) at Boston, to which Roxbury, Dorchester, Weymouth, & Hingham shall belong. Their Courts shall be kept by such magistrates as shal[lbe] dwelling in or near the said towns, & by such other persons of worth, as shall from time to time be appointed by the General Court, so as no Court shall be kept without one magistrate at the least, & that none of the magistrates be excluded, who can & will intend the same; yet the General Court shall appoint which of the magistrates shall specially belong to *every* of the said Court. Such persons as shall be joined as associates to the magistrates in the said Court shall be chosen by the General Court, out of a greater number of such as the several towns shall nominate to them ...

George Francis Dow, in his introduction to the *Records and Files of the Quarterly Courts of Essex County, Massachusetts* (Essex Institute, 1911), goes into further detail about jurisdiction, dating methods, and record keeping. His Volumes 1-9 span the years 1636 - 1686, with numerous inclusions of Fairfield family members, especially John, Elizabeth, and Walter.

A person could easily find himself whipped or put in the stocks for what seems today a minor offense. For instance, in Court held at Salem 1&2 November 1639:

Barbery, wife of [Edw. Waste Book] Clark, to be whipped for unchaste words, etc. She is not to have to do with this man Joans. Joans (who is a married man) to be set in stocks and fined 10£ for his carriage with the said Mrs. Clark. If he neglected to pay, he was to be severely whipped.

Sarah (Fairfield) (Needham) Abbe, who had, while an unmarried widow, been charged with fornication, suffered a fine of 5 - 10£, however others in her situation were set in stocks or publicly whipped.

In defense of the Court, justice was sought and found by many wronged citizens. In Court held at Salem 30 Jan 1641, "James Smith, Jr., for stealing two fishing lines, to return twice as many lines and pay 20s for loss of owner's time."¹³⁸

The Court later became famous for its Salem Witch Trials, which occurred in the late 1600s. More on those trials in the next chapter.¹³⁹ There were also *blue laws* in colonial New England, limiting what people could do on Sunday.

Seventeenth-century New England Puritans took the Sabbath very seriously, enacting harsh measures, known as **blue laws** to punish the impious. Starting in the mid-1600s, any activity that took away from worship: laundry, consumption of alcohol, unseemly walking, was strictly forbidden. Men and women even faced penalties for public displays of affection. For offenders, the stocks, whippings, fines, banishments, and even death awaited.

Today, hunting on Sunday is still not permitted in Maine, Indiana won't sell liquor, and in Texas, I couldn't buy pantyhose before noon, even if the last pair I had to wear to church had a runner! Here in New Mexico, there are no alcohol sales before noon on Sunday, and in many states, car dealerships continue to operate under blue-law prohibitions in which an automobile may not be purchased or traded on a Sunday.

John Fairfield was involved in several court cases:

- 26 December 1643 - This 'somewhat shocking' public record occurred when, on this date, the Constable of Salem summoned John Fairfield of Wenham/Salem to appear at the quarterly Court, charged with "attempting the chastity of the wife of Goodman Goldsmith." The wording of this indicates an attempted act or proposition of adultery. His fine was 30 shillings, proportional to the crime, and it seems his title was reduced from 'Mr.' to 'Goodman.'¹⁴⁰
- 10 September 1645 - John Fairfield presented at Court the nuncupative Will of his sister Frances, then wife of Robert Hawes. In the court proceeding, he is named "brother Fairfield." Her first husband was Robert Edwards, age about 22, who came on the *Hopewell* from London in 1635. By him, she had two sons, Robert Jr. ,and Matthew Edwards; and by Robert Hawes, a son Thomas. In a deed given February 1658/9, Matthew Edwards speaks of *Uncle*

¹³⁸ *Plymouth Colony Archive Project* @ <http://www.histarch.illinois.edu/plymouth/>, 7/11/2021.

¹³⁹ http://www.fairfieldfamily.com/records/court%20documents/court_index.html, 9/21/2020

¹⁴⁰ Ganz, *The Fairfields of Wenham*, 12.

John Fairfield, deceased.¹⁴¹ It, therefore, seems sure that Mrs. Frances Edwards Hawes was his sister, a Fairfield. She mentions in her Will, a sister, Elin Hilles, in *owld* England.” These clues have not led to further information in England.

**The Will of Frances (Edwards) Hawes
John Fairfield's sister – died 12 June 1641**

She bequeathed “to the little childe which she had by Robt Hawes, twenty pound and to her two sons Robert Edwards & Matthew Edwards, & her young child Thomas Hawes to bring them up in learning her said Husband Robert Hawes is to pay into the hands of some honest man ten pounds to see them brought up in learning & to his daughter she did will to be given (Allis Hawes) her worst Philip & Cheney gown & two petticoats & a waist coast & two Aprons with all small linen suitable to it and a silver bodkin¹⁴² & a pair of pillowbears & each of them half a dozen of napkins & two silver spoons & a gold ring to Thomas Hawes & to Ellin Hilles, her sister in owld England she willed to be sent two yards of lawn and a bible. Also, to the two maids that kept her in her sickness she did will to be given to them namely Kathrin Dorlow & Sarah Bartlett each of them a new handkerchor a Coyf & Crocloth & to Kathrine Dorlow half an ell of lase; more over in the presence of Kathrine Dorlow & Sarah Bartlett she did will four pounds with her husband promised to send to ole England to a Child there & a pewter dish.”
Wit: Wm. Goose, Katherin (her mark) Dorlow, Sarah Bartlett. ¹⁴³

- 9 September 1646 - John Fairfield signed an Inventory of the estate of widow Mary Hersome of Wenham, and the original document has his only known autograph, other than his own Will.¹⁴⁴

John Fairfield and his wife remained members of the church, and on 17 November 1644, *Sister* Fairfield of Salem was granted permission to take communion. Though not explicitly identified as the wife of John Fairfield, there are enough notes to convince researcher Connie Fairfield Ganz that this is indeed John's wife. There are also notes from Reverend Fisk indicating that Sister Fairfield had *an issue* with her husband. It seems John's behavior warranted concern on the marital front. ¹⁴⁵

Their third son Benjamin Fairfield is born. His baptism is recorded on 27 June 1646 at the Wenham church by the Reverend John Fiske.¹⁴⁶ Vol 47: *The Notebook of the Reverend John Fiske*, 1644 - 1675: 27 of 4t. of 46:

This day being the sabbath, Benjamin Fairfield, the son of Goodman Fairfield and his wife of Salem, was baptized. Concluded in the church that the third day of the week at the time, the cows go forth the children to come down to be catechized and to give an account

¹⁴¹ Richard Albert Rutyna, *Social Mobility in Puritan Massachusetts: A Case Study of Fifty Indentured Servants and Apprentices in Essex County, 1630-1680*, (1961), Dissertations, Theses, and Masters Projects, Paper #1539624521, <https://dx.doi.org/doi:10.21220/s2-0zqn-ep44>, Matthew Edwards: 34-35; Richard Coy whom we will soon meet: 27-32, 9/21/2020.

¹⁴² A *bodkin* in historical usage is a “long pin for fastening hair.”

¹⁴³ County Court, Essex County, Massachusetts, George Francis Dow, *Records and Files of the Quarterly Courts of Essex County, Massachusetts 1636 – 1656*, 84-85, (books.google.com), 1/12/2021.

¹⁴⁴ Ganz, *The Fairfields of Wenham*, 16.

¹⁴⁵ *Ibid.*

¹⁴⁶ <http://www.fairfieldfamily.com/database/html/0010001.htm>, baptism recorded in *Notebook of Reverend John Fiske*, 48. 9/21/2020. Notebook can be read online @ <https://www.colonialsociety.org/node/1071#p13>, 9/21/2020.

of what they learned of the sermon sabbath before to the pastor's house. Notice given also of the Lord's Supper next sabbath. Brother Richard Dodge of the church at Salem had a child baptized here.

John Fairfield Sr., feeling unwell, wrote his Will on 11 December 1646. The original is in the repository at the Peabody Essex Museum/Phillips Library Salem, Massachusetts.¹⁴⁷ He may have been only 36 years of age. A few short months after Benjamin's birth and eight years since his land grant in Charleston 1638, John Fairfield died, about 22 November 1646.¹⁴⁸ Wenham records are silent on his exact date of death and his burial. His death must have occurred before 23 December 1646, when the Inventory of his estate was taken.¹⁴⁹

On 6 July 1647, his Will was probated/proven in Court by three men, Mr. John Fisk (their pastor at Wenham church), William Fisk (fellow church member), and Robert Hawes (brother-in-law), and sworn to in Court by his widow Elizabeth Fairfield.¹⁵⁰

Observing all the land he owned and reading his Will and Inventory, John was not a poor man. Also, the Will and large estate of his sister Frances (Edwards) Hawes, indicated that the Fairfields had substantial means in the New World. John's Will is a reliable resource on how early colonists lived and survived in the wilderness. There is admiration for all these who traveled some six months in small ships across a vast ocean with inadequate accommodations, rough seas, lack of food, and no medicine to take care of sea-sickness or any other malady.¹⁵¹

He left two farms, one with a well-furnished farmhouse to his wife Elizabeth, and his heirs, sons Walter, age 13/15, John, age 5 and Benjamin abt. 6 months old. Burial probably took place on the property where he lived, and not in the later Fairfield Burying Ground, which land he owned, on William Fairfield Dr.

John Fairfield specifically limited his sons' right to take possession of the land bequeathed to them until youngest brother Benjamin, was 20 years of age, which would not be for another two decades, around 1666. To Walter, fourteen years older than Benjamin, this must have seemed an eternity.¹⁵² We know from court records, Walter pushed back numerous times.

The Will of John Fairfield of Wenham, dated 11th, 10th mo., 1646, mentions wife Elizabeth; Benjamin, the youngest son; son Walter; his cousin, Matthew Edwards. Wife Elizabeth, sole executrix, and Mr. Henry Bartholomew and Robert Hawes, both of Salem, to be supervisors.

¹⁴⁷ Dow, ed., *Records and Files of the Quarterly Courts of Essex County*, 1636-1656, (Salem, Mass., Essex Institute, 1911), 1: 116-117, (archive.org), Essex Institute, *Essex Institute Historical Collections*, (Salem, Mass., Essex Institute), Vol.1, 1859, 6, *Wenham, Massachusetts*, (full view: babel.hathitrust.org), 9/22/2020.

¹⁴⁸ U.S., *Find a Grave Index, 1600s-Current*, Memorial #168996009, (ancestry.com), has unsourced biography, 9/21/2020.

¹⁴⁹ Ganz, *The Fairfields of Wenham*, 17.

¹⁵⁰ Dow, *Records and Files of the Quarterly Court of Essex County, Massachusetts*, 1: 116-118, (archive.org), 9/21/2020: Fairfield, *Descendants of John Fairfield of Wenham*, inside front page opposite title holds a copy of the Will; Inventory, 3-7; other transcriptions: <http://www.fairfieldfamily.com/records/court%20documents/html/jul61646.html>; also, a link on <https://minerdescent.com/2011/03/03/robert-edwards/>, 9/21/2020.

¹⁵¹ Knight, *The Fairfields Ancestors and Descendants*, 184.

¹⁵² Ganz, *The Fairfields of Wenham*, 25.

- "Probate 7th 5th mo., 1647.— John Fairfield died 22d 10th mo 1646."
- Inventory of above estate, amounting; to 113£, 3s, 7d, returned by Eliz'h Fairfield, widow, Adm'x 7th 5th mo., '47.
- Charges against the said estate—for the keeping of two children, the one 2 yrs. old, 5 mos., 10£, the rent of the farm and stock per year 8£; for 1 child, 2 years old; 1 child, 5 mos. old, 1£.
- The estate is divided into four parts is to each 9£, 12s, 10d.

John Fairfield's Will and Inventory offers these observations:

- His Bible included notes by the famous French protestant theologian Theodore de Beze which means it was the Geneva Bible, the precursor to the King James. The notes of Beze along with those of Calvin, Knox, and more made up the complete source of Protestant religious thought of the day.
- He wrote his Will in English and displayed proficiency in the language, a key to his origin.
- His estate included possessions that were purchased after his arrival, or more likely, brought from another county. Many of the items were not yet manufactured in America.
- He was generous to his wife (named as Elizabeth) and granted her full ownership of his personal (but not real) property, including the right to sell it. However, the same property was subject to the satisfaction of any debts outstanding at the time of his death.¹⁵³

The following transcription is by Wynn Cowan Fairfield, who explained:

The document was folded twice and portions of the paper along the folds are missing ... transcription is taken line for line from the photostat of the Will reproduced herewith. It has been compared carefully with the transcriptions in the *Essex County Massachusetts Records and Files of the Quarterly Courts*, Volume 1, 1635-56; but is more complete than that transcription.

The Will of John Fairfield – 1646

To god be the praise, I John ffayref[eild being in perfect memory though weak in Body do make this my Last Will and Testam[ent in] manner and form as followeth, ffirst I commit my soul into the hands of my faithful [Re]deemer, through a lively hope that when this frail body of mine shall be laid in the dust [I shal]ll be preserved safe through his merits and worthiness alone unto the great day of the resurre[ction] at what time my soul and Body being reunited together by the power of his grace and th[e] [eff]icacy of that his All-Sufficient mediation, I shall be glorified together with him in his eternal [kin]gdome: And as touching the outward goods of this life which God of his goodness have give[n] me my Will and Pleasure is that they be disposed in such sort as here followeth:

Imprimis I do Give and Beque[ath] [unto] Elizabeth my beloved wife my part of house and ground which I have in Co-partnership with Joseph [Bat]chelder to her and to her Heirs forever. Item: I do give unto my wife all my moveables within doors and without as namely my Cows, Cattle, Swine, Corn, Household Implements and utensils; Bed, bedding, Linen, Woolinges, Brass, Pewter, money, Debts and whatsoever is mine either in Possession or accruing or belonging to me for her the said Elizabeth, to have and enjoy the same as her own; fee Simple to dispose of at her pleasure without Interruption or molestation from any other, and also my will is that my said wife shall have the use and occupation of the house I now live in and the ground Appertaining thereunto, and of my farm had from Salem; until such time as Benjamin, my youngest son shall Come to twenty years of Age; and then my mind and will is that this house and Land and my moveable Goods, then remaining, shall all be equally in the proportion divided, between my wife, and three Children, so many of them as shall then survive. And further this is my w[ill] that my wife shall see the bringing up of my Children, Christian Like and Honestly, and also the due disposal of them unto such honest

¹⁵³ Ganz, *The Fairfields of Wenham*, 22.

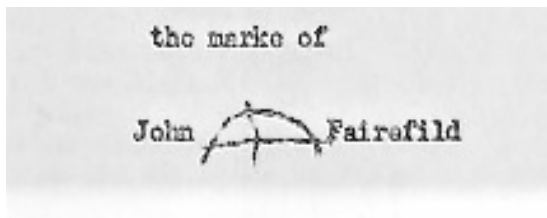
occupations or lawful Callings or C[on]ditions of life as she in her wisdom with the adv[ice] of the Supervisors [of this my will shall esteem most meet, this her said] care of them to extend towards my said Children until my youngest son Benjamin Comes to twenty years of Age; And Likewise my will and pleasure is my son Walter shall rest himself satisfied with what I here have done as concerning him and take it as my mind and advice that he would approve himself dutiful unto his Mother upon whose Courtesy he shall depend for ought else he might expect: Also my mind is my said wife shall make no strip or waste of Timber fencings, and shall keep my said houses in good and sufficient Reparations and my ground suitably fenced and enclosed according as she finds the same during the said space of Term, and in Cause she shall dispose herself in marriage that then she shall before the *solemninge* of the same enter into sufficient bond and security for the fulfilling of this my will unto the Supervisors, further my mind and will is that my guns and swords: my Children shall have the use of them as need require.

Item: I give unto Mathew Edwards my Cousin, Twenty Acres of upland lying within my farm had from Salem, with two acres of meadow to be laid out most indifferently by my supervisors to enjoy it at one and twenty years of Age.

Item: I Constitute And ordain Elizabeth my wife sole Executrix And my Loving and well-approved friends Mr. Henry Bartholomew of Salem and Robert Hawes of Salem these two Supervisors to this my Last Will and Testament.”¹⁵⁴

John (his mark) Fairfield

Wit: Jo. Fiske, William Fiske Robert Hawes.



¹⁵⁴ Wynn Cowan Fairfield, *Descendants of John Fairfield of Wenham*, (front cover); fairfieldfamily.com, 11/21/2020.

**Inventory of the Estate of John Fairfield of Wenham
taken 23: 10: 1646, and sworn to by widow Elizabeth Fairfield, 7: 5: 1647**

Imprimis

Item: One dwelling house: 7£, 10s.

Seventy-five Acres of upland and seven acres of meadow: 21£, 16s.

A farm of Eighty Acres of upland and eight acres of meadow: 6li.

A Joint purchase with Joseph *Bachelder*, containing forty-eight Acres of upland and three Acres of meadow & a dwelling house and a Cowhouse & Corn sowed upon it: 10£.

Wheat un-thrashed: 1£ Rye un-thrashed: 1£; Indian corn: 8£ 15s; five loads of hay: 2£, 10s. Three cows 13£, 10s; three yearling Calves: 4£, 16s; one sucking calf: 8s; one fat Hog: 2£, 10s; one sow: 1£, 15s; one barrow hog: 1£, 8s; two shotts: 1£, 4s; three pigs: 1£, 4s.

One feather bed & bolster & five feather pillows: 3li; under bed, one green rug and one blanket 1£, 12s, 6d; one feather bed, one feather bolster and one flock bolster: 2£, 5s; two coverlets, one pillow and two under Blankets: 16s, 6d; Greene linen(y) wollsie curtains and a Darinck* Vallience 1£, (a name formerly given to goods manufactured at Tournay, Belgium, used for curtains, hangings, and carpets" -- Alice Fairfield Moody), one Bedstead and cord: 5s, 6d; four pair of old sheets: 1£, 4s; two sheets and a half of fince flax: 1£, 8s; four pillow beers: 8s.

Two diaper board clothes and one little plain board clothes: 10s; two diaper napkins and three plain napkins: 4s; two hand towels, and one old *boord* cloth: 4s.

One great brass Kettle: 18s; one middle brass kettle: 12s; one lesser brass kettle: 7s; one brass baking pan with a cover to it: 7s; three brass skillets and a brass *scommer*: 5s; one small iron pot: 2s; five pewter dishes: 9s; two fruit dishes and two saucers: 3s, 6d; four pewter porringers*: 2s, 4d; a one-pint pot of pewter: 2s; one double salt* of pewter: 1s, 6d; one pewter Candlestick: 1s, 8d; six pewter spoons: 6d.

A chamber pot of pewter: 2s; two chests: 10s; three boxes: 3s; one cupboard: 5s 6d; two pails: 2s; one beer barrel: 5s; one spit: 2s; a pair of andirons: 3s; a gridiron: 1s 6d; a frying pan: 1s; a pair of tongs and fire shovel: 1s, 6d; a warming pan*: 2s, 6d.

A musket with a frye lock*: 14s; an old Fowling piece: 14s; a pistol dagg: 5s; a sword and bandoliers: 8s; a beetle and four wedges: 4s; two old axes: 3s; a crosscut saw: 8s; a hand saw and two old shovels and pair of pinsons: 4s; twenty-three harrow tines: 4s 9d; three hanging locks: 2s; an iron foot: 1s; two pair of hooks & eyes for a gate: 2s; a brown bill: 2s; an iron spade: 4s; two pair of hooks and eyes for a gate: 2s, twenty pounds of leading weights: 5s; old iron: 5s; three sickles: 2s.

A Bible with Boses [Boza's] notes: 10s; a smoothing iron: 2s; a black stuff suit: 1£; an old jerkin, and britches* of silk russett cloth: 12s; an old full coat and hood: 1£; an old Black hat: 2s; a pair of boots: 1s, 6d.

A wicker fan: 4s; a half bushel and a half peck measure: 2s, 6d; two old hogsheds (barrels): 4s; a barrel with a cover: 3s; hemp: 5s; two bags: 2s; four trays: 3s; a trundle bed: 5s; a broad box: 6d; a wheelbarrow: 1s, 6d; four old hoes and an old garden rake: 3s; a pitchfork and a dung fork: 2s; a woolinge wheel and a linen wheel: 6s, 8d; a brason mortar and a pestle: 3s; eighteen pounds of drest hemp: 12s; three old chayres (chairs): 3s; two pot racks and a pair of bellows: 5s; a leather sack and an iron peelee and some other old iron: 3s; a mattock: 2s, 6d.

Sum 113£, 3s, 7d.

On a separate piece of paper:

2 cows: 9£; 3 steers and heifers of 2 years old: 7£, 10s; 1 calf under one year: 10s; 1 hog: 2£; a sow and a small pigge: 1£, 4s. A bushel of Indian Corn 3 bushels of wheat.

Total 20£, 4s.

Account for the keeping of the two Children, the one 2 years & 5 months & the other 2 years: 10£; the rent of the Farm & stock, per year: 8£; the wife's pte: 4£; 1 child 5 months: 1£. The estate being divided into 4 pts is to each:

Total 9£, 12s, 10d.**

The widow Elizabeth Fairfield, m. (2), Peter Palfrey, who gave bonds to pay the portions of the three children, Walter, John and Benjamin.¹⁵⁵

¹⁵⁵ Essex County, MA: *Early Probate Records, 1635-1681*, Vol 1: 73-36 (americanancestors.org), 11/21/2020; an image of John Fairfield's Will can be found on fairfieldfamily.com, 11/21/2020; Wynn Cowan Fairfield, 7.

From the *Probate Records of Essex County Massachusetts, 1635-1664*, (Salem, Essex Institute, 1916), Vol 8: 325: *Fairfield, Benjamin et al* (guardianship 1660):

Palfrey was further ordered to pay out of the goods that he had with his wife Elizabeth Fairfield, to the value of 40s to Walter the eldest son, which was to be understood to be more than about 30(?) which he formerly received of said Palfrey. John Fairfield, the second son, being underage, chose his brother Walter to be his guardian, and Benjamin, being about fourteen years of age, chose his father-in-law (step-father), said Palfrey, as guardian, and agreed to live with him, until he reached the age of twenty years, Palfrey teaching him to read and write. (*Salem Quarterly Court Records, Vol 4: 62* archive.org)



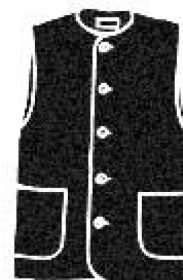
According to Wynn Cowan Fairfield (pictured left), this account (the *Inventory* listed above) would appear to be that of Peter Palfrey, in settlement of his wife, Elizabeth (*Knight*) (Fairfield) Palfrey's estate on her death. If so, it would set the date of her death roughly two years and five months after her marriage to Peter Palfrey.

On 7 July 1647, she still swore to Inventory as 'Elizabeth Fairfield.' By December 1649, according to Matthew Edwards [presumed nephew], she was dead. This would look as if Walter (about 14 years old in 1646) stayed with his mother only five months; John (about 5 years old in 1646) stayed with her only two years; and Benjamin, 6 months old when his father died, stayed with her the full two years and five months until her death.¹⁵⁶

Definitions and Descriptions of a Few of the Old-Fashioned Items from John Fairfield's 1646 Inventory¹⁵⁷

A beetle and fowre (four) wedges: A beetle is a tool resembling a hammer but with a large head (usually wooden) used to drive wedges or ram down paving stones, or for crushing, beating, flattening or smoothing. The beetle and wedge was a very effective way of splitting large logs for firewood: the iron wedges were hammered in to force the log apart, using much less effort than splitting with an axe.

Jerkin: a tight, collarless and sleeveless jacket open at the neck and made of cloth or leather, worn by men in colonial days with *bretches*: The noun meaning "trousers" rhymes with itches, and may be spelled britches.



Mattock: an agricultural tool used for digging and mining. Also effective against armor when necessary. Actually, it was effective at crushing or piercing anything it hit.

¹⁵⁶ Image from fairfieldfamily.com

¹⁵⁷ Descriptions and images from fairfieldfamily.com



Firelock musket: During this period the musket revolutionized the role of the infantry. The original musket was a firelock, itself a great improvement on the earlier matchlock. The matchlock required a forked stand to hold its long barrel. The rifleman had to ignite the powder in the touchhole with a hand-held burning wick, conditions which made the weapon

very difficult to aim. The firelock used a trigger attached to a rod which moved a serpentine burning wick to the touchhole, thereby allowing the rifleman to hold the weapon with both hands and make an aimed shot. The lighter, more reliable, and more mobile firelock could fire a round every 2-3 minutes. The firelock was later replaced by the wheel lock, then by the flintlock and by the 1800's, was replaced by the percussion cap.

Warming pan: Long handled warming pans, holding hot embers safely inside the pan, were moved round the bed to warm it for the elderly, the sick, or visitors' beds.



Hemp: The *Columbia History of the World* states that the oldest relic of human industry is a bit of hemp fabric dating back to approximately 8,000 BCE. Presidents Washington and Jefferson both grew hemp. In the 17th and 18th centuries, hemp was legal tender in most of the Americas; it was even used to pay taxes.



A double salt of peuter: The *salt* was the most significant piece of pewter on the table: the most important people in the household sat above the salt cellar, while the lesser folk sat below it.

Hogshead barrel: A hogshead is a large cask for the storage and transportation of liquids and commodities. Abbreviated, hhd. Though its capacity did vary from country to country to one degree or another, the London hogshead of beer contained 54 gallons. The standard measure was about 50 gallons, for most liquids; but it could vary greatly, for example, in 1749, a hogshead of molasses was fixed at 100 gallons.

Pistol dagg: Short, heavy pistols, called daggs, were in common use about the middle of the 17th century, with butts of ivory, bone, hard wood or metal.



Porringers: A shallow, round bowl with one or two flat, horizontal handles set on opposite sides of the rim and, usually, a shallow lid.

Elizabeth (Knight) Fairfield

In the feudal system introduced by the Normans the name Knight was first applied to a tenant bound to serve his lord as a mounted soldier. It came to denote a man of some substance, since maintaining horses and armor was an expensive business. As feudal obligations became increasingly converted to monetary payments, the term lost its precise significance and came to denote an honorable estate conferred by the king on men of noble birth who had served him well. Knights, in this later sense, normally belonged to ancient noble families with distinguished family names of their own, so that the surname is more likely to have been applied to a servant in a knightly house or to someone who had played the part of a knight in a pageant or won the title in some contest of skill.

There is much ado about the name of John Fairfield's wife, Elizabeth. Some say he married Elizabeth Knight in England before 1631. Others that the surname of his *second* wife was Knight. *New England Marriages Before 1700*, not a primary source, but an index to sources, indicates: "2nd wife Elizabeth Knight(?)" and that the marriage took place in 1632. Wynn Cowan Fairfield states, "Authority for Elizabeth Knight, comes from Raymon Myers Tingley in *Ancestors of Guilford, a record of some of the ancestors of Guilford Solon Tingley and his wife, Martha Pamela Myers*." ¹⁵⁸ This book is a family history published in 1935, whether they had access to primary sources, I don't know.

The information from page 189 of that text is as follows:

Walter Knight, of Nantucket, Cape Ann, and Boston, Massachusetts, b. abt 1585-87 England; d. _____. He was in Nantucket in 1622, in Cape Ann in 1625, in Duxbury in 1638, and Boston in 1643. In 1624, he was deposed at age 39, and in 1653, at age 66. Carpenter, An Episcopalian. Very litigious. Called "Old Knight," m. (1) _____ 1610 Elizabeth _____, b. _____; d. Apr 1934; m. (2) abt. 1635 Ruth Gray, b. 2 June 1618, England, daughter of Thomas and Ruth Gray of Marblehead, Massachusetts; d. _____.

Walter Knight, had eight children, presumably with both wives, the third child being Elizabeth Knight, b. England 1 Apr 1615 (three years before her father's second wife); d. _____; m. (1) 7 June 1632 John Fairfield of Salem, Massachusetts, b. _____; d. Wenham 22 Nov 1646; m. (2) _____ 1646, John Palfrey (not the well-documented marriage to Peter Palfrey), as his second wife, b. _____; d. 15 Sept 1663. This text lists four sons born to John Fairfield and wife Elizabeth: Walter, b. Salem 1636; *Daniel* unknown birth and death dates; John Jr., bapt. Salem 1641; Benjamin, bapt. Salem 27 June 1646. ¹⁵⁹

¹⁵⁸ Fairfield, *Descendants of John Fairfield of Wenham*, 1, (archive.org), 9/21/2020; U.S., *New England Marriages Prior to 1700*, 257, (ancestry.com): "Ferefield, John (-1647, 1647?) & 1/wf? 2?wf <Elizabeth> <Knight?>, m/2 Peter Palfrey 1646+; b. 1632, 17 June 1632; Charlestown/Salem, 9/21/2020.

¹⁵⁹ *A Record of Some of the Ancestors of Guilford Solon Tingley and His Wife, Martha Pamela Meyers*, <online database>, (Provo, Utah, Ancestry.com Operations Inc, 2005), 189, 9/21/2020.

Kathryn Fairfield Knight, in her e-book, *The Fairfields Ancestors and Descendants*, writes, "Sometime in the spring of 1638, John Fairfield, his wife Elizabeth (Knight) Fairfield and their three-year-old son Walter landed in the small settlement of Charleston, Massachusetts and bought property there."¹⁶⁰ A romantic notion, but there is no proof. Also, if Walter was b./bapt. 1631, as other possible sources indicate, he would have been about 7 years old.

Ms. Knight has determined that Elizabeth (Knight) Fairfield was born to Walter and Elizabeth Gunne Knight in Somerset, England 1 April 1618; d. Newbury, Essex, Massachusetts 28 December 1649, and m. Somerset, England 7 June 1632 John Fairfield; all without documentation. She then lists an ancestry for Walter and Elizabeth (Gunne) Knight going back several generations.¹⁶¹

She proposes there are two Walter Knights – the one mentioned above from Somerset, England, and the Walter Knight who arrived on the *Zouch Phoenix* with Peter Palfrey in 1624. She concludes that this second Walter was, "colorful, a rather rough and tumble type, too tough to be the father of Elizabeth," who she hopes would be somewhat more refined, "to be the wife of John Fairfield." This Walter worked at the Fishing Stage and became known as one of the "Olde planters" of New England. She surmises, and with reason that he was "coarse, uneducated, common and a ruffian." For example, Walter Knight was presented before the Salem Quarterly Court 28 February 1642/43 for "not living with his wife" and "for being a frequent liar and glorying in his and his wife's illegal relations before marriage."¹⁶² She notes that John Fairfield appeared to be a man of means and to her, "it seems unlikely that he would have married a 'ne're do-well woman, poor and uneducated,'¹⁶³ which is how she describes this Walter Knight's daughter, without any other documentation.

For me, the fascinating Walter Knight is the "rough and tumble" Walter of the Gloucester Fishing Stage. Given the 'rough and tumble' nature of both John and Walter Fairfield, it may not be a stretch to pair Walter Knight's daughter with John Fairfield. One small piece of circumstantial evidence that warrants an ongoing consideration of this Walter Knight connection: "John and Elizabeth's first-born son was named Walter. According to Colonial naming patterns, the first son was named after his mother's father and first daughter after her father's mother."¹⁶⁴ This Walter Knight will re-appear again in Volume Two of this series, no less "rough and tumble" than here.

Kathryn Fairfield Knight describes in detail the Fishing Stage at Cape Ann, near Gloucester. Taken with her descriptions, I visited there in 2019. I also found it fascinating. She, again marvels at the contradiction, that this 'rough and tumble' Walter Knight, is a contemporary of Gov. William Bradford and Roger Conant, some of the more famous pilgrims of their time. His name

¹⁶⁰ Knight, *The Fairfields Ancestors and Descendants*, 3.

¹⁶¹ Knight, *The Fairfields Ancestors and Descendants*, 21-22.

¹⁶² Dow, *Records and Files of the Quarterly Courts of Essex Co.*, Vol 1:51-52.

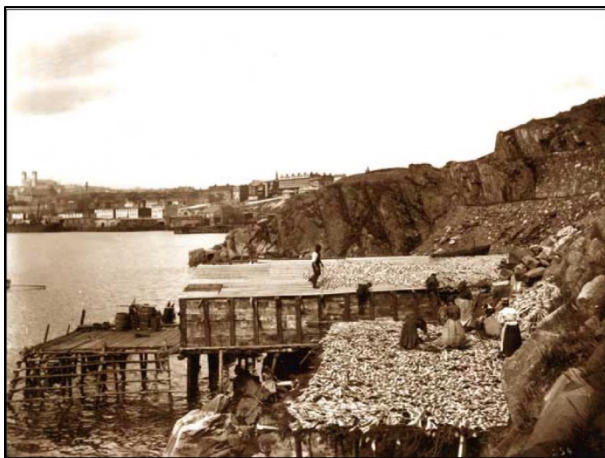
¹⁶³ *Ibid.*, Chapter 3: *Walter Knight*, 17 - 20; Chapter 4 *Elizabeth Fairfield Knight*, 21-23.

¹⁶⁴ Ganz, *The Fairfields of Wenham*, 24.

is also linked to Peter Palfrey,¹⁶⁵ who will become the second husband of Elizabeth (*Knight*) Fairfield after the death of John Fairfield. *The Great Migration Begins, Vol 2 G - O* offers additional information if the reader is interested.¹⁶⁶

Though the Knight ancestry was a dead end, I did enjoy visiting Stage Fort Park in Gloucester and learning about the area and early industry in the colonies.

The Fishing Stage at Cape Ann and Gloucester Massachusetts



In 1623, a ship belonging to the Dorchester Company of England dropped off a group of men at Half Moon Bay, Cape Ann. The Company plan was to have these men build a permanent encampment at the site, so that after the fishing season they could remain at Cape Ann instead of returning to England for the winter. This plan would save both time and money for the Company because needed fish processing equipment, such as drying racks, could be built as permanent structures and there would be no need to ferry the men back

and forth each year. These men were the first non-native settlers of Cape Ann and were known as *surplus men* because they were not needed to sail the vessel.

In 1624, the men built a rude fort on the westerly side of Gloucester Harbor, along with a longhouse to serve as barracks, storehouses, and a *place of revelry*. Near the building were platforms (stages) for drying fish - dried cod was popular. The salt, needed in the drying process and for preserving the fish for the return trip to England, was found at Salt Island near Bass Rocks, outside Cape Ann. Unfortunately, the ground in the area was unfit to grow crops, and there were no horses, only a few goats and hogs. A few Indians from the local *Agawam* (meaning fish curing place) tribe, stayed close, attracted by the fishermen, with whom they could barter skins for cloth, liquor, and knives.



¹⁶⁵ Ibid., Chapter 2: *Peter Palfrey*, 15-16.

¹⁶⁶ *New England, The Great Migration and the Great Migration Begins, 1620-1635, Vol 2 G-O*, 1139-1142, <online database>, (Provo, Utah, Ancestry.com Operations Inc., 2013). 9/21/2020. If interested also look up Thomas Gray (Vol 2) and Peter Palfrey (Vol 5) and you may find a *third* Walter Knight.

In 1625 the Dorchester Company disbanded and offered to bring the surplus men home, but about a dozen of them chose to stay in the New World, under the direction of Rodger Conant. They moved to more arable land in the vicinity of Salem, where the first settlers of the Massachusetts Bay Company joined them two years later. These included Thomas Gardner, Thomas Gray, Reverend John Lyford, Richard, John Norman, John Tully, John Woodbury, and *Walter Knight*, as well as John and Agnes Balch and their children.¹⁶⁷

We have seen that John Fairfield Sr., wealth notwithstanding, had a temper which brought him into Court; we will learn that his son Walter found himself in many court cases and granddaughter Sarah, has a child out of wedlock before marrying Thomas Abbe. It seems people can be "colorful," no matter their economic circumstances. That said, there is no proof for the ancestry of Elizabeth ____ (*Knight?*), wife of John Fairfield, and Peter Palfrey. "Despite what is purported on many online and print records, the supposition that Elizabeth's maiden name was Knight and that she is the daughter of Dorchester Company adventurer Walter Knight is unsupported."¹⁶⁸

The documented facts about Elizabeth (____) Fairfield's life are her children with John Fairfield, the 13 June 1641 admission to the church at Salem, and her July 1647 appearance in Court to swear to the Inventory of her late husband's estate.

After John Fairfield's death, Elizabeth (____) Fairfield, m. (2) 1646 Peter Palfrey, who arrived in the colonies in 1624 on the ship the *Zouch Phoenix*, with the Balch family, *Walter Knight*, William Trask, John Tully, and John Woodbury. Mr. Palfrey became quite wealthy from his marriage to Elizabeth as he took over the many Fairfield properties in Wenham. Of course, the money from leasing John Fairfield's farm also helped his situation in caring for the three boys.

When Elizabeth (Fairfield) Palfrey, died in 1649, leaving her three sons in the hands of Peter Palfrey, he inherited all of Elizabeth's wealth and, in 1652, moved her three children to Reading, Massachusetts, along with his own six children. There he remarried for the third time.

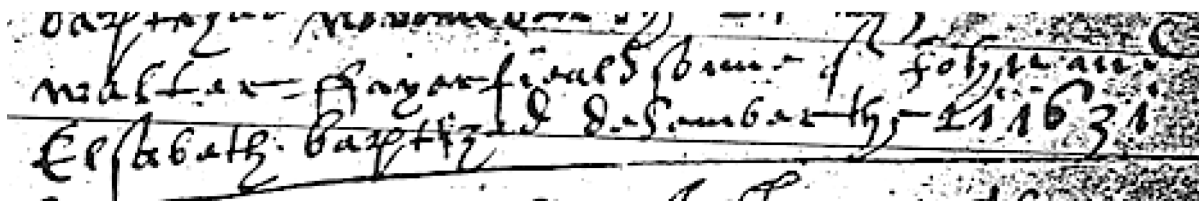
In November 1662, Peter Palfrey died. Benjamin Fairfield, chose his cousin Matthew Edwards as a guardian. In July 1666, Benjamin died in Reading, Massachusetts, about a week before his 20th birthday. And in November 1667, some twenty years after their father's death, the Court finally determined that Walter and John Fairfield Jr. were heirs of their mother, Elizabeth (Fairfield) Palfrey.

¹⁶⁷ [¹⁶⁸ \[http://www.fairfieldfamily.com/database/data_index.html\]\(http://www.fairfieldfamily.com/database/data_index.html\), 9/21/2020; Ganz, *The Fairfields of Wenham*, 23-24.](https://capeannchamber.com/history-of-the-region/9/21/202; Kathryn Fairfield Knight, <i>Ancestors and Descendants</i>; Author's photo of Cape Ann sign, June 2019.</p>
</div>
<div data-bbox=)

Fairfield Ancestry Continued

Ensign Walter Fairfield Sr., of Charlestown, Salem, Wenham, Reading, and Ipswich Massachusetts Bay Colony, b. *possibly* Copford, Colchester Borough, Essex, England 21 Dec 1631/2; d. Wenham, Essex County, Massachusetts 20 July 1723.

Baptism record; transcribed "Walter Fayarfieald born of **John Fayerfieald** and **Elsabeth**, baptized 21 Dec 1631."¹⁶⁹



Walter's Baptism Record (fairfieldfamily.com)

The father of descendant and author, Connie Fairfield Ganz, hired Peter Nutt, a respected genealogical researcher in Essex County, England, to determine if this baptismal certificate was for "our" Walter Fairfield, son of John and Elizabeth, of Wenham. She writes:

It is, to date, the closest to discovering hard evidence of the three names - John, Elsabeth, and Walter - together in England. It is also a good match for the age of Walter, known by various court records in Massachusetts. Copford, England, has no other records for the Fairfields. A few pages later, Ms. Ganz offers a discussion of the Will of John Fairfield's sister, Frances Edwards Hawes, with its mention of another sister Elin Hilles of "owld" England. These names have not yet provided further clues to the English origins of this Fairfield family.¹⁷⁰

Walter immigrated to the colonies, possibly with his parents, between 1631 - 1638. About 22 December 1646, his father, John Fairfield Sr. died. Walter was 14 or 15 years of age, and he had two younger brothers, John Jr., age 5, and Benjamin, age 6 months. As we saw in the Will of John Fairfield, possession of their father's land in Wenham was restricted until Benjamin was 20 years old, in 1666, a sad mistake for his orphaned sons.

¹⁶⁹ England, *Select Births and Christenings, 1538-1975, Copford Parish Record*, Essex County, England, FHL film # 583320, (ancestry.com), 9/21/2020; Godfrey Memorial Library, comp., *American Genealogical-Biographical Index (AGBI)*, 52: 150, John Fairfield, b. 1610 England/Massachusetts; occupation: farmer; Source: Wynn Cowan Fairfield, *Descendants of John Fairfield of Wenham, v.1, First Five Generations*, 1, 3, 52, 58, <online database>, (Provo, Utah, Ancestry.com Operations, Inc., 1999). 9/22/2020; England, *Select Births and Christenings, 1538-1975*, FHL film#583320, (ancestry.com), 9/21/2020.

¹⁷⁰ Personal email 30 July 2018 with Connie Fairfield Ganz; Ganz, *The Fairfield's of Wenham*, 25-27. She can be contacted @ fairfieldfamily.com.

After John's death, widow Elizabeth, m. 2) 1646 Peter Palfrey. Walter, now a teen, refused to be raised by Palfrey and left to be on his own, staying close to his mother and younger brothers in Reading. The first adult record of Walter Fairfield, age 22, was in Reading 1653 when the town officials granted him the right to 'fell trees' on condition he pays tax and allotment to the poor.¹⁷¹

Peter Palfrey came from England in 1623 on the ship *Abigail* with the Dorchester Company which began a plantation (The Fishing Stage) at Cape Anne, Massachusetts in 1624, Roger Conant, Governor. This company failed in 1626 and most of the emigrants returned to England. Peter and two others, including Walter Knight, remained with Conant and in the autumn of 1626, he left Gloucester and moved to Naumkeag (Salem) and laid the foundation for Salem, Massachusetts. Peter was fictionalized in the closing pages of Nathaniel Hawthorne's short story, *The May-Pole of Merry Mount* (1836) as a Lieutenant of Governor Endicott's militia, when penalties to be given are discussed. Peter Palfrey, was a freeman, had land in Wenham, sold apple trees, and was in the beaver pelt trade. His name is in Anderson's *The Great Migration* Vol 3, P-W, 1369-1372. He will marry John Fairfield's widow, Elizabeth.

<https://www.wikitree.com/wiki/Palfrey-23>

When Walter is 18/19 years old, Walter's mother Elizabeth (___) (Fairfield) Palfrey dies. A few years later, about 1652, Peter Palfrey moves to Redding, Massachusetts, 15 miles southwest of Wenham, "with his six children and three Fairfield step-sons in tow."¹⁷² There he marries for the third time, Alice or *Alse* (___) shortly before his death in 1663.

Walter Fairfield, age 23, m. Reading, Massachusetts 28 Dec 1654 **Sarah Skipper** age 14, daughter of **Rev. William Skipper** and **Sarah Fisher**, b. Lynn, Essex County, Massachusetts, 1639; d. Wenham, Essex County Massachusetts 18 Dec 1710.¹⁷³

Children:¹⁷⁴

- i. **SARAH FAIRFIELD**, b. Reading 21 Dec 1655; d. Nov 1742 Enfield, Hartford, Connecticut, age 86; m. (1) Daniel Needham; m. (2) Wenham 16 Dec 1683 Thomas Abbe.
- ii. **SAMUEL FAIRFIELD**, b. Reading 13 Aug 1658; d. Reading 4 Apr 1660.
- iii. **SAMUEL FAIRFIELD**, b. Reading 14 Sept 1660; d. Reading 8 Jan 1661.

¹⁷¹ Knight, *The Fairfields Ancestors and Descendants*, 5.

¹⁷² Lilley Eaton, *Genealogical history of the Town of Reading, Massachusetts*, (Boston, Alfred Mudge & Sons, 1874), 100, (archive.org), 9/21/2020; Ganz, *The Fairfields of Wenham*, 32.

¹⁷³ *Massachusetts, Compiled Marriages 1633-1850*, FHL film #0890236, (ancestry.com), 9/21/2020; Mary Lovering Holman, *The Skepper Family*, 77-85, *The American Genealogist* 20 (Oct 1943), (New Haven, Conn.: D. L. Jacobus, 1937-.), <online database>, (AmericanAncestors.org, New England Historic Genealogical Society, 2009 - .), 9/21/2020; *Massachusetts, Town and Vital Records 1620-1988, Wenham: Vital Record Transcripts, Wenham Deaths*, 196, (ancestry.com), 9/21/2020.

¹⁷⁴ Fairfield, *Descendants of John Fairfield of Wenham*, 9-10; fairfieldfamily.com, 9/21/2020; Knight, *The Fairfields Ancestors and Descendants*, 5-6.

- iv. WILLIAM FAIRFIELD (DEACON), b. Reading 14 Oct 1662; d. Wenham 18 Dec 1742; bur. Wenham Fairfield Burying Ground; m. (1) 14 Oct 1662 Esther *Batchelder?*; m. (2) Wenham 14 Oct 1723 Rebecca Tarbox, daughter of Samuel Tarbox. A monument to him stands in the Fairfield Burying Ground. He served as Representative from the town of Wenham and speaker of the House of Representatives of the *Great and Central Court* (the Legislature) of Massachusetts; and deacon of the church in Wenham. His home still stands as the Solomon Kimball House in Wenham, locally known as the *Thomas Kimball House*, 26 Maple St., Wenham, Massachusetts.¹⁷⁵
- v. BENJAMIN FAIRFIELD, b. Wenham ca. 1664; d. Wenham 14 Sept 1668; bur. Wenham 14 Sept 1668.
- vi. JOSEPH FAIRFIELD, b. Wenham 5 May 1665; d. Wenham 3 Aug 1665.
- vii. ELIZABETH FAIRFIELD, b. Wenham 9 Aug 1666; d. 31 Jan 1736/7; m. Wenham 30 Apr 1690 as his third wife, Freeborn Balch of Beverly, b. 9 Aug 1660; d. Wenham 12 Jun 1729; seven children.
- viii. TABITHA FAIRFIELD, b. Wenham 29 July 1669; d. Marblehead aft. 19 Feb 1717/18; she left a Will, Marblehead 16 Oct 1722; m. Marblehead 27 Oct 1687 John Woods.
- ix. WALTER FAIRFIELD JR., b. Wenham 15 Apr 1672; d. 26 Aug 1756, presumed buried next to his wife, in Rural, aka *Dark Corner Cemetery*, Belchertown, Hampshire Massachusetts; m. (1) 1694 Sarah Adams, daughter of Nathaniel Adams; m. (2) 9 Oct 1708 Ipswich, Judith Wood, daughter of Samuel Wood; one son: Walter Jr. (III).
- x. MARY "MARAH" FAIRFIELD, b. 20 July 1674; d. Marblehead 27 Jan 1740; m. Lynn, Essex, Massachusetts 27 June 1695 Capt. Nicholas Andrews Jr.; five children.
- xi. ABIGAIL FAIRFIELD, b. Wenham 25/28 July 1676; some sources mistakenly indicate she, d. bef. 19 Feb 1717/18 and that she m. Wenham 6 July 1699 Lt. William Dodge, but most state that her sister Prudence was the wife of Lt. Dodge. Abigail, d. Ipswich 1777; she m. John Parkman, b. Boston 19 Jan 1693, son of William and Elizabeth (____) Parkman; d. at Sea 26/27 Mar 1727; bur. Gloucester, Essex, Massachusetts First Parish Burial Ground.
- xii. PRUDENCE FAIRFIELD, b. Wenham 18 Apr 1680; d. Beverly 5 Aug 1737; age 57, bur. Wenham, Dodge cemetery; ten children; m. 1699 Lt. William Dodge. Their daughter Prudence then married Zebulon Dodge, confusing the ancestral trail.
- xiii. NATHANIEL FAIRFIELD, b. Wenham 1682; d. Wenham 8 Apr 1771, age 86; estate probated Wenham 1771; m. (1) Wenham 29 Mar 1732 Hannah Frost; m. (2) Wenham 25 Apr 1734 Mary Stephens.
- xiv. SKIPPER FAIRFIELD, b. 4 June 1686; d. 1706, abt. age 20.

Between the years after daughter Sarah was born, and son William was born, the Fairfields lost two sons named Samuel. Into this season of grief, Walter learns that Peter Palfrey has leased the Fairfield property, a dwelling house, and farm on the West end of Wenham (later to be determined to be partly in Ipswich), to Richard Coy for eight years, until 21 July 1666.

¹⁷⁵ [https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/William_Fairfield_\(Massachusetts\)](https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/William_Fairfield_(Massachusetts)), 9/21/2020.

At that time, the three sons of John Fairfield would be able to possess their land according to their father's Will. Peter Palfrey stated, in this 1658 lease, that Benjamin would be twenty years old on 21 July 1666.¹⁷⁶ By John Fairfield's Will, the three sons were to be dependent on their mother until Benjamin should be 20 years of age, and despite their mother's death, Palfrey claimed control of the land until that time and was upheld by the Court as against Walter who sued for it in 1660.

Walter Fairfield took Peter Palfrey to Court in November 1660, to reclaim his father's considerable estate. The Court forbids the tenant of that land (Richard Coy) from using any timber on the heirs' land, except for housing and fencing. Then began years of disputes and court appearances for Walter and John Jr., carefully outlined in Connie Fairfield Ganz's, *The Fairfields of Wenham*.¹⁷⁷ Court records indicate the Fairfield brothers were fiery, determined and even uncivil in their legal pursuits, yet at the same time active citizens of the community.¹⁷⁷ In the end, the attempt to regain custody of their father's estate was unsuccessful (until after Palfrey's death), and the two eldest brothers cut off their relationship with Palfrey.

From the same Essex Quarterly Court, John Fairfield Jr. chose his elder brother Walter to be his guardian, and Benjamin chose Peter Palfrey as his guardian. Peter raised Benjamin to adulthood and was charged to teach him to read and write.

Peter Palfrey died 15 September 1663. His Will makes no mention of the brothers Fairfield. Benjamin then chooses his cousin Matthew Edwards as a guardian. When Benjamin dies in Reading, about a week before his 20th birthday, there are no more obstacles to recovering the brothers' inheritance.¹⁷⁸ Walter and John Jr. are determined heirs of their mother, Elizabeth (Fairfield) Palfrey. John Jr. (single, age 23), along with Walter (age 33), Walter's wife Sarah (age 24), daughter Sarah (age 9), and son William (age 2) return to Wenham.¹⁷⁹

Walter and John Jr. now sue at the Court's November term 1664 to recover the house and property that Peter Palfrey, as the husband of Fairfield's widow, had leased out to Richard Coy. They deposed that "John Fayerfield, their father, about the year 1646, died seized of a certain estate, the housing and land is left to them by Will, their mother to have only a certain right to the use and occupation of the housing, but not to dispose of it or to have the profits of it for any set term of years. As his wife was 'the *most trusty* friend that he left in the world,' she was given the care of the estate. But if the plaintiffs' father's fatherly care of his fatherless children was such that if his wife were about to dispose of herself in a marriage that then before it should be solemnized, our father did require his wife to give security, etc. If Palfrey had a seeming right to the inheritance while their mother lived, it could not continue after she died, and he had broken the Will to the plaintiff's great damage so that Palfrey had no right to lease the estate to the

¹⁷⁶ Ganz, *The Fairfield's of Wenham*, 33-34.

¹⁷⁷ Ganz, *The Fairfield's of Wenham*, 43.

¹⁷⁸ Dow, ed., *Records and files of the Quarterly Courts of Essex County*, 2: 263-264, (archive.org), 9/21/2020.

¹⁷⁹ Ganz, *The Fairfield's of Wenham*, 43.

defendant. When John Fairfield made his Will, the life of his wife and also of Benjamin was uncertain.¹⁸⁰

However, the Court's verdict was for Mr. Coy in this case.¹⁸¹ It may be that the Fairfield's were essentially squatting on the family lands until Coy's lease ended. The Court did rule that the rent formerly collected by Palfrey would now go to the Fairfield brothers, "half in wheat and half in Indian corn."¹⁸²

In September 1665, Walter Fairefiled was fined for abusing Richard Coy's wife and children with words and blows. As Connie Fairfield Ganz retells the story, it reads like "the Hatfields and McCoys!" It seems Walter's livestock wandered over to Coy's house, and Walter threatened to beat Mrs. Coy when she went to get *his* cow out of *her* corn. Then Walter called Goodwife Coy and her children "*base dogs*," and on it went. Walter's fine: 19s 2d.¹⁸³

People sued each other, all the time, for a variety of **name-calling** that we might find quaint today. The word *rogue* was a terrible thing to call someone. It meant liar, villain, and cheat. In a 1656 Salem court, John Rodes filed slander against Alexander Gold for calling him a *cheating rogue* and a *knave*. Knaves and rogues were not good things to be; nor were *rogues and rascals*, *saucy rascals*, *lying knaves*, and *the verryest Rascal in New England*! Walter's curse of *Base Dogs* may have come from slurs thrown at Scotsmen, of *Scottish dogs*. It was a bad thing to call someone a *dog*. And then there was the case where Richard Stackhouse is accused of calling Mary Woodbury a *filthy bobtail sow*... and on it goes.

The Essex Genealogist, Vol 26, 2006, 6; <online database>, (*AmericanAncestors.org*, New England Historic Genealogical Society, 2018), 9/21/2020.

Walter and John Fairfield Jr. divided their father's land in Northeast Wenham and the 80 agricultural acres in West Wenham, with some direction from the Ipswich Quarterly Court of March 1667. Walter occupied their father's dwelling house, while John Jr. probably built a house on his portion of the property. The land was partly in Wenham and partly in Ipswich or Ipswich Hamlet, now known as Hamilton.¹⁸⁴

According to Wynn Cowan Fairfield's *The First Five Generations of Fairfields*, Walter Fairfield was a leading figure in the life of Wenham, Massachusetts. He was sworn Constable for Wenham, November 1664. He was a member of the jury at County Court of Salem 25 June 1667; served on

¹⁸⁰ Dow, ed., *Records and files of the Quarterly Courts of Essex County*, 3: 208, (Salem, Mass., Essex Institute, 1913), (archive.org), 9/21/2020; *New England, The Great Migration and the Great Migration Begins, 1620-1635*, Vol 3 P-W, 1369-1372: Peter Palfrey with mention of widow of John Fairfield and her sons' lawsuit, (ancestry.com), 9/21/2020.

¹⁸¹ fairfieldfamily.com for this and most references to *Files of the Quarterly Courts of Essex County Massachusetts*, 9/21/2020.

¹⁸² Ganz, *The Fairfield's of Wenham*, 43.

¹⁸³ Ganz, *The Fairfield's of Wenham*, 44, referencing: Ipswich Quarterly Court, Sept 1665; Dianne Rapaport, *Tales from the Courthouse in Old Essex County*, *The Essex Genealogist*, Vol 26, 2006, <online database>, (*AmericanAncestors.org*, New England Historic Genealogical Society, 2018.) 9/21/2020.

¹⁸⁴ Ganz, *The Fairfield's of Wenham*, 46.

committees in Wenham as early as 8 November 1667; kept an 'ordinary' at Wenham, licensed 1680 and 1686 (evidence of public trust in those days); Treasurer and Constable, 1676; Selectman several times 1668-1709; Sergeant, 1683 and Ensign, 1695; Representative to the General Court in 1692 and 1700; moderator of town meeting, Wenham, 1706-1709; signed a petition to the King, 1675¹⁸⁵ and represented Wenham 1689, in moves to secure restoration to the Massachusetts Bay Charter and of the General Court, after the restoration of William and Mary to the throne of England.¹⁸⁶

Among the most important businesses in early America was the **ordinary**, also called a tavern, a public house of entertainment, or an inn. Colonial travel, whether by foot, horse, cart, wagon, or riding chair, proved difficult and tedious. An ordinary along the road or in a town offered a welcome sight. It provided rest and refreshment for the traveler but meant much more. For people who lived nearby, the ordinary became a place to gossip, exchange news, transact business such as selling land, hold auctions for livestock, pick up mail, and talk politics. It might even be a place to scheme about independence from England.

There was a long-running Court case between Ezekiel Woodward and Walter Fairfield about who had the legal right to run the ordinary in Wenham:

Ezekiel Woodward was first licensed in March 1673 to keep the ordinary in Wenham (only one was permitted by law) for one year and to “draw liquor”, beer and ‘sider’, for that period. This permission was granted annually through March 1680.

In 1680, Ezekiel Woodard became surety * for Walter Fairfield and in that year also refrained from asking for a license to run the ordinary so that Fairfield might “run one in order to earn extra money to complete his new house.” Ezekiel petitioned the Court on 22 March 1681/82 for a renewal of his license, which he had held for the previous seven years. He asked that he “may keepe a house of publique entertainment for the selling of beere, sider & prouvisions for horses and men” claiming that he was “disinabled by my labour, by means of much harme I got at the fire last at Boston (of 1679): so that I am attended with the goute and other pains...”

*Surety: a person who takes responsibility for another's performance of an undertaking, for example their appearing in court or the payment of a debt.

His request was granted because of his inability of body to follow his “caling” of carpentry. Not surprisingly, Walter Fairfield was unwilling to give up the license and pleaded that he be permitted to at least sell such liquor as he had on hand. This was granted if he would close out by the next term of court. Fairfield was peeved at the threatened loss of his position as innkeeper and insolently claimed that Ezekiel was envious and “pretending” to be disabled:

¹⁸⁵ Allen, *The History of Wenham*, 40, 46-47, (archive.org), 9/21/2020.

¹⁸⁶ Fairfield, *Descendants of John Fairfield of Wenham*, Walter Fairfield, 8-10; Ganz, *The Fairfield's of Wenham*, 61-62.

“As to his pretenc that he is disabled by the fier at Boston fror his labor of body but it is most evident that it is the fier of envie that moveth now for he did keep the ordinary since the fier at Boson and so he Rejected the ordenary since he Receved the hurt that he pretendeth to.”

In September 1682, a license was granted to Ezekiel, in spite of the quarrel that continued between him and Walter - now complaining against each other for the illegal selling of drink - until November 1682 when the court fined them both. Sarah Fairfield, Walter's wife, age 43, testifies November 1682. There was also the possibility that goodwife Fairfield was selling Indians "strong drink." John Abbe Jr., age 16, also testified that at the last Indian harvest, he was at the Fairfield's with Marah Woodward and saw "goodwife Fairfield deliver two gills of liquor to an Indian who gave him some of it..." and the transcript continues.

In March 1683 Walter Fairefiled was granted liberty to draw (alcohol) by retail until the next Salem Court and in June 1683, his petition for continuing his license was not accepted. You can read the entire case online (see footnotes).¹⁸⁷ Transcription of the court records indicates descendants of Walter Fairfield can join the Flagon and Trencher Society. However, when I looked at their website, I found no mention of an *ordinary* owned/operated by Walter Fairfield, though they state their list is not exhaustive. If interested, you might apply.

Walter Fairfield Sr., is listed in other court records on many occasions. Two young people chose him as their guardian; there was the case of a saddle impressed for use by the local militia (without its owner's permission); there are land agreements and reversal of charges against Walter for a false oath regarding Thomas Fiske. Several other court cases involving Walter featured rather violent outbursts of language and action. Along with cases against Peter Palfrey his step-father, and Richard Coy, the tenant on the former Fairfield lands, in June 1672, Walter was charged with trespassing.

In May 1674, Walter was fined for verbally and physically abusing Charles Gott. Gott was the newly appointed local military officer, clerk of the train band. Earlier, in June 1672, Walter Fairfield had refused to show up for training, then refused to pay the fine; the refusal accompanied "with many filthy speeches", with shoving, choking and threats of violence against Gott. The case goes on for several pages in the *Essex Court Records*, Vol 5, and again John Abbe Jr. testifies.¹⁸⁸

¹⁸⁷ Dow, ed., *Records and Files of the Quarterly Courts of Essex County*, 8: 435-436, (archive.org), 9/21/2020; <https://hwlibrary.org/wp-content/uploads/2015/01/14-Taverns.pdf> - a great reference about early taverns; <https://hwlibrary.org/wp-content/uploads/2015/01/14-Taverns.pdf>; https://etd.ohiolink.edu/apexprod/rws_etd/send_file/send?accession=miami1245273524&disposition=inline all accessed 9/19/2021.

¹⁸⁸ Dow, ed., *Records and files of the Quarterly Courts of Essex County*, 5: 308-310, (archive.org), 9/21/2020.

In 1672, John Fairfield Jr., died, leaving his widow Sarah (Geare) Fairfield to raise three young children. She married, (2) 13 April 1673, Daniel Killam (ten years her junior), who became the custodian of John Fairfield Jr.'s share of his father's estate, much as Peter Palfrey had years ago. This development did not sit well with Walter, and he spent the next few years quarreling with his new brother-in-law over land issues.¹⁸⁹ In 1674, Walter caused Killam serious bodily injury over a 'sled' of wood. Walter pushed Killam down "backward and sett upon him with boath his hands upon his throat and punching him on the breast with his knees etc." When Killam got up, "his mouth was full of blood and he spit blood." Walter's sister-in-law, Sarah, widow of his brother John Jr., and Daniel Killam's wife, testified to the injuries.¹⁹⁰

Walter was a lumberman in Wenham, just as he was in Reading where he had been granted that right to "fell trees for his trade." In Wenham, he built a sawmill in partnership with Thomas White and Thomas Fisk. The town however, had exclusive control of about 4,000 acres of timber. Walter had to first get permission to cut and under no account could any of this wood be sold out of town. It was a situation rife with trouble for Walter. In 1670, he won a Court appeal, in what were evidently trumped-up charges against him, when it was the town officials who were "on the take" for selling excess wood. A few years later, White, Fisk and Fairfield made a mill dam and stopped the course of water, so that the meadow of John Dodge "overflowed." Dodge pressed charges against the three men and eventually withdrew them.¹⁹¹

In June 1673, Walter Fairfield faced charges "for detaining or not requiring his servant John Besson to attend the publick worship of God on the "Lord's Day." Also, in June, he and John Morel of Wenham were charged and convicted of drunkenness.¹⁹² In March 1678, he was acquitted for slander against a Mr. John Giffard.

There was also the tax collector problem with John Dodge, a citizen of Beverly, Massachusetts, and former plaintiff in the sawmill case:

In 1679, Wenham claimed a new boundary line, and the Wenham tax rolls absorbed citizens like John Dodge. Dodge refused to pay the new tax. Wenham, represented by Walter Fairfield. Thomas Fisk and Richard Hutton, attempted to collect taxes from Lieutenant Dodge while he was away from home. They took down several pewter plates from the wall in place of money. Mrs. Dodge resisted, and a brawl ensued, which resulted in the determined woman being thrown down and bruised by the tax collectors. The Court heard the matter, and neighbors testified. Walter and his fellow tax collectors had to return the platters and pay a fine of 50 Pounds!¹⁹³

¹⁸⁹ Ganz, *The Fairfield's of Wenham*, 49.

¹⁹⁰ Ganz, *The Fairfield's of Wenham*, 51; Dow, ed., *Records and files of the Quarterly Courts of Essex County*, 5: 310-311, (archive.org), 9/21/2020.

¹⁹¹ Ganz, *The Fairfield's of Wenham*, 51; Dow, ed., *Records and files of the Quarterly Courts of Essex County*, 5: 46, (archive.org), 9/21/2020.

¹⁹² Dow, ed., *Records and files of the Quarterly Courts of Essex County*, 5: 221, (archive.org), 9/21/2020.

¹⁹³ Joseph Thompson Dodge, *Genealogy of the Dodge Family of Essex County, Mass 1629-1898*, <online database>, (Provo, Utah, Ancestry.com Operations, Inc., 2005), 23-24, 9/21/2020.

Charles Gott, aged about forty-one years, deposed that he asked Goodwife Dodge what she would have done with the 'black staff' if she could have gotten it, and she replied that she 'would have made it fly about some of their ears.' She said she did not know whether Thomas Fisk struck her or not, but she struck him a blow on the hat or side of the head. Sworn in Court.¹⁹⁴

The record of these episodes offers valuable information as to neighbors' ages, connections, etc. Also displayed were Walter's outbursts of language, action, and temper. Mrs. Adeline P. (Dodge) Cole, founder of the Wenham Historical Society, says in her research of the time that the "speech of the day was 'gross'; crowded conditions led to familiarity, and there was more drunkenness, profanity, loose living and petty crime in portion to the population than at present and by no means did everyone "go to Meeting" on Sunday."¹⁹⁵

On 9 November 1682, the Court issued a warrant for the appearance of Walter Fairfield of Wenham upon complaint of Thomas Fisk, for cruelly abusing and striking his servant about six years ago whereby he was unable to perform his work; also, for abusing one of his (Fiske's) swine, and to conceal it, threw it into a swamp; warrant signed by Samuel Appleton and served by Henry Haggett, Constable of Wenham. The Court found for Fiske, and Walter appealed.¹⁹⁶ For other stories of Walter Fairfield's hot-temper and numerous court cases, please refer to the various sources used for this section.

On 30 May 1690, Walter Fairfield Sr. took the Oath of Freeman in the Massachusetts Colony.¹⁹⁷ He was called a *yeoman* - a man holding and cultivating a small landed estate, a freeholder, and a *turner* - one skilled at the use of a lathe.¹⁹⁸

Wynn Cowan Fairfield says Walter Fairfield Jr., was a *cordwainer* - a shoemaker who makes new shoes from new leather; *cobblers* repair shoes.

¹⁹⁴ Dow, ed., *Records and files of the Quarterly Courts of Essex County*, 8:22, (archive.org), 9/21/2020.

¹⁹⁵ Adeline Philbrick (Dodge) Cole (08/07/1865 – 01/05/ 1959), or as those who knew her, in her later years, *Granny Cole*. She founded Wenham Historical Association and Museum Inc. and contributed much to the town and community. She was buried in Dodge Cemetery, Beverly, Mass. *Notes on Wenham History* compiled 1643-1943, to upload cut & paste: <http://hwlibrary.org/wp-content/uploads/2015/01/05-Adeline-P-Cole.pdf> location 315, 9/21/2020.

¹⁹⁶ Dow, ed., *Records and files of the Quarterly Courts of Essex County*, 8: 411, (archive.org), Walter has 35 references in this volume alone! 9/21/2020.

¹⁹⁷ *Massachusetts, Applications of Freeman, 1630-1691*, <on line database>, (Ancestry.com Operations Inc., Provo UT., 2000), Walter Fairfield, application, 30 May 1690, Wenham, Massachusetts, Source: *Inter.*, Vol. II, pp 103, 104, 9/21/2020; *Massachusetts Compiled Census and Census Substitutes Index 1790-1890*, <on-line database>, (Provo, Utah, Ancestry.com Operations Inc., 1999), source: *Massachusetts Early Census Index*, 9/21/2020.

¹⁹⁸ *U.S. Craftsperson Files 1600-1995*; <on line database>, (Provo, Utah, Ancestry.com Operations Inc., 2014), image reads: Turner; working in Wenham, 1665-1680, probably no later. Source: Benno Forman, *The Turners and Chairmakers of Essex County*, 9/21/2020; also see: <https://www.colonialociety.org/node/1121> for 18th century Boston Furniture Craftsmen, 9/23/2020, and http://findingaid.winterthur.org/html/HTML_Finding_Aids/COL0072.htm for Benno Forman's papers, 9/23/2020.

With the ascension of William and Mary to the throne and war with France, conflict increased between the English colonists and the Native peoples. France supplied the Indians with weapons and ammunition, and The French and Indian wars began. Wenham took new steps to protect itself, including the construction of a fortification as determined by the town's 1691 *Committee of Safety*, which included Walter Fairfield Sr.¹⁹⁹ A year later, the townsmen of Wenham elected 65-year-old Walter Fairfield as their Representative to the General Court (Legislature) for which he was paid 2 shillings a day, out of which he was to pay his expenses.²⁰⁰

Many communities in the colonies exercised their right of “self-government” by establishing **Committees of Safety** as the need arose. The practice became even more common during, and after, the French and Indian wars of 1756 - 1758. The wars pitted France, French colonists, and their Native allies against Great Britain, the Anglo-American colonists, and the Iroquois Confederacy, which controlled most of upstate New York and parts of northern Pennsylvania. The British Crown reasoned that since the wars were in defense of the colonies, the colonists should pay the burden of their enormous expense, and so imposed some new taxes. Of course, few colonists agreed. Eventually, the Committees of Safety became responsible for regulating the economy, suppressing loyalists, procuring military supplies, and overseeing civil and criminal justice. Within these small towns, the driving force behind the Revolution was being formed.

<https://www.ncpedia.org/committees-safety>

Late February 1692 marked the beginning of Salem witchcraft events, which lasted through April 1693. Walter Fairfield, as the town representative to the General Court, voted on *A Bill against Conjurations, Witchcraft, and Dealing with Evil and Wicked Spirits*; the Bill passed and became law.²⁰¹ In the Wenham jury, we find John Abby Jr.

Beginning in 1694, Walter began to sell his lands and transfer deeds to his sons. In his later years, he occupied himself with public service, serving again as a representative to the General Court 1700, a Grand juror 1707, moderator of the Wenham Town Meeting 1706-09.²⁰² These activities continue until about 1710 when his wife of more than fifty years, Sarah (Skipper) Fairfield, dies in Wenham.²⁰³

¹⁹⁹ Ganz, *The Fairfield's of Wenham*, 62.

²⁰⁰ Allen, *The History of Wenham*, 136, (archive.org), 9/21/2020.

²⁰¹ Ganz, *The Fairfield's of Wenham*, 65. The bill can be read several places online if you search the title.

²⁰² Allen, *The History of Wenham*, 47-48, 107, 136, (archive.org), 9/21/2020.

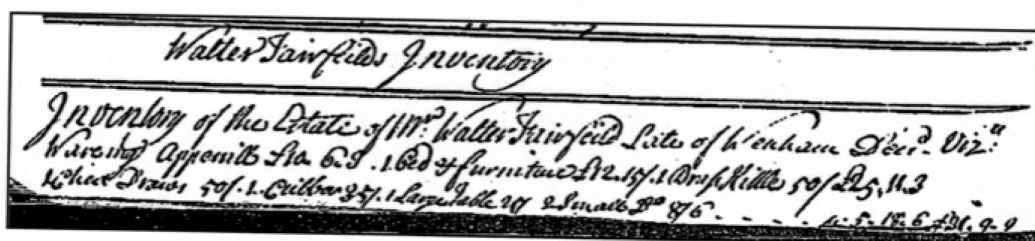
²⁰³ Ganz, *The Fairfield's of Wenham*, 65.

On 14 April 1711, Walter, married (2) Ipswich, Massachusetts Mrs. Sarah Whipple, widow of Joseph Whipple. The Intention to marry was filed 14: 2m (Feb):1711. Sarah (Whipple) Fairfield, died Wenham 18 Nov 1713.²⁰⁴

On 25 April 1718, at age 86, Walter Fairfield joined the Wenham Church, seemingly at the 11th hour! During this time, he deeded much of his property to sons Walter Jr. and Nathaniel to transfer a few years after his death. Sadly, just before his death on 21 January 1722/23, he had a change of heart. He conveyed these lands to his son-in-law, William Dodge. His sons may not have performed the "certain duties to my support" to their father's satisfaction, or perhaps he was suffering from senility. Either way, it seems a somber end to what may have been a challenging relationship between sons and their father.²⁰⁵

Walter Fairfield Sr., died Wenham, Essex County, Massachusetts 20 July 1723, according to the *Wenham Vital Records*, in his 92nd year, "ending a journey that spanned continents and almost a century of history in Massachusetts."²⁰⁶ Various depositions give his age: 1670 – abt. 38; 1682 – abt. 50; 24 Feb 1719 – abt. 87 years of age.²⁰⁷

The Estate and Inventory of Walter Fairfield



The probate of Walter Fairfield's estate, was recorded in the *Essex Probate Records* (see footnotes). His Will was probated beginning, 2 December 1723, his eldest son William, appointed administrator.²⁰⁸

²⁰⁴ Fairfield, *Descendants of John Fairfield of Wenham*, 8, (archive.org) 9/21/2020; *Massachusetts Town and Vital Records, 1620-1988*, <online database>, (Lehi, Utah, Ancestry.com Operations Inc., 2108), 9/21/2020; *Massachusetts: Vital Records, 1620-1850, Ipswich Marriages*, 2: 454, <online database>, (AmericanAncestors.org, New England Historic Genealogical Society, 2001-2016), 9/21/2020; *Massachusetts: Vital Records, 1620-1850, Wenham* 1: 196, <online database>, (AmericanAncestors.org, New England Historic Genealogical Society, 2001-2016), 9/21/2020.

²⁰⁵ Ganz, *The Fairfield's of Wenham*, 69, referencing Alice F. Moody, *Fairfield Notes*, 15; on file @ the Maine Historical Society.

²⁰⁶ Ganz, *The Fairfield's of Wenham*, 69; *Massachusetts, Town and Vital Records, 1620-1988, Wenham: Vital Transcripts, Wenham Deaths*, 196, (ancestry.com), 9/21/2020; *Massachusetts, Town and Vital Records, 1620-1988, Wenham, Births, Marriages and Deaths*, (ancestry.com), 9/21/2020; U.S., *Find a Grave*, Memorial #73203889, has incorrect burial, (ancestry.com), 9/21/2020.

²⁰⁷ Massachusetts Archives, Columbia Point, Mass., *Index to the Deponent Records of the County of Essex, Massachusetts*, 7: 111, 207; 8: 324, <on-line database>, (Provo, Utah, Ancestry.com Operations Inc., 2000), searchable for a complete listing of all of Walter Fairfield's depositions, 9/21/2020.

²⁰⁸ *Essex County, Mass.: Probate File Papers, 1638-188*, <online database>, (AmericanAncestors.org, New England Historic Genealogical Society, 2014), from records supplied by the Massachusetts Supreme Judicial Court Archives,

Connie Fairfield Ganz made a transcription of a difficult-to-read document, her editorial notes are in brackets or marked with a "?". The original documents can be viewed on americanancestors.org (see footnote), but are handwritten on scraps of paper and difficult to read. Fairfield at times is spelled Fairfeild, and I have not corrected the spellings.

Inventory of the estate of Mr. Walter Fairfeild late of Wenham, dec'd, viz.			
Wareing apperrill	£10.6.9		
1 bed & furniture	£12.15		
1 drap_____	50/	first three lines subtotal=£25.11.3	
1 chest drawer ____	50/		
1 cubbar[d] _____	35/		
1 large table	25/		
2 small [tables?]	[£] 8-6	lines 4-7 subtotal=£5.18.6	
	Total of 1 st page inventory £31.9.9		
Continued from the other side...£31.9.9			
[Page turn in document, to stamped page 51]			
3 sheets 4 pillow cases	[£]34/6	1 chest w/1¾ druggs[£]7/6 Shovel & ?	[£]12/9
1 iron pott wammill?	[£]10	Iron dagger?[£]12/9	Sheets 5/8 Table linens 14/6 2 sheets 6/
Lantern?, ?, classic morten?	14/6	silver buttons 16/	
Sundry provisions Etc. as by receipt of Mr. Wm. Dodge			
? & iron pott 60/ 2 cheots? 15/ 3 chaves? 12 / 6 warming pans ??			
One bed rug blank? & ?£6.10/ sheets & table linen 78/6			
2 tables & cubbord 1 chest drawer £5.6 pewter 28 books 13/			
? pot hooks, little skillitt & jack? 31/6 bagg? & carr? 8/			
1 coverlit			
1.5. _____			
			=£26.7.6

Sundry provisions Etc. by Recpt.from Mr. Freeborn Balch*	[*husband of Walter's daughter Elizabeth]	+ 11.94
		=37.16.10
One cover		3.
Wenham, Jan.19, 1723/4, Nath. Waldern?, Nath. Browne, Paul Gerish}, appointees sworn of the Judge of Probate		
William Fairfeild, Adm[inistrato]r [son of Walter Fairfield]		
To be added to the above inventory:		
One cow in William Dodge's hands £3 [husband of Walter's daughter, Prudence]		
In William Fairfeild's hands of administrator 24		
___ stock in Walter Fairfeild's [Jr.] hands £16 [son of Walter Fairfield]		
Ditto in Nath. Fairfeild's hands £15 [Nathaniel, son of Walter Fairfield]		
Clerk? Ipswich Feb. 18, 1720/1 when William Fairfeild admin[istrato]r made estate?/statement?		
To the truth of the above inventory and to add what might be for their ___??		
___ Daniel Appleton Reg. before John Appleton J[udge] Pr[obate]		

Essex Cases 8000-9999; 9197:1-9197:21 - On this site you can see scans of all the bits of paper on which this Will and Inventory were written. Connie Ganz did a remarkable job transcribing, 9/21/2020; Ganz, *The Fairfield's of Wenham*, 67, referencing: *Essex County Probate Records*, Vol 315-316, Book 15, (1722-1736): 26, microfiche image: 50, (Reading Library); Massachusetts Supreme Judicial Court (Essex County), *Essex County, Probate Records*, Essex, Massachusetts, *Massachusetts, Wills and Probate Records, 1635-1991*, <online database>, (Provo, Utah, Ancestry.com Operations, Inc., 2015), case #9197, Probate records, Failes, N-Farley, J, 1828-1991, 9/21/2020.

Administration on estate of Ensign Walter Fairfield of Wenham, granted to William Fairfield, eldest son of Walter, deceased. Walter Jr., brother of William, was surety for his bond. Another brother, Nathaniel signed receipts for a portion. Four daughters are mentioned but not named: probably Sarah (5), Elizabeth (11), Mary (14), and Prudence. (*Essex Probate* Vol 313: 735, 2 Dec 1723)

**Additional account of Inventory of my father, Walter Fairfield
returned by William Fairfield. Essex Probate 315: page 285**

Due from myself	6£ - 00 - 00
Due from Walter Fairfield (Jr.)	6£ - 00 - 00 (Walter Fairfield's son)
Due from Nath. Faireild	9£ - 05 - 00 (Walter Fairfield's son)
Due from ____ Dodge	7£ - 00 - 00
Due from Pew in Meeting House	3£ - 00 - 00

**Essex Probate 269. Account of Administration of Walter Fairfield's estate
by his son William Fairfield, administrator, exhibited 20 Apr 1726**

Credit to estate:	183£ - 19 - 05	
Debit:		(pounds-shillings-pence)
To Freeborn Balch for funeral		£9 - 04 - 04
To Dr. Allis & Herrick		3 - 08 - 10
To Freeborn Balch (husband of Walter's daughter Elizabeth)		24 - 05 - 00
To Wm. Dodge (husband of Walter's daughter Prudence)		14 - 15 - 00
To Walter Fairfield (Walter Fairfield's son)		23 - 00 - 00
To Nathaniel Fairfield (Walter Fairfield's son)		16 - 00 - 00
To Michael Farlow 39/7 }		
To Eliza Legrow 30/ }		
To John Porter 13/9 }		
To Johnathan Pepper 18 to Wm. Fairfield 60/ & 18/3		4 - 16 - 03
To Administrator for time and trouble (Walter's son William Fairfield)		
		10 - 05 - 00
To Gravestones 74/ and appraisal of estate 15/		4 - 09 - 00

The balance of the estate being 69£ - 12/ is proportional among the four daughters of ye deceased, the sons having already had their portions which makes 17£ 8/ to each of them 20 April 1726, signed William Fairfield.

As a postscript to the probate, Alice F. Moody provided important information in her notes about the final division of assets among Walter Fairfield's children:

Various deeds show that even if Walter Fairfield Jr. were, as accused by his father, remiss in providing for his comfortable support, he scrupulously fulfilled his obligation towards his brothers and sisters. (*Essex Deeds* 33-123, ante. and *Essex Deeds* 49-190, all recorded 17 Jan 1726/7.) "Received of Mr. Walter Fairfeild of Wenham, 15£ according to deed of 19 February 1717/18 by our honoured grandfather Mr. Walter Fairfield of Wenham deceased: Signed at Enfield Conn., 6 January 1725/26 by Philip Parsons, Thos. Abbye, John Abbye, Sarah Gear , and Tabitha Warner. These were children of Sarah (Fairfield) who married Thos. Abbye of Marblehead, she having died before the three years allowed for payment of the sum, after Ensign Walter's decease, had passed.

Also, received of my brother Walter Fairfield Jr. 25£, due to the child of my sister Mary Andrews, by me as attorney to Edmund Andrews, Elizabeth Short. Tabitha Andress, and Nicholas Andres in behalf of Paul Andress, the four children of said Mary.

Signed June 30, 1726 by William Fairfield. Also, account with my brother Walter Fairfield, as I am administrator for estate of my father Walter Fairfield, relating to ye stock he had in his hands by a lease under my father's hand dated 19 February, 1717/18. Signed 28 February 1725/6 by William Fairfield.²⁰⁹

Wynn Cowan Fairfield's research revealed that Walter's daughter Sarah (Fairfield) Abbe (our ancestor), died in Enfield, Connecticut, between the making of her father's Will, 19 February 1717/18, and receipt signed by her children for her share of his estate, dated 6 January 1725/7.²¹⁰ Walter Fairfield's daughter Mary (Fairfield) Andrews must have also died before 1726, since her children signed for her portion on her behalf.

Lastly, the probate reveals some facts about Walter's death itself, including that there was a funeral and that "gravestones" were purchased for him. Though Walter Fairfield's burial location is unknown, we can conclude from this information that there was an individual, marked burial site. Moreover, it is certain he was not buried in the Fairfield Burying Ground in west Wenham, because it wasn't built until 1787. Though there is a headstone in the Fairfield Burying Ground marked W.F., the second line on the stone says *Age 11 mo*, therefore an infant. However, given that the oldest marker in the Fairfield Burial Ground is that of William Fairfield's infant son, 1691, Walter Fairfield's burial there (and later disintegration or removal of gravestones) cannot be ruled out. Likewise, since Walter Fairfield's first wife was buried in Wenham Cemetery, it is possible he was buried next to her and this stone, too, disintegrated. The other outside possibility is that he was buried with his second wife at another, unknown location.

Wynn Cowan Fairfield's original typewritten manuscript notes, on repository at the NEHGS in Boston; *Fairfield Genealogy Album*, Vol 1: Tab 1 contains this entry:

Walter Fairfield was "a man of some property and force among his fellows, not too religious and considerably given to maintaining his rights, and much inclined to have his when it was possible."²¹¹ His mark on legal papers was an arrow on bow, the same as was used by his father, John Fairfield.



²⁰⁹ Alice Fairfield Moody, *Fairfield Notes*, 18, (Maine Historical Society).

²¹⁰ Fairfield, *Descendants of John Fairfield of Wenham*, 8.

²¹¹ Ganz, *The Fairfield's of Wenham*, 72: Wynn Cowen Fairfield, *Fairfield Genealogy Album*, Vol 1, Tab 1 (original typewritten manuscript notes on repository at the New England Historic Genealogical Society (NEHGS), Boston).

The Fairfield Burying Ground

Author's photos, June 2019



The Fairfield Burying Ground was designated and reserved by William Fairfield on land granted in 1639, by Salem to his grandfather John Fairfield. It is located on a little knoll, off William Fairfield Dr. and is the resting place of some of Wenham's earliest settlers. For many years it was neglected and overrun with briars and brushwood. Gravestones were dislodged and scattered over the hillside. On the top of the knoll is a large slate slab marking the grave of William Fairfield, sometime Speaker of the House of Representatives, Deacon of the church in Wenham, and Representative of Wenham. He died 18 December 1742, age 81.

In 1982, Boy Scout, David Dodge of Troop 28, undertook the restoration of the Fairfield Burying Ground as his Eagle Scout project. David is the grandson of Wenham selectman A. Winslow Dodge. The Fairfield and Dodge surnames joined in 1699 when Walter Fairfield's 11th Child Prudence, b. Wenham 18 April 1680; m. 6 July 1699 Lt. William Dodge, son of John and Martha Dodge. David Dodge and twelve fellow scouts cleared brush and solicited funds to restore part of the fence around the property, and for the construction of a sign to mark the cemetery.

In a 19 December 1982, *Beverly-Peabody Times* article by Nancy Kelly, it was noted: There are forty-two stones in the cemetery most of which mark the graves of Fairfields, who originally owned the land. Today, the cemetery is under the jurisdiction of the town of Wenham.

Even though the graves are of a later date than my ancestors John and Walter Fairfield, I wanted to see the cemetery and pay respects to the extended Fairfield family. I was able to park on a side street, climb the hill, and spend a few moments in reflection under the shade of hardwood trees.

Adapted from material by Connie Fairfield Ganz and Wynn Cowan Fairfield.

Fairfield Ancestry Concluded

Going back in time, I found by way of ancestry.com and other online genealogy site user trees: John Fairfield *may* have been the son of John (Sedley) Fairfield, b. Copford Green, Essex, England 6 May 1588; m. abt. 1608/9 Copford Green Mary/Marie Shaw/e, b. Halifax, St. John the Baptist, Yorkshire 8 Aug 1596; father Thomas Shawe.²¹² There are no sources listed and no proof of this connection.

Though county York is the location for others in the *Royal* family tree, which we will explore in a few pages, Copford Green, Essex sits 212 to 248 miles southeast near the English coast. It seems unlikely that these two families would have married.

I spent hours searching sources for these Fairfield ancestors and, to a lesser extent, the Shaws and Knights to no avail. I extend my thanks to Connie Fairfield Ganz for her dedicated research, website and published work, email correspondence, and her review of this chapter. A thank you also to Sarah Lauderdale, and the research librarians at the Wenham - Hamilton library.

Skepper/Skipper Family Ancestry & Royal Connections

Some time ago, I attended an Albuquerque Genealogy Society meeting, where our speaker discussed how to trace your ancestors back to British Royalty. I didn't give much thought to his talk until one day when researching this section, I found Sarah (Fairfield) Abbe's mother's family line, extending back to King Edward III (1312-1377), and even further, back to the Plantagenets (Geoffrey 1113 - 1151). My husband came running upstairs when he heard my "whoop"! "Are you ok?" "Oh, yes!" I said, extending my arm, "You may now address me as Princess Margaret (along with *Dame* Margaret from my Colonial Dames membership) and kiss my hand." He laughed and went back downstairs.

The Skepper family is one of several hundred 17th century English immigrant families who have proven Royalty in their ancestry. Ancestors include most of the Royalty of England and elsewhere in the Middle Ages as well as many historical persons of the time. Sir Isaac Newton, Presidents Andrew Jackson, Calvin Coolidge, Senator John Kerry, and Alice Hathaway Lee, first wife of Teddy Roosevelt, are also descendants, as are John Forbes Kerry, 68th United States Secretary of State 2013 - 2017 and U.S. Senator from Massachusetts 1985 - 2013 and Meghan Markle, Duchess of Sussex and wife of Prince Harry. The name is consistently spelled "Skipper" in New England, although in England, the spelling was "Skepper."

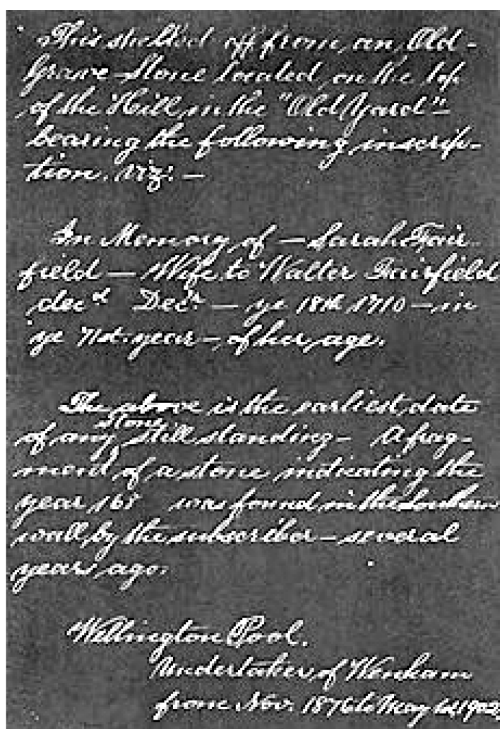
²¹² West Yorkshire Archive Service; Wakefield, Yorkshire, England, *Yorkshire Parish Records*; New Reference Number: WDP53/1/1/4, *West Yorkshire, England, Church of England Baptisms, Marriages and Burials, 1512-1812*, <online database>, (Lehi, Utah, Ancestry.com Operations Inc., 2011), 9/21/2020.

The unusual surname Skepper is of early medieval English origin and is an occupational name for a basket-maker, deriving from the Middle English *skipp(e)*, *skepp(e)*, meaning a basket or hamper, ultimately from the Old Norse *skeppa*, with the addition of the agent suffix *er* (one who does, or works with). Job descriptive surnames originally denoted the actual occupation of the name bearer, and later became hereditary. A coat of arms granted to the Skepper family of Durham in 1612 is "an ermine shield with three gold roses on a red chevron, the Crest being a lion's paw erect gold, grasping three gold roses, stalked and leaved green."

Also, the surname Skipper may be derived from an occupation, the *skipper* or captain of a ship.

As mentioned earlier, on 28 December 1654, Walter Fairfield, age 23, was married to Sarah Skipper age 14/15, the daughter of the Rev. William Skipper and his wife, Sarah Fisher.

Sarah (Skipper/Skepper) Fairfield, born Lynn, Essex County, Massachusetts 1639; died Wenham, Massachusetts 18 December 1710, age 71;²¹³ buried (most likely), "Old Yard" of Wenham Cemetery.



Wellington Pool, undertaker of Wenham from November 1876 to 1 May 1902, recorded the following information about the tombstone of Sarah (Skipper) Fairfield:

"This shelled off from an old gravestone located on the top of the hill [of Wenham Cemetery] in the 'Old Yard' bearing the following inscription, viz: 'In memory of Sarah Fairfield, wife to Walter Fairfield, decd. Dec ye 18th 1710 in ye 71st year of her age.'

The above is the earliest date of any stone still standing. Unfortunately, the fate of this headstone is unknown, but it was not anywhere to be found in 2004.

Wenham Cemetery File, Wenham Museum, Wenham, Massachusetts; Original manuscripts in W. Pool manuscripts, Enon Building; fairfieldfamily.com.

²¹³ Massachusetts, Town and Vital Records, 1620-1988, (ancestry.com), 9/21/2020; U.S. Find a Grave, Memorial #69753760, unsourced bio., (ancestry.com), 9/21/2020.

Sarah Skipper seems almost certainly to have been the daughter of Reverend William Skepper, younger son of Edward Skepper Gentleman, by his father's 2nd marriage to Mary Robinson, baptized Boston, Lincolnshire, England 27 November 1597, and Sarah Fisher.

Reverend William Skepper:

- 8 July 1612 - Admitted as a pensioner at Sidney College, Cambridge.
- 1614 - Matriculated at Sidney College.
- 1617-18 - B.A. from Sidney College.
- 1629 - Signed Transcripts of Thorpe-in-the-Marsh as William Skepper, "curate."
- 1630 - Signed Transcripts of Thorpe-in-the-Marsh as William Skepper "rector".
- 24 April 1630 - Instituted at Westminster, by John, bishop of Lincoln, in the presence of Edward Lake, LL.B., notary."
- 1631-1633 - Signed Transcripts of Thorpe-in-the-Marsh as William Skepper, "minister."
- 1634 - Signed the Transcripts of Thorpe-in-the-Marsh as William Skepper, "rector."

Thorpe by Wainfleet (Thorpe-in-the-Marsh), Lincolnshire was a contiguous parish to Wainfleet All Saints, where his elder sister Mary had married the rector in 1622; William Skepper possibly he went there as curate soon after his ordination.



St. Mary's parish church, Wainfleet St Mary, Lincolnshire, seen from the southwest.

photo by Dave Hitchborne

(Used with permission by Creative Commons, 7/10/2021)

The Reverend William Skepper, married (1) _____, who died before 1638/1639.

Children:

- i. ELIZABETH SKEPPER, b. abt 1626; m. Zachariah Phillips.
- ii. JOHN SKEPPER, b. Thorp-in-the-Marsh ca. 25 Oct 1631; d. young.
- iii. MARY SKEPPER, b. Thorp-in-the-Marsh ca. 19 July 1629; d. young.
- iv. THEOPHILUS SKEPPER (1st of the name), b. Thorp-in-the-Marsh; d. young.
- v. THEOPHILUS SKEPPER (2nd of the name), b. Thorp-in-the-Marsh ca. 9 Jan 1632/33; living 1646; no further record. He may have died or possibly returned to England.
- vi. JANE SKEPPER, b. Thorp-in-the-Marsh ca. 9 Jan 1634/35; m. Abraham Brown (e).
- vii. KATHERINE SKEPPER, b. abt 1638; m. (1) John Maverick; m. (2) John Johnson.²¹⁴

Before December 1638, the Reverend William Skepper joined the Puritan movement. He left Thorpe-in-the-Marsh and went to Boston, Lincolnshire, England. There he married (2) 17 January 1638/9 **Sarah Fisher**. They had one daughter, Sarah Skepper, wife of Walter Fairfield, born after they arrived in the Colonies.

The Reverend Skepper and his family immigrated to New England in 1639, possibly settling in Lynn, Massachusetts. Records show that Sarah and four children came with him: son Theophilus and daughters, Katherine, Jane, and Elizabeth.²¹⁵ Reverend Skepper may have assisted Reverend Thomas Cobbett in his pastoral duties at the church in Lynn. Later, Cobbett would be overseer of Harvard College and called a "man mighty in prayer, by Cotton Mather."²¹⁶

The Reverend William Skepper, d. Boston, Suffolk County, Massachusetts 1645 or before 1646 (age 47/48) intestate.²¹⁷ No administration was taken of his estate until one of his sons-in-law petitioned that the estate be divided on 16 October 1650.

In answer to the petition of Zachary Phillips for his portion in the right of his wife, being the daughter of William Skipper deceased, in her Father's estate who dyed intestate, this Court doth order that power of administration is granted to Mr. Cotton and Mr. Cobbet for the disposing of the Estate above mentioned.²¹⁸

²¹⁴ Douglas Richardson, *Plantagenet Ancestry: A Study in Colonial and Medieval Families*, 2nd Ed., (Salt Lake City, UT., Douglas Richardson, © 2011), Vol. III, 217, Line 18; Vol. III, 21, found at Albuquerque Library.

²¹⁵ U.S. and Canada, *Passenger and Immigration Lists, Index, 1500's – 1900's*, New England, 1639, 657, citing: Richardson, *Plantagenet Ancestry*, (ancestry.com), 9/21/2020.

²¹⁶ Samuel Eliot Morison, *The Founding of Harvard College*, (Cambridge, Massachusetts, Harvard University Press, 1935), 372.

²¹⁷ U.S. *Find a Grave 1600's – Current*, Memorial #168943716, (ancestry.com), 9/21/2020.

²¹⁸ Charles Henry Pope, *The Pioneers Of Massachusetts, A Descriptive List, Drawn From Records Of The Colonies, Towns And Churches And Other Contemporaneous Documents*, (Boston, CH Pope 1900), 416, (archive.org), 9/21/2020; Nathaniel B. Shurtleff, M.D. ed., *Records of the Governor and Company of the Massachusetts Bay in New England*, Vol. 3, (Boston, from the press of William White, 1854), 218, (babel.hathitrust.org), 9/21/2020.

From the records found, it is evident that William Skepper settled on his four elder children 50£ each. Two possibilities exist for his wife Sarah: 1) she predeceased him and her daughter Sarah, was cared for by friends or family in Lynn or Reading, established in 1644 from Lynn, or 2) Sarah (Fisher) Skepper married after her husband's death and Sarah Skepper, her daughter, remained with her mother and step-father until she married at the age of fifteen years.²¹⁹

William's parents were **Edward Skepper, Esq.** and **Mary Robinson Skepper** with a well-documented line of Royal ancestry including King Edward III.²²⁰ William Skepper is also a descendant of Magna Carta Surety Barons William d'Aubigne and John de Lacy.²²¹

Fisher Family Ancestry

Fisher is an English occupational name for one who earned a living by fishing. The surname was also given to someone who lived close to a fish weir on a river. It is therefore a topographical as well as an occupational type surname.

Sarah Fisher, second wife of William Skepper and mother of Sarah Skipper, b./bapt. Boston, Lincolnshire, England 11 May 1617²²²; m. Boston, Lincolnshire, 17 Jan 1638/39 William Skepper;²²³ d. Essex County, Massachusetts abt. 1650, or before the 1650 administration of her husband's estate Sarah Fisher may have been the daughter of Richard Fisher, 1573-1623 Boston, Lincolnshire, England; m. Boston, Lincolnshire 10 May 1597 Agnes Ann White, b. Boston, Lincolnshire, 1576.²²⁴

²¹⁹ *The American Genealogist*, (New Haven, Conn., D. L. Jacobus, 1937-), Whole Number 78, Vol. XX, No. 2, Oct 1943, Mary Lovering Holman, of Lexington, Mass., *The Skepper Family*, 77-85, <online database> (AmericanAncestors.org, New England Historic Genealogical Society, 2009 -), 9/21/2020.

²²⁰ Gary Boyd Roberts, *The Royal Descents of 600 Immigrants to the American Colonies or The United States: Who Were Themselves Notable or Left Descendants Notable in American History*, (Baltimore, Maryland, Genealogical Publishing Co., 2006 reprint), <online database>, (Provo, Utah, Ancestry.com Operations, 2006), 152, 9/21/2020.

²²¹ Douglas Richardson and Kimball G. Everingham, *Magna Carta Ancestry: a Study in Colonial and Medieval families* (Boston, Mass., Genealogical Publishing Co, 2005), 750-75; Richardson and Everingham, *Magna Carta Ancestry: a Study in Colonial and Medieval families*, (Salt Lake City, Utah, Douglas Richardson, 2011), Vol. IV, 32-33; The primary lines of Rev. William Skepper in the ancient nobility of Britain and Ireland: 16; Norman Lords at the Battle of Hastings in 1066: 32 (10 lines shared with Mayflower passenger Richard More); Magna Carta Surety Barons of 1215: 18; Magna Carta Preamble Counselors to King John: 5 lines.

²²² The only baptism of a Sarah Fisher I was able to locate was in *England, Select Births and Christenings, 1538-1975*, FHL film #370924 & #370929, <online database>, (Provo, Utah, Ancestry.com Operations, Inc., 2014), according to these records, the baptism took place at St Botolph Aldgate, City of London, England, some 130 miles south of Boston, Lincolnshire, so may not be "our" Sarah Fisher, 9/21/2020. However, further inquiry shows a St. Boltoph Church in Boston, Lincolnshire. https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Boston,_Lincolnshire, 9/21/2020.

²²³ Richardson, *Plantagenet Ancestry: A Study in Colonial and Medieval Families*, 2nd Ed., 252, <online database> (Provo, Utah, Ancestry.com Operations, Inc., 2006), 9/21/2020.

²²⁴ Richardson, *Royal Ancestry: A Study in Colonial and Medieval Families*, (Salt Lake City, Utah, Douglas Richardson, 2013), Vol IV: 637-40, found at Albuquerque Library; Richardson & Everingham, *Magna Carta Ancestry 2011*, Vol IV: 32-33, found at Albuquerque Library.

Our Royal Ancestors

Sarah (Fairfield) Abbe was a direct descendant of King Edward III and Geoffrey Plantagenet.



Enamel effigy of
Geoffrey Plantagenet
from his tomb at Le Mans

Using the two resources below, I have listed the connections to Royalty through her Skipper/Skepper line. Each is listed below under separate headings, though the same persons populate multiple paths.²²⁵

The House of Plantagenet was a royal house that originated from the lands of Anjou in France. Modern historians use the name Plantagenet to identify four distinct royal houses:

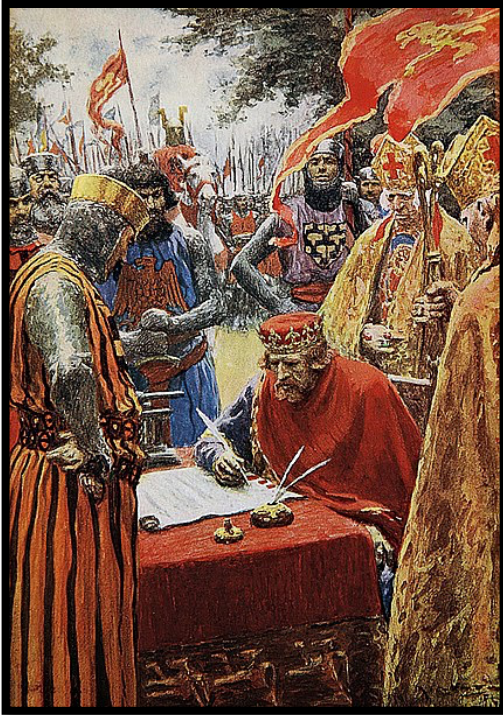
- The Angevins (a family founded in 1126 by Geoffrey V of Anjou.
- The Counts of Anjou, the main body of the Plantagenets following the loss of Anjou.
- The Plantagenets' two cadet branches: the Houses of Lancaster and York.

The family held the English throne from 1154, with the accession of Henry II, until 1485, when Richard III, the final ruler of the Plantagenets, died in battle.

Under the Plantagenets, England was transformed, although this was only partly intentional. The Plantagenet kings were often forced to negotiate compromises such as the *Magna Carta*. These constrained royal power in return for financial and military support. The King was no longer just the most powerful man in the nation, holding the prerogative of judgment, feudal tribute, and warfare. He now had defined duties to the realm, underpinned by a sophisticated justice system. A distinct national identity was shaped by conflict with the French, Scots, Welsh, and Irish, and the establishment of English as the primary language.

In the 15th century, the Plantagenets were defeated in the Hundred Years' War and beset with social, political, and economic problems. Popular revolts were commonplace, triggered by the denial of numerous freedoms. English nobles raised private armies, engaged in personal feuds, and openly defied Henry VI.

²²⁵ *The American Genealogist*, Whole No. 275, Vol. 69, No. 3, July 1994, James L Hansen, *The Ancestry of Joan Legard, Grandmother of the Rev. William Skepper/Skipper of Boston, Massachusetts*, 129-139, (New Haven, Conn., D. L. Jacobus, 1937-.), <online database>, (AmericanAncestors.org, New England Historic Genealogical Society, 2009 - .), 9/21/2020.



The Magna Carta meaning *The Great Charter*, is one of the most important documents in history as it established the principle that everyone is subject to the law, even the king, and guarantees the rights of individuals, the right to justice, and the right to a fair trial.

<https://www.independent.co.uk/news/uk/magna-carta->

King John signing the Magna Carta reluctantly
by Arthur C. Michael, artist

The rivalry between the House of Plantagenet's two cadet branches of York and Lancaster brought about the *Wars of the Roses*, a decades-long fight for the English succession, culminating in the 1485 Battle of Bosworth Field, when the reign of the Plantagenets and the English Middle Ages both met their end with the death of King Richard III. Henry VII, of Lancastrian descent, became King of England. Five

months later, he married Elizabeth of York, thus ending the Wars of the Roses, and giving rise to the Tudor dynasty. The Tudors worked to centralize English royal power, which allowed them to avoid some of the problems that had plagued the last Plantagenet rulers. The resulting stability allowed for the English Renaissance and the advent of early modern Britain.



Edward III (13 Nov 1312 - 21 June 1377) was of the House of Plantagenet, King of England and Lord of Ireland from January 1327 until his death; he is noted for his military success and for restoring royal authority after the disastrous and unorthodox reign of his father, Edward II.

Edward III attributed to the 16th century British School

Edward III transformed the Kingdom of England into one of the most formidable military powers in Europe. His long reign of fifty years was the second-longest in medieval England and saw vital developments in legislation and government, in particular the evolution of the English Parliament, as well as the ravages of the Black Death. The Black Death brought a halt to Edward's campaigns by killing perhaps a third of his subjects.

After a successful campaign in Scotland, Edward III declared himself rightful heir to the French throne in 1337. This started what became known as the *Hundred Years' War*. Following some initial setbacks, the war went exceptionally well for England; victories at Crécy and Poitiers led to the highly favorable *Treaty of Brétigny*, in which England made territorial gains, and Edward renounced his claim to the French throne. International failure and domestic strife, primarily as a result of his inactivity and poor health, marked Edward's later years.

Edward III was a temperamental man, but capable of unusual clemency. Both in his religious views and his interests, Edward was conventional. His favorite pursuit was the art of war, and, in this, he conformed to the medieval notion of good kingship. As a warrior, he was so successful that one modern military historian had described him as the greatest general in English history. Edward III seems to have been unusually devoted to his wife, Queen Philippa. Much has been made of his sexual promiscuity. Still, there is no evidence of any infidelity on the King's part before Alice Perrers became his lover, and by that time, the Queen was already terminally ill. This devotion extended to the rest of the family as well. In contrast to so many of his predecessors, Edward never experienced opposition from any of his five adult sons. He was admired in his own time and for generations to come.

Edward III of England, King of England 1327-1373,
 m. **Philippe de Hainaut** (Queen Philippa)
Lionel of Clarence (of Antwerp), Duke of Clarence, m. **Elizabeth de Burgh**
Philippe of Clarence, m. **Edmund de Mortimer**, 3rd Earl of March
Elizabeth Mortimer, m. **Henry Percy**, Knight,
Elizabeth Percy, m. **John de Clifford**, Lord Clifford
Mary de Clifford, m. **Phillip Wentworth**, Knight

8) **Elizabeth Wentworth**, daughter of Phillip, b. ca. 1440-1450, 2nd wife of **Martin de la See** (at See) Knight, of Barmeston, County York, England, b. ca. 1420, son of Brian at See, of Hollym and Barmeston, County York, England, by Maud, daughter, and heiress of John Monceaux of Barmeston, County York, England, b. abt. 1420. He headed the local resistance to King Edward IV's landing at Ravenspur, March 1471, and was knighted in Scotland by the Earl of Northumberland on 24 July 1482.

7) **Lady Joan (Jane) de La See**, daughter and co-heiress (by Martin de la See's 1st wife Margaret (Margery), b. 1460-65; m. early 1480's **Peter Hildyard**, b. abt. 1460, Knight of Winestead in Holderness, East Riding, County York, England²²⁶, son and heir of Robert Hildyard, Knight of Winestead by Elizabeth, daughter of John Hastings, of Gressenhall, 9th Lord Hastings, a descendant of King Edward I. Sir Peter Hildyard, d. 20 Mar 1501/2. His Will dated 14 Mar 1501/2 names his wife Joan, son Richard and seven unmarried daughters. The Will of Dame Jane Hilliard, *voisse* (a widow who has taken a vow of chastity), "som tyme wif of Peter Hilliard, Esquyer," dated 20 July 1527; proved 7 Apr 1528, bequeathed 20s to her "doughtour Legerde."

²²⁶ <https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Winestead>, 9/21/2020.

6) **Lady Isabel Hildyard**, b. abt. 1498; m. abt. 1520 **Ralph Legard**, b. abt. 1490, son and heir of Robert Legard of Anlaby, East Riding, County York, England by his wife Joan, daughter of Robert Haldenby of Haldenby. They had five sons and four daughters. Ralph Legard, d. 1540 intestate; Isabel, d. aft. 10 July 1540.²²⁷

5) **Joan Legard**,²²⁸ b. abt. 1530; m. (1) by marriage settlement 4 Feb 1550/1 **Richard Skepper**, b. East Kirby, County Lincoln, England abt. 1495, son of Richard Skepper²²⁹ of East Kirby by his wife Audrey, daughter of Ralph Grynne of East Kirby. Richard Skepper had been previously married to Katherine (___) Gilden. Richard and Joan had three sons, one daughter. His Will was dated 26 May 1556. Joan Legard, m. (2) Robert Townley, d. 9 Mar 1585/6; Joan d. aft. that date.

4) **Edward Skepper**, Gentleman, b. abt. 1552; m. (1) Agnes ___; two daughters. She is bur. East Kirby 14 Sept 1586. Edward, m. (2) Boston, County Lincoln, England 11 Apr 1592 **Mary Robinson**; three sons, four daughters. Edward Skepper, Gentleman, bur. East Kirby 10 Nov 1692. His widow died after 1630. Children: Richard; John Gent.; William (Rev.); Lucy; Elizabeth; Mary, m. (1) Rev. Samuel Sailbanks, m. (2) Nicholas Herring; Jane.

3) **Reverend William Skepper (or Skipper)**, bapt. Boston, Lincolnshire, England 27 Nov 1597. BA degree 1617-18 Sidney College, Cambridge University; served as Rector of Thorpe-in-the-Marsh, Lincolnshire 1630-8; m. (1)___; three sons: John; Theophilus (1st of the name); and Theophilus (2nd of the name); resided Lynn, Massachusetts 1646; four daughters: Elizabeth, m. Zachariah Phillips; Mary (d. young); Jane, m. Abraham Brown; Katherine, m. (1) John Maverick; m. (2) John Johnson; Katherine killed by Indians at Haverhill, Massachusetts 29 Aug 1708. Rev. William Skipper, m. (2) Boston, Lincolnshire 7 or 17 Jan 1638/9 **Sarah Fisher**, d. Essex County, Massachusetts. One daughter, Sarah Skipper, wife of Walter Fairfield. Rev. William Skepper and his family immigrated to New England in 1639, where he died intestate sometime before 1646/50.

2) **Sarah Skepper/Skipper**, b. abt 1640; d. 18 Dec 1711; m. **Ensign Walter Fairfield** of Wenham, Massachusetts; daughter:

1) **Sarah (Needham) Fairfield**, wife of **Thomas Abbe**, my 7th great grandparents.

²²⁷ Robert Winder Johnson Sr., Lawrence Johnson Morris, *The Johnson Family and Allied Families of Lincolnshire, England, being the ancestry and posterity of Lawrence Johnson of Philadelphia, Pennsylvania*, (Philadelphia, Dolphin Press, 1934), 105ff: a detailed accounting of the Legard family, (babel.hathitrust.org), 9/21/2020.

²²⁸ *The American Genealogist*, Whole No. 275, Vol. 69, No. 3, July 1994, Hansen, *The Ancestry of Joan Legard...*, 129 - 139, (AmericanAncestors.org.), 9/21/2020.

²²⁹ *The American Genealogist*, Whole No. 77, Vol. 20, No. 1, July 1943, Holman, *The Skepper Family*, 77 - 85, <online database>, (AmericanAncestors.org, New England Historic Genealogical Society, 2009 - .), 9/21/2020.

Geoffrey Plantagenet, Count of Anjou, by an **unknown mistress**,
Hamelin, 5th Earl of Surrey, m. **Isabel de Warenne**
Ela de Warenne, m. **William Fitz William** of Sprotborough, Yorkshire
Thomas Fitz William Knight of Sprotborough, Yorkshire, m. **Agnes Bertram**
Denise Fitz Thomas, m. **___Knight of Egmanton**, Nottinghamshire
John D'Eiville Knight of Egmanton, Nottinghamshire, m. **Maud (___)**
John D'Eiville Knight of Adlingfleet, Yorkshire, m. **Margaret (___)**
Joan D'Eiville, m. **Adam de Everingham**, Knight, 2nd lord Everingham
Margaret de Everingham, m. **Hugh de Hastings** Knight
Hugh de Hastings, Knight of Elsing, Norfolk, m. **Anne Le Despenser**
(Descendant King Edward I)
Edward Hastings Knight of Elsing, Norfolk, m. **Muriel Dinham** (descendant King John)
John Hastings Esquire of Elsing, Norfolk, m. **Anne Morely** (descendant King Edward I)

8) **Elizabeth Hastings**, m. **Robert Hildyard**, Knight, b. 1435, of Winestead, Yorkshire, son and heir of Robert Hildyard, Knight of Winestead, Yorkshire by his 2nd wife Katherine, daughter and co-heiress of Thomas de la Hay of Spaldington, Yorkshire; eleven sons, three daughters. On 22 Aug 1482, the Earl of Northumberland knighted him on the field of Salford. Sir Robert Hildyard, d. testate 21 May 1501; children: Peter Hildyard; Katherine Hildyard, m. (1) John Haldenbly, (2) William Girlington: child: Isabel Girlington, m. Christopher Kelke.

7) **Peter Hildyard** Esquire, of Winestead, Yorkshire, son and heir, b. abt. 1460; m. **Joan (or Jane) de La See**, daughter and co-heiress of Martin De La See, Knight of Barmston, Yorkshire, by his 2nd wife Elizabeth (descendant of King Edward III), daughter of Phillip Wentworth, Knight of Nettlestead, Suffolk, b. about 1460/65. Peter Hildyard, Esquire, d. testate 20 Mar 1501/2. His Will dated 14 Mar 1501/2 names wife Joan, son Richard and seven unmarried (unnamed) daughters.

6) **Lady Isabel Hildyard**, b. abt. 1498; m. abt. 1520 **Ralph Legard**, b. abt. 1490, son and heir of Robert Legard²³⁰, of Anlaby, East Riding, County York, England, by his wife Joan, daughter of Robert Haldenby of Haldenby. Isabel was a legatee in the 1527 Will of her mother; five sons, four daughters. Ralph Legard, d. 30 June 1540 intestate; Isabel, d. aft. 10 Jul 1540.

5) **Joan Legard**, m. (1) by marriage settlement 4 Feb 1550/1 (as his 2nd wife) **Richard Skepper**, Gentleman, of East Kirkby, Lincolnshire, son of Richard Skepper, of East Kirkby, Lincolnshire, by Audrey, daughter of Ralph Grynne. Richard Skepper, b. abt. 1495; three sons: Edward, Gentleman; Thomas; George; one daughter, Bridget (wife of Sirach Disney). Richard Skepper m. (1) bef. 1544 (___) Gilden, daughter of Thomas Gyldon, Gentleman, of Skirbeck, Lincolnshire.

²³⁰ William Flower, *The Visitation of Yorkshire in the Years 1563 and 1564*, (London, Mitchell & Hughes, 1881), Legard: 185-186, Haldenby: 158, Hildyard: 170, (archive.org), 9/21/2020; Richardson & Everingham, *Magna Carta Ancestry*, Vol. IV p. 32, Albuquerque library.

In the period 1553-5, Christopher Yerburch, Gentleman, and Margaret, his wife, sued Richard Skepper in Chancery regarding the refusal of arbitration before John Coppuldyk, Knight, the Queen's Steward of Honour of Bolingbroke, Lincolnshire concerning lands therein. Richard Skepper, a Gentleman, left a Will dated 26 May 1556. His widow, Joan, m. (2) Robert Townley, Alderman, and Harbour-master of Boston, Lincolnshire; two children. Robert Townley, bur. East Kirkby, Lincolnshire 9 Mar 1585/86. He left a Will dated 7 Mar 1585/6, naming his wife, Joan.

4) **Edward Skepper** Gentleman, b. East Kirby, Lincolnshire, abt. 1552; son and heir by his father's 2nd marriage; m. (1) Agnes ____; two daughters: Bridget, wife of Thomas Palfreyman; Faith. Agnes, bur. East Kirby, Lincolnshire 14 Sept 1586; m. (2) Boston, Lincolnshire 11 Apr 1592 **Mary Robinson**. Edward Skepper Gentleman, bur. East Kirby, Lincolnshire 10 Nov 1692;²³¹ widow Mary, was living in 1630; three sons: Richard; John, Gentleman; Reverend William; four daughters: Lucy; Elizabeth; Mary, m. (2) Rev Samuel Sailbanks; m. (2) Nicholas Herring; Jane.

3) **Reverend William Skepper (or Skipper)**, the younger son by his father's 2nd marriage, bapt. Boston, Lincolnshire, England 27 Nov 1597. BA degree 1617-18 at Sidney College Cambridge University; served as Rector of Thorpe-in-the-Marsh, Lincolnshire 1630 - 38; m. (1) ____; three sons: John; Theophilus (1st of the name); Theophilus (2nd of the name), resided Lynn, Massachusetts 1646; four daughters: Elizabeth, m. Zachariah Phillips; Mary, d. young; Jane, m. Abraham Brown; Katherine, m. (1) John Maverick; m. (2) John Johnson. Rev. William Skepper, m. (2) Boston, Lincolnshire 17 Jan 1638/9 **Sarah Fisher**; one daughter: Sarah Skepper. Rev. William Skepper and his family immigrated to New England in 1639, where he d. intestate sometime before 1646.

2) **Sarah Skepper/Skipper**, b. abt 1640; d. 18 Dec 1711; m. **Walter Fairfield** of Wenham, Massachusetts; one daughter:

1) **Sarah (Needham) Fairfield**, m. **Thomas Abbe**,²³² my 7th Great Grandparents.

²³¹ *The American Genealogist*, Whole No. 77, Vol. 20, No. 1, July 1943, Holman, *The Skepper Family*, 77 - 85, (americanancestors.org), 9/21/2020; In the parish register his burial was recorded as that of "Mr. Edward Skepper, (Gent.);" The parish church for the town of East Kirby, Lincolnshire, is dedicated to St. Nicholas and is believed to be the Skepper family church and place of burial for many family members. 9/21/2020.

²³² *Colonial Families of the USA, 1607-1775*, <online database>, (Lehi, Utah, Ancestry.com Operations, Inc., 2016), 3. 9/21/2020.

If you want to know more, there are two extensive studies of the Skepper and Legard families which can be found in *The American Genealogist*, through americanancestors.org, and in various genealogical libraries:

- *The Skepper Family*, by Mary Lovering Holman of Lexington, MA. *The American Genealogist*, Vol 20, 1943: 77-85. She writes: "Edward Skepper's family is mentioned in the 25 Nov 1604 will of Frances Cheney of Boston, Lincolnshire, England, widow, who gave to 'Mrs. Skepper wife of Mr. Edward Skepper, my best petticoat' and to William Skepper, 'my godson, one double duckett.'"
- *The Ancestry of Joan Legard, grandmother of the Rev William Skepper/Skipper of Boston, MA*, by James L Hansen, *The American Genealogist*, Vol 69, 1994: 129-137. Hansen writes: "Robert Legard was descended from a Legard who accompanied William the Conqueror to England."

The surname *Legard* seems to be of French origin, and appears in England in 1224; there may be sixteen variations. It is most likely a name of occupational derivation, the first to bear it being a guard or warden of a castle; or a status name for someone who owned a garden.

The Legards became Lords of Anlaby, a manor and small town, which formerly belonged to the ancient Anglo-Saxon family of the Anlabys, a name derived from Olaf or Anlaf, King of Northumbria, about 950-1000. In the year 1100, the heiress of Anlaby Manor carried it by marriage, to Robert Legard, whose family resided there from the time of the Conquest, till nearly the close of the century. Sarah (Fairfield) Abbe's great-great-grandparents were Joan Legard and Richard Skepper II.

Anlaby lies on the river Humber about 5 miles west of the town of Kingston-upon-Hull, in the East Riding of Yorkshire. (*Riding* refers to a district visited by an officer, the bounds, or extent being determined by the distance one could ride on horseback in a given time.) The church to which the Legards were attached was St. Andrews at *Kirk Ella*, a village about a mile to the north of Anlaby. Kirk Ella's name is thought to derive from the Old English, meaning "a woodland clearing with a Church." St. Andrews is an ancient church dating from the 13th century, which is still active in its community. Its parish register dates from 1558.²³³

²³³ <https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Anlaby> ; Photo by Stephen Horncastle, CC BY-SA 2.0, <https://commons.wikimedia.org/w/index.php?curid=2917215>



The Church of St. Andrews at Kirk Ella now a Grade I listed building, has a chancel which dates to the early 13th century, and a tower dating to the mid-15th century. Much of the structure is of square rubble; the tower is of limestone ashlar (the finest stone masonry); the upper part of the chancel is of rendered brick.

In October, there is an annual Anlaby-Hull Fair Scarecrow Hunt and the Former Lord Mayor of Kingston upon Hull was in attendance, as was a scarecrow of Queen Elizabeth, complete with Corgi. Such a treasure of trivia from google/Facebook searches!



Chapter Four

Generation Three of the Abbe/Abbey Family in America

*Thomas Abbe and Mary Pease
1686 – 1759*

We inherit from our ancestors, gifts so often taken for granted. Each of us contains within this inheritance of soul. We are links between the ages, containing past and present expectations, sacred memories, and future promise. – Edward Sellner²³⁴

Visiting Boston

I landed at Boston's Logan airport on a rainy day in June 2019 and took a cab into the city. The driver, originally from Somalia, and I had a pleasant conversation, and we arrived promptly at my destination, the New England Historical and Genealogical Society (NEHGS) on Newbury Street. I hold membership there, which offers excellent research sources and access to the American Ancestors website. The driver carried my bags into their front desk, where they graciously checked them. I then made my way up to the 7th floor, where a cart of books I requested was waiting.

I'm thankful to the librarians for this preparatory work, which saved me hours. I began my review of these resources, confirming data I had found online and gleaning new bits of information on various ancestors. At closing, I reserved the cart, now only half full for the next day, and made my way to the *Found* hotel—a quaint dorm-like hotel of "mini" rooms, adequate for my one-night stay.

²³⁴ *Goodreads.com/quotes*, Edward C. Sellner is professor emeritus of pastoral theology and spirituality at Saint Catherine University in St. Paul, Minnesota, 9/23/2020.

That evening I walked to the Boston Library in Copely Square and the Abbey Room Murals! More on that treasure in Volume III. I then took the metro to the Boston Museum of Fine Arts and their *Americas* collection on the lower level. It took a bit of searching and the guidance of helpful security to find the Hall housing the Hadley Chest made for Mary Pease. Maybe it was being tired from such a busy day, or the joy of seeing the piece in person, but tears came to my eyes. I took several photos before a young man wandered into the hall. "Oh, would you take my picture with this chest? It once belonged to my 6th great grandmother." A bit surprised, he agreed. I regaled another couple, who wandered in, with my discovery story and then spent time looking at the outstanding collections' other early American works.



Made in western Connecticut by joiners from generations of woodworking families who immigrated to that rural area, this and related chests share abstracted vine motifs spread across the fronts. A rare feature of this chest, likely made as a dowry chest, and given for a marriage is that the rail above the top drawer bears the carved name of its recipient, *Mary Pease*, of Enfield, who married Thomas Abbe in 1714. Her father, to whom this chest is attributed, was a carpenter and joiner; her grandfather, John Pease Sr., emigrated from England and was also a woodworker.

Provenance: By tradition, and as the carved name implies, made for Mary Pease (1688-1724) of Enfield, Connecticut, at or near the time of her marriage to Thomas Abbe in 1714. Later history unknown; lent by Charles Hitchcock Tyler, 3 Oct 1928; included in his 1932 bequest to the Museum (Accession date September 1, 1932)

Overall: 105.4 x 114 x 52.1 cm (41 1/2 x 44 7/8 x 20 1/2 in.)

Oak, southern yellow pine

17th C New England, Manning House Gallery LG36 ²³⁵

²³⁵ Author's photos; Boston Museum of Fine Arts, June 2019; Museum's website, (9/23/2020):

<https://collections.mfa.org/objects/44406/chest-with-drawers?ctx=ff458098-7ece-41a7-944f-4ff720fe509b&idx=3>

Having been an interior design major, it was my delight to find this and other early American pieces on the lower level of the Museum. To think that my 6th Great Grandmother stored her linens in this piece and that her father, my 7th great grandfather, made it - is still a wonder. It is one of the joys and gifts of researching the Abbe/Abbey extended family.

Research of this Abbe generation took me into several allied family lines, all of them early American colonists: Adams, Goodale, Pease and Vassall. They arrived on several ships, and settled in various locations throughout the Massachusetts Bay Colony, part of which would later become Connecticut. They were carpenters, farmers and merchants, adventurers, and religious radicals for the time and place. A few were wealthy, and many others were known leaders in their communities.

In 1674, the General Court of Massachusetts granted land stretching as far south as Asnuntuck Brook to the town of Springfield; land that was both beautiful & fertile, with adjacent heavily timbered regions. That year, Springfield's John Pynchon built the first European structure in what would soon be Enfield, a sawmill on the Brook. The sawmill was destroyed one year later during King Philip's War. Sadly, the original hardwoods and white pine of the area were destroyed by the "improvidence" of the first settlers; burned to obtain forage for cattle.



*Pictured above is the American Robin – the state bird of Connecticut
and a branch of the White Oak, Connecticut's state tree.*

Generation Three of the Abbe/Abbey Family in America
Thomas Abbe (Lt.) and Mary Pease
1686 - 1759

3. Thomas Abbe Jr., son of Thomas² (John¹) and Sarah (Fairfield) Abbe, b. Enfield, Hartford County, Connecticut 30 Oct 1686; d. same 11 May 1759. Seven sources record his death.²³⁶ He m. (1) Enfield, 3 Mar 1714 **Mary Pease**, b. Enfield 24 May 1688; d. 18 March 1745,²³⁷ daughter of Captain John Pease Jr., the founder of Enfield, Connecticut, and Margaret (Adams) Pease.²³⁸

Children all born in Enfield, Hartford, Connecticut:

- i. MARY ABBE, b. 25 Jan 1715/16; d. Enfield, Hartford County, Connecticut 3 Aug 1788 (age 73); bur. Enfield Street Cemetery.²³⁹ She m. Enfield 13 Jan 1736/7 Capt. Dennis Bement, son of Edmond and Priscilla (Warner) Bement; d. 16 Nov 1789. He was the 7th Captain of the Enfield militia; he kept a public house there and held various town offices. They had five children born in Enfield.²⁴⁰
- ii. SARAH ABBE, b. 26 Mar 1718; d. Enfield, Hartford County, Connecticut 12 May 1785 (age 67); bur. Enfield Street Cemetery;²⁴¹ m. (1) Nathaniel Chapin, son of Thomas and Sarah (Wright) Chapin and great-grandson of Deacon Samuel Chapin. A soldier, Nathaniel, went to Cape Breton with the expedition against Louisburg; he, d. Cape Breton, 16 June 1745; three children, all born in Enfield.²⁴² Two sons: Nathaniel and Eliphalet, are named in their grandfather's Will, the youngest son, Jabez has no recorded birth or death dates, *Find a Grave* indicates 1743. Sarah m. (2) Capt. Hezekiah Parsons, b. Enfield Feb 1728; d. Enfield 12 Sept 1813 (age 85); bur. Enfield Street Cemetery and has a Revolutionary War flag at his grave.²⁴³ Capt. Parsons served in the early wars, commanded a company from Enfield in

²³⁶ Abbe & Nichols, *Abbe-Abbey Genealogy* 14, 25-26 for this and following information; (AGBI), Vol 1, 40 referencing the General Column of the "Boston Transcript" 1906-1941, 17 June 1922, #956, (ancestry.com), 9/23/2020; *Memorial of Captain Thomas Abbey: His Ancestors and Descendants of the Abbey Family, Pathfinders, Soldiers and Pioneer Settlers of Connecticut, its Western Reserve in Ohio and the Great West*, (East Orange, New Jersey, The Abbey Printshop, 1917), 36.

²³⁷ Abbe & Nichols, *Abbe-Abbey Genealogy*, 25 referencing the Enfield Record.

²³⁸ *Ibid.*, 25.

²³⁹ Connecticut State Library (CSL), Hartford, Connecticut, *Connecticut, Hale Collection of Cemetery Inscriptions and Newspaper Notices 1629 – 1934*, Vol 15, 110-1 Enfield Street Cemetery, Section A, 41, <online database>, (Provo, Utah, Ancestry.com Operations Inc., 2012), 9/23/2020; U.S. *Find a Grave*, Memorial #26169353, citing Abbe & Nichols, *Abbe-Abbey Genealogy*, 49; Allen, *History of Enfield*, Vol. III, 2322, (ancestry.com), 9/23/2020.

²⁴⁰ Abbe & Nichols, *Abbe-Abbey Genealogy*, 49.

²⁴¹ U.S. *Find a Grave*, Memorial #25612569, lists Sarah and her children, (ancestry.com), 9/23/2020.

²⁴² Abbe & Nichols, *Abbe-Abbey Genealogy*, 49-50.

²⁴³ *Connecticut, Hale Collection of Cemetery Inscriptions and Newspaper Notices, 1629-1934*, 83, for both Sarah and Hezekiah, (ancestry.com), 9/23/2020; U.S., *Revolutionary War Rolls, 1775- 1783*, <online database>, (Provo, Utah, Ancestry.com Operations, Inc., 2007), Capt. 'Sages' Regiment," 10/7/2020.

- the Connecticut Continental Line in the New York Campaign, 1776.²⁴⁴ Ancestry.com lists six children by his first wife, Dorcas, but none with Sarah.
- iii. TABITHA ABBE, b. 9 July 1720; d. 12 June 1787; m. Ephraim Pease, b. 4 Feb 1718; d. Enfield 22 June 1801. He was the son of Samuel and Elizabeth (Warner) Pease. Ephraim was a merchant and became wealthy as a contractor during the time of the French war. He acted as a town magistrate and was known as Capt. Pease. They had eight children.²⁴⁵
 - iv. HANNAH ABBE, b. 27 Mar 1723; d. East Windsor, Connecticut 12 Sept 1818; m. (1) Enfield 30 Jan 1745/6 Thomas Geer, son of Shubael and Sarah (Abbe) Geer, b. 1 July 1722; d. 1751. He was her first cousin. They settled in East Windsor. Their children, as mentioned in their grandfather's Will 1758: Thomas Geer Jr., b. 5 Oct 1746, m. Mary Pease; Elihu Geer, b. 3 May 1749, m. Eleanor McClester. Hannah, m. (2) 15 Nov 1752 Sgt. Noah Phelps, b. Enfield 16 Mar 1726, son of Israel and Rachel (Jones or Clark) Phelps. He was a farmer in Enfield and removed to East Windsor in 1775. He served 40 days as a Sergeant in the Lexington Alarm, later enlisted in Col. Walcott's Regiment, Capt. Wells' company. He, d. 1795, in service. Six children.²⁴⁶
 - v. ABIGAIL ABBE, b. 28 July 1725; d. probably young as her father's Will of 1758 does not mention her.
 - vi. OBADIAH ABBE, b. 18 Feb 1728; d. Enfield, Apr 15, 1745.
 - 4. vii. **THOMAS ABBE/ABBEY (CAPT.)**, b. 11 Apr 1731; d. 1 June 1811; m. **Penelope Terry**.

The Lexington Alarm

The first battle of the Revolutionary War was fought in Massachusetts on 19 April 1775. British troops had moved from Boston toward Lexington and Concord to seize the colonists' military supplies and arrest revolutionaries. In Concord, advancing British troops met resistance from the Minutemen, and American volunteers harassed the retreating British troops along the Concord-Lexington Road. Paul Revere, on his famous ride, had first alerted the Americans to the *British* movement. In the next generation of this family, Captain Thomas Abbey will drum the Colonial Troops from Enfield, Connecticut.

https://www.colonialwarsct.org/1775_lex_alarm.htm

Thomas Abbe Jr. served as Sergeant (1711), Captain, and then Lieutenant (1714) of Enfield military companies. On 6 January 1725/26, with his brother John, and sisters Sarah (Abbe) Gear and Tabitha (Abbe) Warner, he signed receipt for legacy from his grandfather, Walter Fairfield. Thomas Jr. was 41 in 1728 when his father Thomas Abbe Sr. died. In 1732, Thomas Abbe Jr., was the executor of the Will of his uncle Obadiah Abbe together with his sister Elizabeth (Abbe) Warner (Warriner).

²⁴⁴ *Lineage Book of the Charter Members of the DAR*, Vol. 083, 57, *North America, Family Histories, 1500-2000*, <online database>, (Provo, Utah, Ancestry.com Operations, Inc., 2016), 9/23/2020; https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Connecticut_Line, 9/23/2020.

²⁴⁵ Abbe & Nichols, *Abbe-Abbey Genealogy*, 50.

²⁴⁶ *Ibid.*, 50-51.



Deacon **Samuel Chapin**, b./bapt. Paignton, Devon, England 1598, to John Chapin and Phillipe Easton; d. Springfield, Massachusetts 1, Nov 1675; m. Cicely Penny, seven children. Samuel Chapin immigrated to America 1630 - 1635, with, or shortly after, William Pynchon. Chapin was also a prominent early settler of Roxbury and later Springfield, Massachusetts. In 1881, Chester W. Chapin, a railroad tycoon, congressman, and Chapin descendant, commissioned master sculptor Augustus St. Gaudens to produce a work memorializing this ancestor. The sculpture, known today as *The Puritan*, is situated in Springfield's Merrick Park. I looked for this statue on yet another rainy day during my 2019 East Coast trip. Though Deacon Chapin is not a direct ancestor, the statue is significant as "it emphasizes the piety, and perhaps moral rigidity, of the country's religious founders, evident in the sculpted Chapin's proud pose, certain stride, flowing cape and hefty Bible, as well as his assertive use of a walking cane."

https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Samuel_Chapin; Author's photo, Springfield, Massachusetts, June 2019.

The surname Chapin is of French and Spanish origins: from a reduced form of French *eschapin* or Spanish *chapín*, a term for a light (woman's) shoe; perhaps a nickname for someone who habitually wore this type of footwear or possibly a metonymic occupational name for a shoemaker. The Anglo-Saxon name Chapin comes from when its first bearer worked as a *chaplain*, the minister of a sanctuary or church.

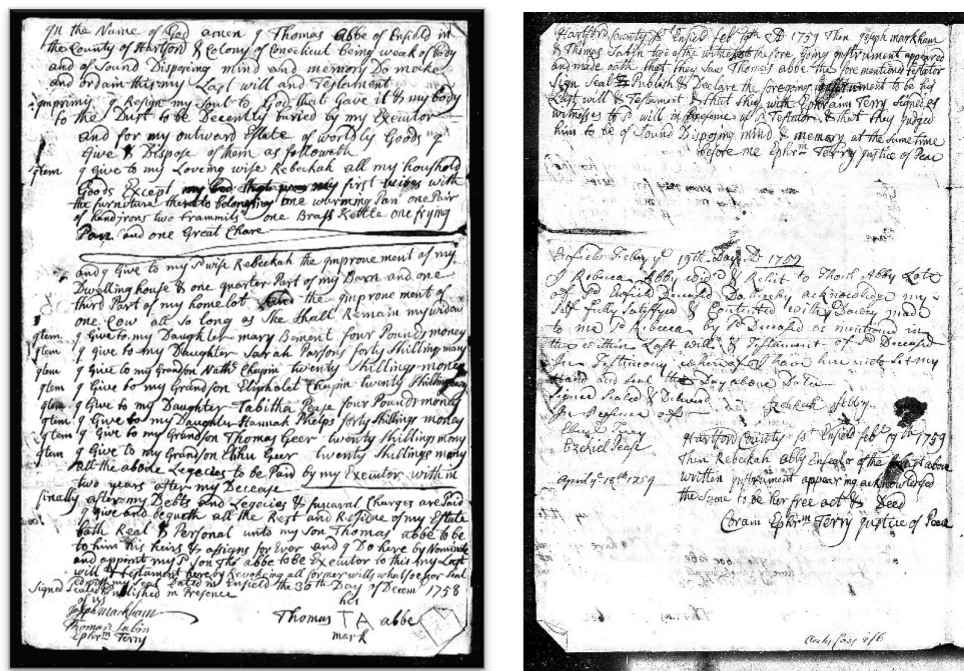
Sinners in the Hands of an Angry God, the most intense "fire and brimstone" sermons of all times, was the title of the sermon preached by the Reverend Johnathan Edwards in 1741 at the church in Enfield. Wanting his congregation to be a part of the First Great Awakening religious movement in New England, the pastor had invited Edwards to preach. He aimed to teach his listeners about 'the horrors of hell, the dangers of sin, and the terrors of being lost.' His words for those who do not follow Christ's urgent call to receive forgiveness: "For these, the wrath of God is burning; the pit is prepared, the fire is ready, the furnace is hot, the flames do rage and glow."²⁴⁷ Edwards was interrupted many times during the sermon by people moaning and crying out, "What shall I do to be saved?" Perhaps Thomas and Mary (Pease) Abbe and their children were in the congregation that day. Young Thomas Abbey III would have been only 10 years old!

²⁴⁷ As a coincidence – I am editing this section of this work on 8 July 2020, 279 years later!

Edwards preached that salvation's comforting hope overcomes this pessimistic theology "through a triumphant, loving savior, Jesus Christ." Although the sermon received criticism, Edwards' words have endured. Religious and academic studies, my own included, still study this leading example of a First Great Awakening sermon.²⁴⁸

Thomas Abbe Jr. was 56 years old when his mother died in 1742. On 18 March 1745,²⁴⁹ his wife of thirty-one years, Mary (Pease) Abbe, died. Just over a year later, on 12 June 1746, Thomas Abbe Jr. now about age 60, m. (2) Mrs. Rebecca Pease/Pierce, born 1694; died 1753. Other than the *Abbe-Abbey Genealogy*, I have been unable to locate documentation of this second marriage.

Thomas Abbe Jr.'s Will, made 30 December 1758, probated 18 April 1759, mentions wife Rebecca; children: Mary Bement, Sarah Parsons, Tabitha Pease, Hannah Phelps, Thomas Abbe and grandchildren, Nathaniel, and Eliphalet Chapin, Thomas and Elihu Geer. His son, Thomas is named executor.²⁵⁰ Thomas Abbe Jr., died in 1759, the exact date is not recorded. His Will is on deposit at the Connecticut State Library.



Images of Thomas Abbe's 1758/9 Will (americanancestors.org)

²⁴⁸ https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Sinners_in_the_Hands_of_an_Angry_God, 9/23/2020.

²⁴⁹ Abbe & Nichols, *Abbe-Abbey Genealogy*, 25, referencing the Enfield Record.

²⁵⁰ *Connecticut, Wills and Probate Records, 1609-1999*, CSL, Hartford, *Probate, Hartford, Connecticut*, inferred death year 1759, probate date 1759, case #7, <online database>, (Provo, Utah, Ancestry.com Operations Inc., 2015), 9/23/2020; U.S. Find a Grave, Memorial # 159049194, (ancestry.com), 9/23/2020.

*Mary Pease wife of Thomas Abbe Jr.
Fourth Generation of her Ancestral Lines in America
1688 – 1745*



The Pease surname is an English occupational surname. It derives from the Old English pre 7th century word 'pease,' meaning the vegetable known as 'peas,' or a grower or seller of peas. It could also be a nickname for a small and insignificant person, which would not fit our Pease ancestors!

The earliest records of the Pease family are from Great Baddow, county Essex, England, a village 30 miles NE of London and just 2 miles from the city of Chelmsford. Ipswich was the closest seaport.

The Pease Coat of Arms: the crest has an eagle's head erased, the beak holding a stalk of pea haulm.

Mary Pease, b. Enfield 24 May 1688; d. 18 Mar 1745,²⁵¹ daughter of **Captain John Pease Jr.**, the founder of Enfield, Connecticut, and **Margaret (Adams) Pease**. Mary Pease, one of eight children, was the great-granddaughter of John Adams Sr., who came to America in the *Fortune* in 1621.²⁵² William Vassall, Assistant (but not of like mind) with Governor Winthrop of the Colony of Massachusetts Bay in 1630, is also her ancestor. William Vassal was the son of John Vassall, shipbuilder and Gentleman, of England.

The Pease family has a rich history going back several generations in Great Baddow, England, an urban village and civil parish in the Chelmsford Borough of Essex, England, about 44 miles Northeast of London. In New England, the line begins with Mary Pease's great grandfather Robert Pease and her grandfather John Pease Sr. immigrants to the colonies in 1639 and follows with her father, John Pease Jr., born in Massachusetts. Extensive research and writings on the Pease family have been made. I admit to some confusion as the given names of John and Robert follow through many generations, as father and son, and as brothers.²⁵³

²⁵¹ Abbe & Nichols, *Abbe-Abbey Genealogy*, 25, referencing the Enfield Record; U.S. Find a Grave, Memorial #159052334, (ancestry.com), 9/23/2020.

²⁵² Frederick Adams Virkus, *Immigrant Ancestors, A List of 2,500 Immigrants to America before 1750*, (Baltimore, Genealogical Publishing Co, 1986), 5.

²⁵³ *The New England Historical and Genealogical Register*, Vol 3: 27-32, Frederick S Pease, *The Pease Family*, (Boston, MA: New England Historic Genealogical Society, 1847-), <online database>, (AmericanAncestors.org, New England Historic Genealogical Society, 2001-2018), 10/7/2020; Rev. David Pease & Austin Pease, *A Genealogical and Historical Record of the Descendants of John Pease Sen., Last of Enfield, Conn.*, 6 ff. (Springfield, Mass., S. Bowles 1869), (archive.org), 9/23/2020.

History and Inventions in this Generation *1686 – 1759*

Many events of historical significance occur during this generation; some of which were covered in the previous section, beginning with the reign of James II of England 1685–89, and ending in the time of the Seven Year's War in Europe and the French and Indian Wars in the Colonies.

In 1690, the Massachusetts Bay Colony became the first colony to issue paper money. Spain began to colonize Texas. And in 1692, the first of the Salem witch trials take place. From 1694 to 1702, William III of England reigns as sole monarch and establishes a Board of Trade to regulate trade with the Colonies. In the fall of 1697, the treaty of Ryswick, Holland ends King William's War in the Colonies and the Nine Years War in Europe. Tensions between England and the colonists remain as the English Parliament bans the export of colonial woolens/yarns.

In 1700, when Thomas Abbe Jr. was about 14 years of age, the American colonies' population was about 260,000 people, Boston with 7,000 and New York, with 5,000. Though there were several hundred Jewish people and some Roman Catholics, the religious "freedom" sought by the Puritans did not extend to those "other." The Massachusetts representative assembly ordered all Roman Catholic priests to vacate the colony within three months, an action also taken by the New York legislature. Maryland had been founded in 1634 as a haven for Catholics, though not all settlers were Catholic; by 1702, the Anglican church (non-Puritan) was established as the official church there, supported by taxation of all free men, male servants, and slaves.

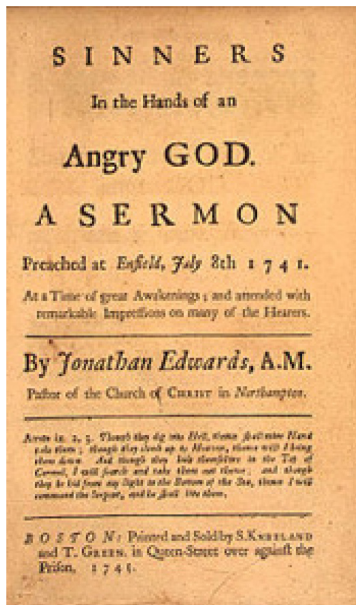
From 1702 to 1714, Queen Anne, last of the Stuarts, reigned in Great Britain. Ill health and numerous miscarriages lend a sadness to her life. Portraying Anne, Olivia Coleman won the 2019 Best Actress Academy Award. The movie is a very non-traditional period drama (think bunnies). From 1714 to 1727, King George I ruled Great Britain. Under his rule, the powers of the monarchy diminish, and England begins a transition to the modern system of cabinet government led by a prime minister. George II succeeds him from 1727 to 1760.

During all these wars and politics, Benjamin Franklin, in 1717, invented swim fins. His first pair were made of wood and shaped like lily pads or an artist's paint palette; a person's hands were the original destination. The International Swimming Hall of Fame has posthumously honored Franklin.²⁵⁴

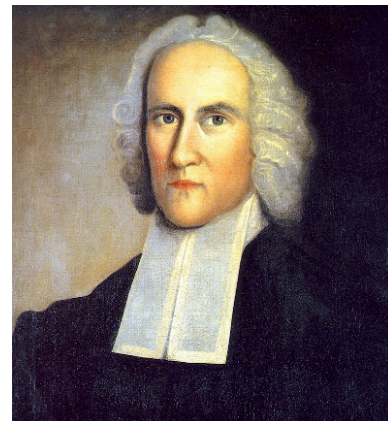


²⁵⁴ bodysurfer.org, 9/23/2020.

The pirate Blackbeard was killed in 1718 by naval forces of the Colony of Virginia. I thought he was a myth, but apparently, he was a terrifying pirate who put smoking fuses in his long black hair and beard and wore pistols strapped to his body. Some sailors who saw him in the battle thought he was the devil.²⁵⁵



In the 1730's, a series of evangelical Christian (Protestant) revivals swept across England and the thirteen colonies, becoming known in the Colonies as *The First Great Awakening*. Its goal was to renew individual piety and religious devotion. Emotionalism, emphasis on personal worship, and skepticism towards religious leadership pumped new life into sects that mirrored these values like the Methodists and Baptists. European circuit preachers, George Whitefield, John Wesley, and others traveled across the Atlantic to join American born Johnathan Edwards delivering dramatic sermons to crowds more wide-reaching than the populations of colonial cities themselves.



Johnathan Edwards 1703 - 1758

Though the revival lasted only a generation, it signaled the end of traditional worship and the rise of evangelical faith. During the religious revival, colonists revived their mission to proselytize to both Native Americans and enslaved African Americans. Staunch puritans, called *Old Lights* who championed ceremony and traditional church hierarchy rejected the revival's evangelicalism and its emphasis on a personal relationship with God. At the same time, those who accepted it were dubbed *New Lights*.²⁵⁶

1740 sees the passing of the Plantation Act. The Act encouraged immigration to the colonies and regulated colonial naturalization procedures. The Battle of Cartagena de Indias took place in the Caribbean, and the Colonists are called "Americans" for the first time.

²⁵⁵ <https://pngio.com/PNG/a139056-blackbeard-the-pirate-png.html>, 9/23/2020

²⁵⁶ <http://www.enfieldhistoricalsociety.org/EHShistory.html>, 9/23/2020.

According to The National Mail Order Association, Benjamin Franklin invented and conceptualized mail order cataloging in 1744. In the years from 1749 to 1752, Franklin was involved in experiments with lightning and electricity. His kite experiment proved that lightning as a form of electricity and confirmed the practical use of lightning rods.



In 1745, King's College was founded by George II's Royal Charter. Renamed Columbia College in 1784, following the American Revolutionary War, Columbia University is today a private Ivy League research university in Upper Manhattan, New York City. Columbia is the fifth chartered institution of higher learning in the United States, making it one of nine colonial colleges founded before the Declaration of Independence. The University has graduated many notable alumni, including five Founding Fathers of the United States, an author of the United States Constitution, and a member of the *Committee of Five*, which drafted the Declaration of Independence. As of 2018, Columbia's Alumni include three U.S. presidents, twenty-nine foreign heads of state, ten Justices of the United States Supreme Court, ninety-five Nobel laureates, 101 National Academy members, and thirty-eight living billionaires. Also, Columbia students and alumni have won thirty-nine Academy Awards, 125 Pulitzer Prizes, and eleven Olympic medals.²⁵⁷ A cousin by marriage, Enno Franzius was a lecturer there from 1945 to 1958. Volume Three of this series will cover his branch of this family tree.

Princeton University was founded in 1746, with Jonathan Dickinson, another Great Awakening preacher, as its first president. Henry Abbey Jr. would be a freshman in 1905.

In 1750, Thomas Walker, a Virginia physician, and explorer passed through the Cumberland Gap. The area is a narrow pass, long used by native Americans, through the ridge of the Cumberland Mountains, within the Appalachian Mountains, near the junction of the U.S. states of Kentucky, Virginia, and Tennessee. The Cumberland Gap became famous in American Colonial history for its role as a key passageway through the lower central Appalachians, most significantly by a team of frontiersmen led by Daniel Boone. It was an essential part of the Wilderness Road and is now part of the Cumberland Gap National Historical Park.



Daniel Boone Escorting Settlers Through the Cumberland Gap, by George Caleb Bingham (1850-51)

By 1750, various artisans, shopkeepers, and merchants provided services to the growing farming population. Blacksmiths, wheelwrights, and furniture makers set up shops in rural villages.

²⁵⁷ https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Columbia_University, 9/23/2020.

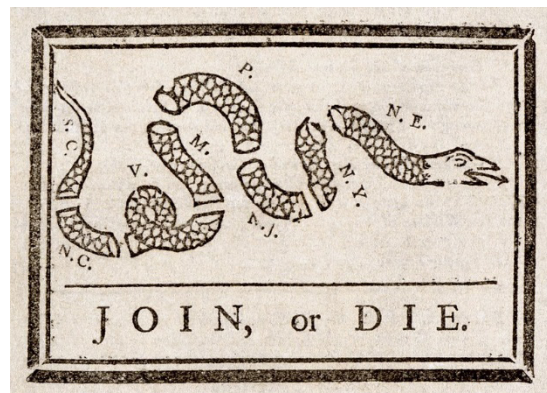
There they built and repaired goods needed by farm families. The Chapin and Pease families had among them, skilled craftsmen and furniture makers. Eliphalet Chapin (1741–1807), a grandson of this generation, was a cabinetmaker and furniture maker in East Windsor, Connecticut, in the late 18th century. His style of furniture design is one of the most elegant of its time. A chest on chest, attributed to him, is found in the Boston Museum of Fine Arts *America's* collection, housed not far from the chest made for his Grandmother Mary Pease by her father. His chest descended in the family of Mary Chapin (b. 1763) of Enfield, Connecticut, first cousin of Eliphalet Chapin. Sadly, I did not take a photo and there isn't one on the museum website.

In 1754, the French and Indian War began and lasted years into the next generation, ending in 1763. Also known as the *Seven Year's War*, the French and Indian War was the culmination of many years of conflict between France and England over land in the New World.



In anticipation of this conflict and hopeful for better relations with the Indian tribes who had generally sided with the French, representatives from seven of the thirteen colonies met daily in Albany, New York, from 9 June to 11 July 1754. These meetings were known as the *Albany Congress*.

Benjamin Franklin was a leader of the Congress, and his image of a chopped-up snake, urging union of the colonies with the caption, *Join or Die*, has been called the first American political cartoon.²⁵⁸



²⁵⁸ https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Albany_Congress; *Join, or Die*. by Benjamin Franklin (1754), a political cartoon commentary on the disunity of the Thirteen Colonies during the French and Indian War, later used to encourage the colonies to unite for independence during the American Revolution.

As the delegates were meeting, the first engagement of the war occurred. Militia under 22-year-old Lieutenant Colonel George Washington, defeated a French reconnaissance party in southwestern Pennsylvania, near Fort Duquesne.

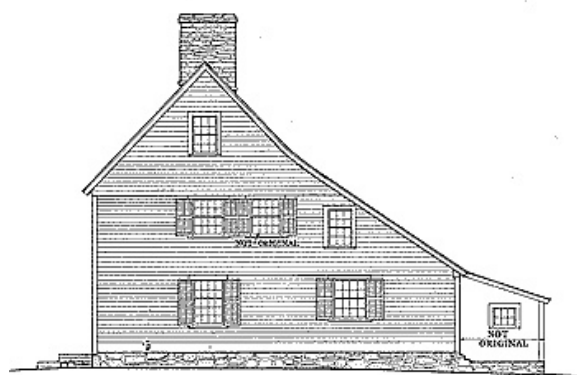
Clashes became increasingly violent. Settlers were vulnerable; their houses were burned and their property stolen. Food staples and British goods were taken for the war effort, leaving colonists hungry and wanting. Ties to their communities started to become more meaningful than ties to Britain, and the presence of British soldiers on American soil caused settlers to question their connection to the Crown. The uncertainty of a war led by British troops, increasingly seen as foreign, made the colonists desire greater control of their affairs.²⁵⁹

The French and Indian War ended with the signing of the *Treaty of Paris* in February 1763. The British received Canada from France and Florida from Spain. France was permitted to keep its West Indian sugar islands and gave Louisiana to Spain. The arrangement strengthened the American colonies significantly by removing their European rival to the north and south and opening the Mississippi Valley to westward expansion. However, when the Native Americans lost an ally in France, tribes were pressured to leave their lands and move further west. The fate of America's indigenous residents was changed forever.

The British borrowed heavily to fight this war and soon imposed the Stamp Act, the Tea Act, and other taxes on the colonies. Colonists were also forced to house British soldiers still stationed in the New World. The stage was set for revolution.

The Lives and Role of Women 1686 – 1759²⁶⁰

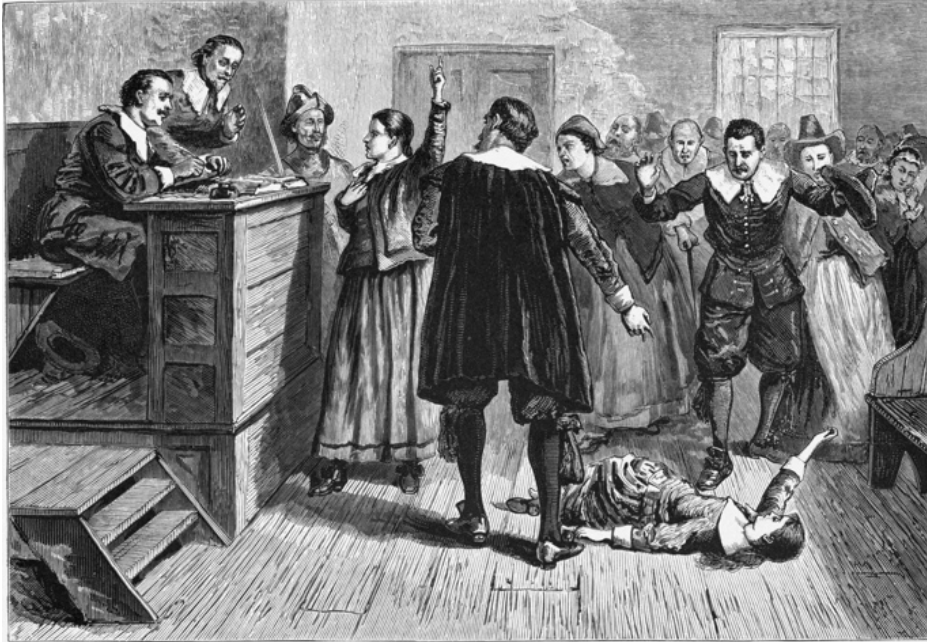
Women's daily lives continue much the same as the 17th becomes the 18th century. They were still responsible for the household and the children, and married women still have far fewer rights than widows and single women. The houses they occupied did change somewhat to a style known as the *saltbox house*.²⁶¹



²⁵⁹ Ancestry.com story.

²⁶⁰ Carl Holliday, *Women's Life in Colonial Days*, (Project Gutenberg eBook, 28 Mar 2005), <https://www.gutenberg.org/files/15488/15488-h/15488-h.htm>, 9/23/2020.

²⁶¹ 1695 Comfort Starr House, commons.wikimedia.org, 7/13/2021.



The **Salem Witch Trials**²⁶², which took place between February 1692 and May 1693, set their world on edge. The trials were a series of hearings and prosecutions of people charged with witchcraft in colonial Massachusetts. The accused numbered more than two hundred people, and thirty were found guilty. Nineteen of these were executed by hanging, one man, Giles Corey, whom we read about later in this chapter, was pressed to death under large stones, and at least five people died in jail. No one was burned at the stake.

The witch trials were a case of mass hysteria, brought about by religious extremism, false accusations, superstitions, a lack of scientific knowledge, and lapses in due process of law. According to historian George Lincoln Burr of Cornell University, "the Salem witchcraft hysteria was the rock on which the *theocracy*, a Bible-Based, God-governed society, of Puritan colonialism shattered."

Puritans held the belief that men and women were equal in the eyes of God, but not in the eyes of the Devil. Women were inherently sinful and more susceptible to damnation; their souls unprotected in their weak and vulnerable bodies. Not surprisingly, 78 percent of all accused of witchcraft were women. Women who did not conform to the norms of Puritan society were more likely to be the target of an accusation. These included women who were unmarried or childless; others who were 'quarrelsome;' or didn't dress according to Puritan mandates; or women who were the victims of jealousy or gossip.

There are numerous books and online articles written about the ten girls and one slave woman who started the whole mess. There is also a hypothesis that *Ergot poisoning* (St. Anthony's Fire)

²⁶² *Witchcraft at Salem Village*. The central figure in this 1876 engraving of the courtroom is usually identified as Mary Walcott. (Artist unknown, public domain)

occurred from a fungus which grows on wild rye grass, which had lain un-threshed in Salem from August until winter. This grain was then made into tainted rye bread. Effects of Ergot poisoning are similar to the use of LSD. In 1976, Dr. Linnda Caporael studied the theory, and was refuted by historians. If interested, the reader can find more information on the internet sites noted in the footnotes and other sources.²⁶³

Two activities of this era involved the labor of a community of women: candle making and the quilting bee:

Candle-making was an all-day, back-breaking job. Candle rods, each with a row of wicks, were made by repeated dipping in big iron kettles of boiling water and melted tallow. However, better candles were made by a process of pouring the tallow into pewter molds. This produced six to twenty-four candles at a time. Wicks ranged from a store-bought cotton twist, flax fibers, to the silky down from milkweed pods.

Candle Mold
Author's photo from French-Andrews house
Topsfield, June 2019



The quilting bee was also an effective means of combining work and socializing. Through the winter months, women would piece their quilt tops. When the weather became warmer, surrounding neighbors were sent an invitation for a bee. On the day, the quilters would arrive early and begin marking the quilt top, which had been put into a frame by the hostess. To draw the quilting patterns, the women used household items such as plates, thimbles, and teacups. The quilters would begin to quilt, seated around the frame, and exchange conversation. By the late afternoon, some women finished the quilt, while others prepared dinner. The men showed up from their work, and everyone shared the evening meal, after which there was a square dance or country dance with fiddles. The quilting bee was surpassed only by religious gatherings.

²⁶³ Dr. Peter Gott, *Rotten Rye Bread Blamed for Salem Witch Trials* (Nov 1992 article), based on Marian K. Matossian, *Poisons of the Past: Molds, Epidemics and History*, (Yale University Press, 1991), 9/25/2021; <http://www.salemweb.com/memorial/memorial.php>; https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Salem_witch_trials; https://www.gutenberg.org/files/15488/15488-h/15488-h.htm#VIII_Woman_and_Witchcraft; 9/23/2020.



Author's photo – Mennonite
Relief Center, Pennsylvania,
Fall 2014



Paradoxical as it may seem, religion was to the colonial woman both a blessing and a curse. Though it gave courage and some comfort, it was as hard and unyielding as steel. We may shudder when we read the sermons of Cotton Mather and Jonathan Edwards and, if the mere reading causes astonishment after the lapse of these hundreds of years, what terror the messages must have inspired in those who lived under their terrific indictments, prophecies, and warnings.

We may never know what intense anxiety the Puritan woman may have suffered during the few days intervening between the hour of the birth and the date of the baptism of her infant, lest the child dies and be condemned to eternal damnation.

The Puritan woman may have gained one very material blessing from the religion of her day; she was relieved of practically all work on Sunday. There was little visiting, picnicking, no heavy meals, no weekend parties from sunset Saturday to sunset on Sunday. It is doubtful whether the alternative, attendance at church almost the entire day, would appear more desirable to the modern woman.

Women were still without a voice in matters of government and church, often being the same. One of John Cotton's most famous sermons dealt with the question as to whether women had a right to sing in church. After lengthy arguments, the preacher finally decided that the Lord had no particular objection to women's singing the Psalms. Still, this conclusion was reached only after an unsparing battle of doubts and logic.²⁶⁴

²⁶⁴ Holliday, *Women's Life in Colonial Days*, Chapter 1, *The Spirit of Woman*,
https://www.gutenberg.org/files/15488/15488-h/15488-h.htm#I_The_Spirit_of_Woman, 9/23/2020;
[https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/John_Cotton_\(minister\)](https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/John_Cotton_(minister)), 10/7/2020.

In the previous generation, Anne Hutchinson (1591-1643), fought for the right to worship and voiced her opinions at religious meetings in her own home. She made the mistake of criticizing the Puritan ministers of Massachusetts Bay Colony. She was put on trial for heresy for that sin, becoming the first female defendant in a Massachusetts court. She defended herself admirably, no man was brave enough to speak up for her, but in the end, she was excommunicated from the Puritan church and banished from the Colony.²⁶⁵ Other women began to find their voice in this time of *Awakening* or revival, speaking out in Puritan churches to share their stories, and to encourage because they now believed it was their duty to God to do so.²⁶⁶

Women's rate of literacy was dependent on their socioeconomic background, and I would imagine that as wives of farmers, or craftsmen, the Abbe women were part of the 38% of colonial women who were illiterate in 1697. There are, however, several women who have a literary presence as the 18th century opens:

- Charlotte (Ramsay) Lennox (1720 - 1804), writes the first novel by an American-born writer, *The Life of Harriet Stuart*. Born in New York and sent to England at the age of fifteen for schooling, she remained there for the rest of her life. It was also the first novel with American settings, such as the Hudson River, Albany, and the Mohawk Valley.
- Martha (Wadsworth) Brewster (1710 - 1757), of Lebanon, Connecticut, writes *Poems on Divers Subjects*, containing poems, letters, & some prose works. She tackles radical subject matters for an 18th century woman, including military events and the brutality of war. When the book first appears, Brewster has to demonstrate her authorship to a public skeptical that a woman could write poetry by publicly paraphrasing a psalm into verse.
- Esther (Edwards) Burr (1732 - 1758), begins chronicling daily life from 1754 to 1757, giving information on such diverse topics such as the founding of Princeton College, religious revivals, childbearing practices, the French and Indian War, and women's roles during the period. It would be published in several editions by Jeremiah Eames Rankin (1828 - 1904) as *Esther Burr's Journal*.

²⁶⁵ <https://www.womenhistoryblog.com/2007/10/anne-marbury-hutchinson.html>, 9/23/2020.

²⁶⁶ Holliday, *Women's Life in Colonial Days*, Chapter 1, *Female Rebellion*, https://www.gutenberg.org/files/15488/15488-h/15488-h.htm#VII_Female_Rebellion, 9/23/2020.

Pease Family Ancestry

Mary Pease, the wife of Thomas Abbe Jr., was the daughter of **John Pease Jr. (Capt.)**²⁶⁷, b. Salem, Essex County, Massachusetts 30 Mar/May 1654²⁶⁸, eldest son of John Pease and Mary Goodale; d. Enfield, Hartford County, Connecticut 29 Nov 1734 (age 80).²⁶⁹

Captain John Pease Jr. was a carpenter, joiner, woodworker, great uncle to David (Ohio), and Benjamin Pease of Edgartown, Martha's Vineyard, Massachusetts.²⁷⁰ On pinterest.com, I found an image with this note:

David Pease introduced a new style of spindle-turned woodenware that surpassed regional designs. He possessed an inherent aesthetic sensibility nurtured by exposure to historic Connecticut River Valley refinements. Benjamin's reference card indicates his full name is Benjamin Warren Pease, and he was a waterfowl decoy carver.



David Pease Sugarbowl
Photo by pinterest



Benjamin Pease Duck Decoy
Photo from saltwatercentral.com

²⁶⁷ Pease & Pease, *A Genealogical and Historical Record of the Descendants of John Pease Sen., Last of Enfield, Conn.*, 393 for a discussion of the possible misuse of "Captain", (archive.org), 9/23/2020.

²⁶⁸ *Massachusetts, Town and Vital Records, 1620-1988, Salem Vital Record Transcripts, Salem Births*, (ancestry.com), 9/23/2020.

²⁶⁹ *Connecticut, Deaths and Burial Index, 1650 – 1934*, <online database>, (Provo, Utah, Ancestry.com Operations Inc., 2011), FHL film #3319, 9/23/2020; *Connecticut, Hale Collection of Cemetery Inscriptions and Newspaper Notices, 1629 – 1934*, Vol 1, 29, #2 Center Cemetery, (ancestry.com), 9/23/2020; Pease & Pease, *A Genealogical and Historical Record of the Descendants of John Pease, Sen.*, 5-6, (archive.org), 9/23/2020; *U.S. Craftperson Files, 1600 – 1995*, death year 1734, (ancestry.com) 9/23/2020.

²⁷⁰ *U.S. Craftperson Files, 1600 – 1995*, referencing the *Maine Antique Digest* 12/1966, 36 -b/40-b, (ancestry.com), 9/23/2020; Ethel Hall Bjerkoe, *The Cabinetmakers of America*, 1st ed., (Garden City, N.Y.: Doubleday, 1957), Pease: 168-9; Chapin: 59-62, (babel.hathitrust.org), 9/23/2020. Note: John Pease Jr's eldest son John, m. Elizabeth Spencer, member of the Hartford family of joiners and turners. Eliphalet Chapin was a great grandson of John Pease Sr. and great nephew of John Pease Jr., and second cousin to Elizabeth Spencer Pease. Going back in the ancestry of the Pease family in England, there may have been a John Pease, joiner and carpenter; <https://www.themagazineantiques.com/article/an-eliphalet-chapin-high-chest-explained-at-the-wadsworth-atheneum/> for one of his pieces, 7/13/2021.

Capt. John Pease Jr., m. 30 Jan 1676/77 **Margaret Adams**²⁷¹, b. Ipswich, Essex, Massachusetts 18 May 1654; d. Enfield 2 Jan 1736/7. She was the daughter of James Adams of Scituate, b. Plymouth bef. 27 May 1627; d. at sea aft. 8 Apr 1657 and Frances Vassall, b. Stepney, Greater London aft. 1 Jan 1623; d. Marshfield, Plymouth Colony 3 Apr 1670; buried there.

Children:²⁷²

- i. JOHN PEASE III, b. Salem, Essex, Massachusetts 22 Apr 1678; d. Enfield, Hartford, Connecticut 6 June 1761; m. 1) Hartford, Hartford, Connecticut bef. 1717 Elizabeth Spencer; one son John Pease IV; m. (2) Springfield, Hampden, Massachusetts 12 Nov 1729 Elizabeth Warriner.
- ii. JAMES PEASE, SR. (SERGEANT), b. Salem 15 Nov 1679; (removed to Enfield as an infant); d. Somers, Tolland, Connecticut 19 Dec 1748; m. Enfield 15 Nov 1710 Mary Abbe, daughter of John and Hannah (Boardman) Abbe, not of Thomas Abbe; he was one of the founders of Somers, Connecticut; six children.²⁷³ Mary (Abbe) Pease, d. 28 Nov 1673.
- iii. MARGARET PEASE, b. Enfield 24 Jan 1682/3; d. Enfield 1775; m. Enfield 6 Jan 1709 Josiah Colton II; two sons, five daughters. "She is the first recorded birth in Enfield and personified the hardy spirit of the town and lived to the age of 92."²⁷⁴
- iv. ANN/A PEASE, b. Enfield 29 Oct 1685; d. East Winsor, Connecticut 1753; m. 1719 Jeremiah Lord of East Windsor, Connecticut; two sons, one daughter.
- v. JONATHAN PEASE, b. Enfield 29 Jan 1686/87; d. that same year.
- vi. **MARY PEASE**, b. Enfield 24 May 1688; d. 1744/46; m. 1714 **Thomas Abbe Jr.**; two sons, five daughters.
- vii. SARAH PEASE, b. Enfield 27 Sept 1689; d. Somers, Connecticut 2 Nov 1743; bur. Somers North Cemetery; m. 1710 Timothy Root of Somers, Connecticut, two sons, five daughters.
- viii. JOSEPH PEASE, b./bapt. Enfield 10 Mar 1691/3; d. Enfield 26 May 1757; bur. Enfield St Cemetery; m. abt. 13 Jan 1726 Mary (possibly) *Spencer*.

John Symonds, a joiner and cooper of Salem, apprenticed John Pease Jr. Symonds died soon after making this arrangement. In his Will, he assigned his apprentice to his son James "during the term of time in the indenture, paying 40 pounds in four years, 10 pounds per annum."

²⁷¹ *Massachusetts Compiled Marriages 1633-1850*, FHL film #0761210, <online database>, (Provo, Utah, Ancestry.com Operations, Inc., 2005), 9/23/2020; *Massachusetts: Vital Records, 1620-1850, Salem Marriages*, 169, <online database>, (AmericanAncestors.org, New England Historic Genealogical Society, 2001-2016), 9/23/2020.

²⁷² Pease & Pease, *A Genealogical and Historical Record of the Descendants of John Pease*, 6, (archive.org), 9/23/2020; *North America Family Histories 1500 -2000, Rising Genealogy: descendants of Jonathan Rising of Suffield, Connecticut*, 246, 247, (ancestry.com), 9/23/2020.

²⁷³ Abbe & Nichols, *Abbe-Abbey Genealogy*, 17-18.

²⁷⁴ https://www.wikitree.com/wiki/Space:Enfield%2C_Connecticut, 9/23/2020.

It seems probable that John Pease continued his apprenticeship until his removal from Salem, as evidenced by his "land, house, and shop."²⁷⁵

John Pease Jr. and his brother Robert are said to have gone to Enfield from Salem, in 1679, two years before they removed their families there, and lived the first winter in an excavation in the side of a hill about forty rods from where the first meeting house stood.²⁷⁶ By the end of 1680, about twenty-five families had settled in the area. In 1685, the Pease brothers had extra land given them because they had been the *first cummers*.

On 16 March 1688, the townspeople "purchased" Enfield from a Podunk Indian named Notatuck for 25 pounds Sterling, although it is unclear what claim Notatuck had to the land. As a result of an error in the survey done in 1642, Enfield was settled as part of the Massachusetts Colony; however, in 1750 Enfield seceded from Massachusetts and became part of the Connecticut Colony.

The area was called Freshwater Plantation, and the Pease family were among the few to accept the land grants offered there. In 1680, John Pease had the 4th lot north of Ferry land as his home lot. The requirements were to erect a dwelling, settle the land within three years and not sell, transfer ownership, or move away for seven years. A minister was to be obtained and supported within three years.

John Pease Jr., his brother Robert, his father John Sr., and Elisha Kibbe (an ancestor we will meet in Volume 2) were granted lots on 23 July 1680. It was undoubtedly this John Pease (Jr.) who is named in the deed as one of the commissioners who purchased the larger portion of the town of Enfield in March 1681.²⁷⁷

He was one of the most prominent men in the history of Enfield. He was tireless in promoting and advancing this infant settlement, and later, the incorporated town's prosperity. John Pease Jr. being a surveyor by trade was assigned to draw up the first map of the Freshwater Plantation. He was also appointed "land measurer." He was one of the first selectmen chosen by the town in 1688, along with Samuel Terry (more on the Terry family in the next generation) and was the first Captain of the first militia company in Enfield. In public records, his name is prefixed with the title of *Captain*. His brother Robert was the first constable chosen by a vote of the town of Enfield in 1681. Robert died in 1744, at age 88.²⁷⁸

²⁷⁵ Pease & Pease, *A Genealogical and Historical Record of the Descendants of John Pease*, 5, (archive.org), 9/23/2020; *North America Family Histories 1500 -2000, Rising Genealogy*, 246, (ancestry.com), 9/23/2020.

²⁷⁶ https://www.wikitree.com/wiki/Space:Enfield%2C_Connecticut, 10/7/2020.

²⁷⁷ Pease & Pease, *A Genealogical and Historical Record of the Descendants of John Pease*, 5, 6, (archive.org), 9/23/2020.

²⁷⁸ *North America Family Histories 1500 -2000, Rising Genealogy: descendants of Jonathan Rising of Suffield, Connecticut*, 246, 247, (ancestry.com), 9/23/2020.



The plaque is found in the Enfield Street Cemetery, Enfield, Connecticut,
Author's photos, June 2019.

John Pease (Jr.) was the son of **John Pease Sr.**, christened Great Baddow, Essex, England 11 Feb 1631/2, younger son of Robert Pease and Lydia *West*. Pease immigrated in 1639 and became the progenitor of the Enfield Peases and one of the town's founders; d. Enfield, Connecticut 8 July 1689.

John Pease Sr. supposedly came to Salem with his mother, though I find no record of her immigration, and his grandmother Margaret (King) Pease, about 1639. The first court record of John (age 13) was in the settlement of his father's estate, 27 August 1644.²⁷⁹ He appears to have been a favorite of his grandmother as shown by her Will dated 1 September 1642, proved 1 January 1645, soon after his father's estate settlement. It seems that his grandmother adopted him before his father's death, and she had full authority for placing him in the care of Thomas Watson to raise as his child.

John settled as a farmer/yeoman in that part of Salem called Northfields, where he owned a farm, a short distance from the farm of William Pynchon, colonist and fur trader best known as the founder of Springfield, Massachusetts. John Pease's name is found several times in the Essex and Salem records as grantee, grantor, witness, etc.

John Pease Sr., m. 1653 (1) **Mary Goodale**, b. abt. 1630, arrived in Colonies 1634 (age 4) on the *Elizabeth* with her parents and younger brother; d. 5 Jan 1668. She was the daughter of Robert and Catherine (___) Goodale.²⁸⁰ Note: many online trees indicate the Goodales were from Dennington, Suffolk, but in her research Wendy Mulligan, *The Tree Dr.* has disproved this connection.²⁸¹

²⁷⁹ <https://www.geni.com/people/John-Pease-of-Salem-Enfield>, 9/23/2020; Pease & Pease, *A Genealogical and Historical Record of the Descendants of John Pease*, 2, (archive.org), 9/23/2020.

²⁸⁰ *U.S. And International Marriage Records, 1560-1900*, #659,000, <online database>, (Provo, Utah, Ancestry.com Operations, Inc., 2004), 9/24/2020; *U.S., New England Marriages Prior to 1700*, 566, (ancestry.com), 9/23/2020.

²⁸¹ Personal email with Wendy Mulligan, 12/9/2020.

Children, all born at Salem, Essex County, Massachusetts:

*The first four children listed were baptized at Salem in 1667 in order by age.*²⁸²

- i. **JOHN PEASE JR. (CAPT.)**, b. 20/30 May 1654; d. ca 1734.
- ii. **ROBERT PEASE**, b. 14 May 1656; d. ca 1744; m Abigail Randall; ten children: six sons, four daughters.
- iii. **MARY PEASE**, b. 8 Oct 1658; d. aft 1731; m. Hugh Pasco as his second wife; two sons.²⁸³
- iv. **ABRAHAM PEASE**, b. 5 June 1662, lived in Enfield; d. ca 1735; m. Jane Mentor; no children.
- v. **JONATHAN PEASE**, b. 2 Jan 1668/9, lived in Enfield; d. ca. 1721; m. 11 Oct 1692 Elizabeth Booth; two sons, two daughters.

On 4 July 1667, John Pease Sr. joined the First Church of Salem, to which his father and grandmother belonged. On 29 April 1668, he was made a freeman by the General Court and took the Oath before the County Court, 30 June following.²⁸⁴

On 5 January 1669, Mary (Goodale) Pease died three days after the birth of her fifth child.²⁸⁵ John Pease Sr., m. (2) Topsfield 8 Dec 1669, Ann Cummings, b. Ipswich, Massachusetts abt. 1639. Her parents were Isaac Cummings²⁸⁶ and Margaret or Anne (___). She, d. Enfield 29 June 1689.²⁸⁷

Three children of his second marriage:

- i. **JAMES PEASE**, b. Salem 23 Oct/Dec 1670; removed to Enfield (age 10); d. Dec 1748; m. (1) ca. 1695 Hannah Harmon; six daughters one son.
- ii. **ISAAC PEASE (DEACON)**, b. Salem 15 July 1672; d. 19 July 1731; m. ca. 1691 Mindwell Osborn; seven sons, two daughters. He settled in the north-eastern part of Enfield, not far from what is now Shaker Village. He appeared to have been an extensive landholder and was among the first holding the office of Deacon in the Congregational Church in that town. His grave and tombstone are in good condition in the burying-ground, north of Enfield's central meeting house.²⁸⁸

²⁸² <http://www.firstchurchinsalem.org/archives>, *Record Book*, Part 1, 28, 9/24/2020.

²⁸³ Some have mistakenly transcribed her name as Marg (Margaret), but the original records: *Essex County Superior Court Records*, ser. VI, Book 3, now kept at the Peabody Essex Museum, show it as *Mary*; *The American Genealogist*, Vol 70, 1995, 207, Ian Watson, *Three Mary Peases of Salem, Mass.*, (New Haven, CT: D. L. Jacobus, 1937-), <online database>, (AmericanAncestors.org, New England Historic Genealogical Society, 2009 - .), 9/24/2020; <http://spicerweb.org/Genealogy/Pease/PeaseRegisterLegacy.aspx#i3489>, 9/24/2020.

²⁸⁴ *Massachusetts Application of Freeman 1630-1691*, referencing C.R. Vol IV, p. 600, <online database>, (Provo Utah, Ancestry.com Operations, Inc., 2000), 9/24/2020.

²⁸⁵ sources to follow in the Goodale family ancestry section.

²⁸⁶ Marietta Calk, comp, *Isaac Cummings of Topsfield, Mass, and Some of His Descendants*, (Topsfield Historical Society, 1899), 6, (archive.org), 10/7/2020.

²⁸⁷ *Colonial Families of the USA 1607-1775*, Vol VI: 183, (ancestry.com), 9/24/2020; *U.S., New England Marriages Prior to 1700*, 566, (ancestry.com), 9/24/2020.

²⁸⁸ *U.S. Find a Grave*, Memorial #8844073, citing Enfield Street Cemetery, Enfield, Hartford County, Connecticut, (ancestry.com), 9/24/2020; https://www.wikitree.com/wiki/Pease-207#_note-2, 9/24/2020.

iii. ABIGAIL PEASE, b. Salem 15 Oct/Dec 1675; d. Enfield 17 July 1689.

His brother-in-law, Isaac Goodale appointed John Pease Sr., along with his widow Patience (___) Goodale, to be co-administrators of his estate in 1679. John Pease served in this capacity until his death at Enfield, Massachusetts, 1693. Isaac Goodale Jr. replaced him. Enfield did not become part of Connecticut until 1749.²⁸⁹

On 23 July 1680, John Pease Sr. was granted land in Enfield. On 6 October 1681, a sacrament day, John and his second wife, Ann Cummings, had a letter of recommendation granted to the church at Springfield. Not long after, it is supposed, he with his family, his eldest two son's families, and numerous neighbors, removed to Fresh Water Brook, (now Enfield, Connecticut), then a part of Springfield, where he and his two oldest sons had the land grant.

In November of 1682, John was back in Salem to sell his property: house, barn, out-buildings and parcels of land. He acknowledged the deed before a Salem justice of the peace, saying in the deed he was, "late of Salem, now of Enfield."

On May 23, 1679, John Sampson of Beverly, Massachusetts, sold his property to John Pease Sr. John, in turn, sold the land to his son-in-law, Hugh Pasco, and removed from the Northfields, to that part of Springfield, Massachusetts, which became Enfield, Connecticut. He settled on the 4th lot north of Ferry Lane in 1680. The records of the town state that his land on 16 December 1681, and his sons were made "two or three rods wider than the others."²⁹⁰

On 26 February 1683, John Pease Sr. was again in Salem to give evidence in a trial involving a boundary line on land once owned and laid out by his former father-in-law Goodale. He then stated he was "aged about 53 years." In September 1684, he was appointed administrator on the estate of Lot Killam, a townsman of his when in Salem and one of the first persons who died at the new settlement of Enfield.

John Pease's relation to the church on his removal to Enfield was an active one. He assisted in maintaining the worship of God on the Sabbath in Enfield, after it became incorporated. He was chosen as an early Selectman and considered a good citizen. In 1684, townsmen built the first meetinghouse near the current Enfield Street Cemetery, with the Burying ground behind it. The Freshwater Plantation Committee chose John Pease Sr., Isaac Meacham, and Isaac Morgan to be the first Selectmen, to officiate for a year..."to take care of the widows amongst them that change may not unnecessarily arise upon the place and in particular for that end reasonably to advise them and in case of their neglect to order the putting out of their children to such as may maintain and breed them up in some comfortable way."²⁹¹

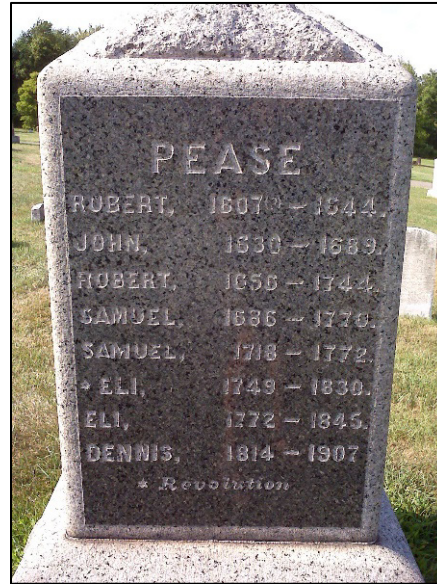
²⁸⁹ http://www.wiggo.com/Personal/Genealogy/Goodale_Book/goodale_book.htm, 9/24/2020.

²⁹⁰ <http://stagge-parker.blogspot.com/2011/08/john-pease-1632-1689.html>, 9/24/2020.

²⁹¹ https://www.wikitree.com/wiki/Space:Enfield%2C_Connecticut, 9/24/2020.

On 8 July 1689, John Pease Sr., was sickened while preparing to build a house, and he died suddenly. "Death made sad havoc in this family in a short time; taking first the mother (29 June 1689), ten days after the father (8 July 1689), and one day after that, their daughter Abigail. " There were outbreaks in 1689/90 of both diphtheria and smallpox.²⁹² Buried in Enfield Street Cemetery, John Pease Sr. has the distinction of being the ancestor of the Enfield branch of the Salem Peases.²⁹³

Pease Memorial
Find a Grave photo by Dawn Bryant
(Used with permission)



John Pease Sr. was the son of the immigrant **Robert Pease Jr.**, son of Robert Pease, *the Locksmith* and Margaret (King) Pease of Great Baddow, Essex, England, b. Great Baddow and bapt. 28 Oct 1589²⁹⁴, St. Mary's Church, Chelmsford, located 3 miles northwest of Great Baddow. This church has names and records of other Pease family members, but does not record Robert's baptism.²⁹⁵ His brother John may have been baptized, 20 Nov 1608 at St. Mary's, Chelmsford.²⁹⁶

²⁹² *Outbreaks of Epidemic Disease in Colonial America*; https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Disease_in_colonial_America, 9/24/2020; Thomas L. Purvis, *Colonial America to 1763*, (New York, Facts on File, 1999), 173, Table 6.7, (books.google.com), 9/24/2020.

²⁹³ *Connecticut Deaths and Burial Index 1650-1934*, FHL film #3333, (ancestry.com), 9/24/2020; *Hale Collection of Cemetery Inscriptions and Newspaper Notices, 1629-1934*, Vol 15, 94, 110-1, Enfield Street Cemetery, Section A, Row 33, (ancestry.com), 9/24/2020; *U.S. Find a Grave Index, 1600's - Current*, Memorial #94090214, (ancestry.com), 9/24/2020.

²⁹⁴ <https://minerdescent.wordpress.com/2010/08/25/robert-pease-jr-great-baddow/>, 9/24/2020.

²⁹⁵ <https://www.geni.com/people/Robert-Pease-of-Great-Baddow-Salem>, 9/24/2020.

²⁹⁶ *The New England Historical and Genealogical Register*, (americanancestors.org), Vol X, 1856, 159, Frederick S. Pease, *Pease Ancestry*, 9/24/2020; Pease & Pease, *A Genealogical and Historical Record of the Descendants of John Pease*, Part II, Chap. IV, *Origins of The Salem and Enfield Peases*, 68, (ancestry.com), 9/24/2020.

Robert Pease Jr., m. (1) abt. 1605 **Lydia** (____), possibly Lydia West, b. Great Baddow, abt. 1594, who probably died before her husband made the journey to America. If her surname was West, some speculate that Lydia may have been the daughter of Francis T. West, 1579-1619 and Susanna Source, 1582 - 1637 (not proven). The marriage to Lydia (West) is not verified nor mentioned in the early Pease genealogies.

The children of Robert Pease and Lydia (____) were born and baptized in Great Baddow, Essex, England:

- i. ROBERT PEASE JR., b. abt. 1628, christened Apr 1630; d. after 1717.
- ii. JOHN PEASE SR., b. abt. 1630; christened 11 Feb 1631/2; d. Enfield, Connecticut 8 July 1689.

Essex County, England, was a hotbed of Puritan activity. Over two hundred and sixty people sailed for America between 1620 to 1650. Why they left may be explained by this quote from *Calendars of State Papers, American and Colonial Series*:

On 4 February 1634, Henry Dade wrote from Ipswich, England, to the Archbishop of Canterbury that the ships *Francis* and *Elizabeth* with sixty men in each intend to sail for New England on or about 10 March and he supposes they are debtors or persons disaffected with the established church. About 600 such men will go over shortly, and he questions the effects of allowing such swarms to go. Mr. Ward of Ipswich (most likely Nathaniel Ward) has preached against the *Book of Common Prayer*, thus causing this giddiness and desire to go to New England."

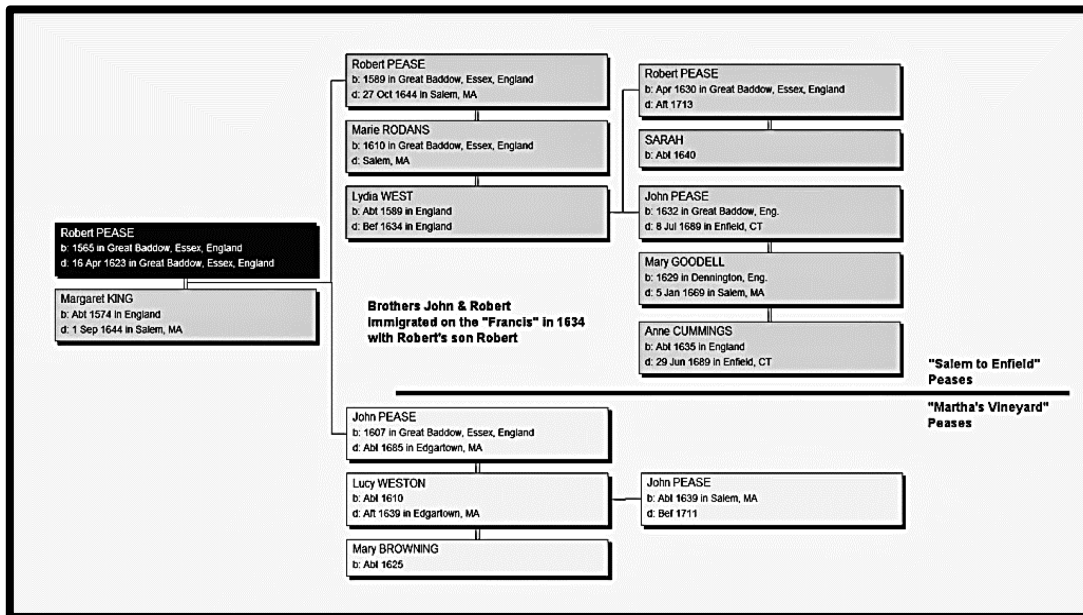
The charismatic Puritan minister, Thomas Hooker, regularly preached in Essex County, including Great Baddow, in the 1620s and early 1630s. When Bishop Laud removed Thomas Hooker from his lectureship at St. Mary's in Chelmsford for not conforming to church teachings, Hooker moved to the nearby village of Little Baddow, where he set up a school for children and another for ministers of the area who wanted to learn more about the Puritan way of the church. In 1630, Hooker fled to the Netherlands to escape Bishop Laud's condemnation. By 1633, he had returned to England and in July 1633, he and his family, along with John Cotton, boarded the *Griffin* to sail for Massachusetts. John Cotton was a clergyman both in England and the American colonies and considered the preeminent minister and theologian of the Massachusetts Bay Colony. He was the grandfather of Cotton Mather. Thomas Hooker first settled in Newtown (now Cambridge), and three years later, moved to a site on the Connecticut River, which later became Hartford, Connecticut.

W. Noel Sainsbury, editor, *Calendars of State Papers, American and Colonial Series*, 1574 – 1660, (London, Longman & Green, 1860), 174, (archive.org), 9/1/2021.

[https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/John_Cotton_\(minister\)](https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/John_Cotton_(minister))

Michael Tepper, editor, *New World Immigrants, Vol I, More Gleanings for New England History*, 67-68, (Baltimore, Maryland, Genealogical Publishing Co., 1979), (ancestry.com), 9/1/2021.

Undoubtedly, the Pease family knew of Thomas Hooker and were, perhaps, followers. The Pease brothers came to Plymouth Colony/Boston just a few months after Hooker, on the ship *Francis*, which landed in Boston in June 1634.²⁹⁷ Robert Sr. immigrated with his brother John. This John is NOT the father of our direct ancestor also named John Pease. I hope the following will be helpful to the reader:



Robert Pease Sr. immigrated with his eldest son Robert Jr. (age 3/4), a Miss Fayth Clark (Clarke) (age 15), who was the daughter of a fellow passenger, and a Miss Dorcas Greene (also age 15), perhaps a servant. Robert left his younger son, "our" John Pease (Sr.) (age 2), with his mother, Margaret. She and her grandson John, perhaps alongside Robert's second wife Marie, eventually followed her two sons, Robert and John, to America in 1639. Note: The 1634 ship's passenger list has both Robert and John listed as 'age 27.'²⁹⁸ This would make their birth year 1607, or 1608 for John.²⁹⁹

Robert Pease disappeared from records from the time he landed in Boston until three years later in Salem, Massachusetts, where in January 1637, he and his brother John had grants of land.³⁰⁰ In the 1636 Salem land grant, Robert Pease received 10 acres in the non-freeman's section of the list, his brother John, 20 acres.

²⁹⁷ Michael Tepper, editor, *New World Immigrants, A Consolidation of Ship Passenger Lists and Associated Data from Periodical Literature*, Volume 1, (Baltimore, Genealogical Publishing Co., 1979), 68, 7/13/2021.

²⁹⁸ *The New England Historical and Genealogical Register*, (americanancestors.org), Vol III, 1849, 30 -31, Frederick. S. Pease, *The Pease Family*, 9/24/2020.

²⁹⁹ *The Planters of the Commonwealth in Massachusetts, 1620-1640, Lists of Passengers and the Ships which Brought Them*, 1634: 123, <online database>, (ancestry.com), 9/24/2020; https://www.wikitree.com/wiki/Category:Francis%2C_1634, 9/24/2020.

³⁰⁰ <http://history.vineyard.net/pease.htm> referencing the work of Richard Bart, *The Pease Family of Great Baddow, England and Martha's Vineyard*, self-published April 1999.

In the 25 December 1637 grant of undivided meadow, Robert Pease was granted $\frac{3}{4}$ of an acre for a household of four. In the *Salem Book of Land Grants*, 13 Feb 1652, Robert Goodale purchased 30 acres from "Robert Pease and his brother."³⁰¹

Robert Pease Jr., eldest son of the immigrant Robert Pease (elder brother of our ancestor, John Pease), came to this county with his father in 1634 and eventually settled in Salem. When his father died, he was 'bound out' by the courts 31 December 1645 to Thomas Root to learn the trade of a weaver of woolen and linen. He was also employed as town herdsman during his apprenticeship, for in 1704 he testified he had been a "keeper of several lots of creatures, on the lands belonging to the inhabitants of Salem above 60 years ago." In 1655 he was employed to keep one hundred cows, and to have help so that he may attend worship every third Sabbath. During an early part of his adult life, he lived at Martha's Vineyard. As an inducement to keep him there, several of the citizens agreed to furnish him annually with one hundred pounds of fish. The agreement contained the following clause:

If the said Robert Pease leave the island, he will leave the fish resigning up again to the owners. Also, the said Robert Pease doth engage to weave the cloth of the town for such pay as the town can raise among themselves except wampum.

It is not known how long he remained at Martha's Vineyard. No mention is made of him at Salem after 1655 - 1667 except in the birth records of his children. He was with a Salem company in the French and Indian war. The given name of his wife was Sarah _____. Both suffered imprisonment in 1692 because suspected of witchcraft. His wife was living in 1704, and he in 1713, at which time he was dismissed from First Church Salem to help form the First Church at the Middle Precinct, now Peabody.

There was also a John Pease of Salem who was "ordered whipped and bound to his good behavior for striking his mother Mrs. Weston..." Several researchers have tried to link this John Pease to "our" John and Robert Pease with some fantastical machinations. I confess I traveled down that rabbit hole and was relieved to find the work of Reverend David Pease and Austin S. Pease which offered much needed clarity.

Pease & Pease, *A Genealogical and Historical Record of the Descendants of John Pease, Sr.*, Chapter II and IV, 185-193,

A random Court document states that on 29 December 1640, Robert Pease Sr. complained that Reuben Guppi had stolen his ax.³⁰²

Robert's second wife, Marie, whose possible maiden name was *Rodans*, arrived in New England at an unknown date. Marie, *French for Mary*, may have born in Great Baddow, Chelmsford, Essex, England between 1608 - 1610; her parents being Protestant refugees from France.

³⁰¹ Pease & Pease, *A Genealogical and Historical Record of the Descendants of John Pease Sr.*, Part II, 12, (archive.org), 9/24/2020.

³⁰² *New England, The Great Migration and the Great Migration Begins, 1620-1635*, Vol 5 M-P, 420, (ancestry.com), note: A Rueben Guppi is also mentioned in a 1664 incident involving Robert Goodell. 9/24/2020.

On 1 October 1643, the Salem Church admits Robert and Marie (*Rodans*) Pease. Two weeks later, three of their children were baptized there:³⁰³

- i. NATHANIEL PEASE, b. unknown, likely before 1642, bapt. 15 Oct 1643; d. unknown; m. Mary Hobbs, 15 Mar 1667; living in 1673.
- ii. SARAH PEASE, b. 1642; bapt. 15 Oct 1643; d. unknown; m. 22 Oct 1667, John Sampson of Beverly.
- iii. MARY PEASE, b. 15 Aug 1643; bapt. 15 Oct 1643; d. ca. 1683 Salem, Massachusetts; probably m. Nathaniel Carrell/Carroll.

Robert Pease Sr., died Salem, Massachusetts, 27 October 1644; buried Enfield Street Cemetery, Enfield, Connecticut. The Salem Court noted on 3 January 1644 that Robert Pease died intestate, and his elder son Robert Pease Jr. was committed to his mother, Marie (*Rodans*) Pease, who was appointed administratrix of the estate. The Inventory of his estate was filed on 27 August 1644.³⁰⁴

The Inventory of the estate of Robert Pease Sr. of Salem, late deceased, taken 3 January 1644/5: totaled 30£ 12s 6d, against which were debts of 6£. The value of his real estate was 14£ of the total: "one house and a barn and 11 acres of ground. *Offices*: His Inventory included "one musket with bandoliers and the sword valued at 16s."³⁰⁵

After Robert Pease, Sr. died, his widow Marie, married (2) Richard Haines of Beverly, Massachusetts. He is also said to have been of Huguenot background. Marie, died Beverly, Essex, Massachusetts, after 1694.

During the winter of 1644, Margaret (King) Pease, widow and mother to Robert Pease Sr. and his brother John, grandmother to Robert Pease Jr. and "our" John Pease Sr. dies. In her Will, dated 1 September 1644, proved 1 January 1645, she mentions a grandchild, John, younger son of Robert, whom she cared for in England and brought with her to the colonies in 1639. He received, by his grandmother Margaret's Will, a significant portion of the estate, and it placed him in the care of Thomas Watson of Salem to "dispose of as his child." Her Will follows that of her son Robert's.

³⁰³ <http://freepages.rootsweb.com/~nyterry/genealogy/pease/pease.html>, 9/24/2020;
<https://minerdescent.com/page/43/>, 9/24/2020.

³⁰⁴ <http://spicerweb.org/Genealogy/Legacyfiles/3271.htm>, 9/24/2020.

³⁰⁵ *New England, The Great Migration and the Great Migration Begins, 1620-1635*, Vol 5 M-P, 420, (ancestry.com), 9/24/2020.

The Estate of Robert Pease, Sr. of Salem Probate Records and Inventory

Robert Pease Sr. died intestate, and his son Robt. Pease Jr. was committed to his mother Marie Pease, who was appointed administrator of the estate. The following records relating to the settlement of the estate of Robert Pease, Sen., last of Salem, Mass., are copied for this work from Probate papers on file in the Judicial Court at Salem. The first record found is "An Inventory of all the goods and chattels of Robert Pease, late deceased, of Salem, brought in Court 3: 11 mo: 1644:

	£	s	d
Imprimis five ewe goats and three lambs prayesd at	3	6	0
Item on iron and iron kettle and a pose... and two pewter dishes with Other small things of pewter preased at	1	0	0
Itt. on Tonell and on tube and three trays and on paile prayesd at	0	7	0
Itt. on flock bed a teik and on cow hide and a little ruge prayesd at	1	10	0
Itt. on sheet and on pil ow beer,	0	3	4
Itt. on stone hammer two trowels on lathing hammer one axe prayesd	0	6	0
It. on barrel and a peck,	0	2	6
It on chest and al little table board prayesd	0	5	0
It. on acre of wheat on of barley and a acre of pease,	2	0	0
It. four acres of Indian Corne prayesd at	10	0	0
It. on musket with bandileers and the sword prayesd at	0	16	0
It on howse and a barne and a frame and a 11 acres of ground prayesd	14	0	0
It. two shutes of apparel and a coat prayse	3	10	0
It. on hat on payre of stockins on payre of shoes two shirts, two bands prayesd at	0	10	0
Continued Appendix – C (pg 388)			
It. a sack prayesd at	0	1	0
It. the swine prayesd	1	6	0
Itt. a Cannow prayesd	<u>0</u>	<u>10</u>	<u>0</u>
	39	12	6
It. he was indebted to several persons	<u>5</u>	<u>0</u>	<u>0</u>
	34	1	6
The prayers of the goods, John Alderman, Mayhill Shaflinge (Michael Shaflen)			

Widow Marie Pease appointed administrator and hath brought in this Inventory upon her own at this 3 of 11 mo. '44 amounting to the sum and value of 39£, 12s, 6, out of which there is to be subtracted in debts of estate 5£. Out of which the Court appoint to Robert Pease being the eldest son and John Pease being the second son of Robert Pease deceased 9£. Court orders that the rest of the estate being 25£, 12s, 6 to Marie Pease widow for the maintenance of herself and the rest of the children. The court further orders that John the second son shall have his three pounds in 3 months' time and Robert the eldest sonn shall have it at 12 mos." (*Salem Quarterly Court Records*, Vol 2: 172 & Vol 1: leaf 24)³⁰⁶

³⁰⁶ *Essex County, Massachusetts Probate Records, 1635 – 1681*, Vol 1:42, EQC 1: 77, (ancestry.com), 11/20/2020.

**The Will of Margaret (King) Pease - the first day 7th month 1644
From Probate papers on file in the Judicial Court at Salem, Book No. 1**

(Some spelling updated by author)

This is the Last Will of Margaret Pease that is her grandchild John Pease the son of Robert Pease shall with the rest of her goods be put over to Thomas Wadsson of Salem to be as her true feoffee of trust to dispose of her estate as she directeth at this time being in parfite memory. First as before that the said John Pease shall be give freely to the said Thomas Wadsson, that he shall dispose of him as his own child and secondly that the house she lives in with the ground belonging thereto shall be given to the said John Pease, also hale an acker of Indian Corn, also that he is to have my heifer, also that John shall have my bed and all that belongs to it also that her grandchildren the children of Robert Pease her son shall give to the rest of them the two goats and kid to be equally disposed among them and for all her moveable goods are to be at Thomas Wadsson's disposal for the good of John, also her grandchild Robert Pease shall have her lesser chest and that if that the said John died then his brother Robert Pease shall have the rest of the estate, and all, that her daughter Pease, the wife of Robert Pease, is to have my best cloth gown, and all *perticlers* are not set down the same must Thomas Wadsson to dispose for the good of John her grandchild. (Her mark.)

In witness wherof we have set to our hands

John Barber
Obadiah Hulm"

It is the request of Ann the wife of Robert Isbell having taken a great deal of pains with the widow Pease deceased from the first of her sickness to the last in tending of her desire to take it into consideration about the satisfying of her.

The deposition of Ann Isbell is that Margaret Pease widow after she made a written Will did give and bequeath unto Faith Barber her best red petticoate being in perfect memorie and that is the substance of what I can depose.

From records in the office of the clerk of the courts we take the following:

1st of 7 mo 1644. Thomas Watson made ffeoffee in trust of Margaret Pease her Will, an Inventory of her goods and estate brought in Courte sworn to by Obadiah Holm and John Barber and other deposition legacies, also upon Ann the wife of Robert Isbell request g'dwffe* Watson must allow her for her pains or the court will. (* an abbreviation of goodwife, it should have read goodman.)

The Inventory of the widow Pease's estate, taken by John Alderman and John Bulfinche, had no date and when we compare the date at the head of her Will with this last transaction we might infer that her Will must have been made prior to "1st 7mo. 1644." Her Inventory consisted of household linen, quite a bit of clothing, pewter and kitchen implements, furniture, corn and rye, livestock, some land and a few debts to be collected. She owed Goodman Burcham 6s for her coffin, 1s for making her grave, 10d to the ferryman for bringing her over the water and 1s for writing. Total Inventory was valued at 2£, 6d. ³⁰⁷

Robert Pease and John his brother both of Salem came before the Court and acknowledged a bill bearing date the 6th 11 mo. 1651. Subscribed with their hands wherein they bind themselves jointly in the sum of 40£ unto Tho. Watson to save harmless the said Tho. Watson angst all manner of persons in regard of the estate of their grandmother Margaret Pease of whom the said Tho. Watson was a feoffee in trust as by the said bill more at large doth appear.

³⁰⁷ County Court, Essex County, Massachusetts, George Francis Dow, *Records and Files of the Quarterly Courts of Essex County, Massachusetts 1636 – 1656*, 85-86, (books.google.com) 1/12/2021.

Pease Ancestry in England
Great Baddow, Chelmsford borough, County Essex

Great Baddow is an urban village and civil parish in what is called the Hundred of Chelmsford or Chelmsford borough of Essex, England. It is located about thirty miles north-east from London, on the thoroughfare to Ipswich, one of the primary ports for ships leaving for the American Colonies. There were three manor houses in Great Baddow and at one time each belonged to one of the three Pease brothers. The present Pease Hall was built in the 1500's across the field from St. Mary's Church where many Pease family members were baptized, married and buried. Rebuilt in the 15th and early 16th centuries, the church has walls of flint rubble, stone, and brick. Today it is Chelmsford Cathedral (Anglican) dedicated in 1914. One day soon, I hope to make a trip to England and visit Staverton, Great Baddow and other locations which my ancestors once called home.

The River Beadwan, now known as the River Chelmer, marks the northern boundary of the village. *Beadwan* is a Celtic word of uncertain meaning, possibly "birch stream" or "bad water." It could also be a reference to the Irish war goddess Badbh, who takes the form of a crow, and with her sisters are known called 'the three Morrigna.

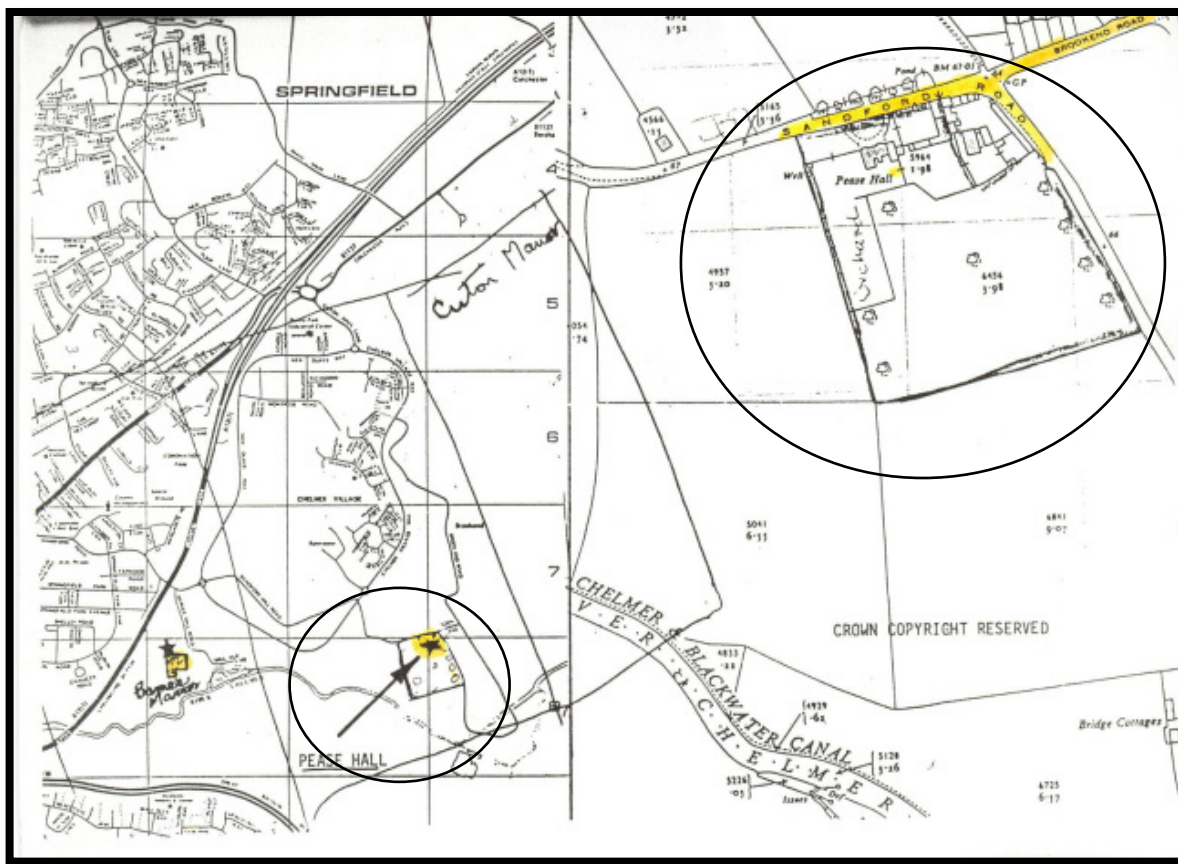
See: Wikipedia and Celtic mythology for more information.



St. Mary's nave is Norman, with north and south aisles and the tower added in the fourteenth century. The Tudor clerestory and porch were added during the sixteenth century but the parapets and pinnacles were replaced in 1968. The church is on high land at the heart of the village.

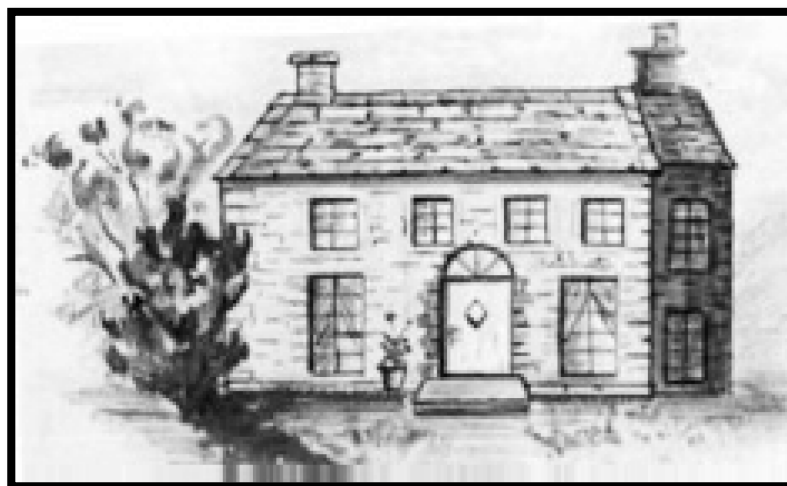
John Salmon / St Mary the Virgin,
Great Baddow, Essex / CC BY-SA
2.0 from geograph.org.uk

St. Mary the Virgin Church, Great Baddow



Map of Great Baddow, county Essex, England where Pease Manor is still located. The family now owns only five acres of the original 100 acres.³⁰⁸

The present **Pease Hall** was built in the 1500s and across the field from it is St. Mary's Church where many Pease family members were christened, married and buried.³⁰⁹



³⁰⁸ <https://minerdescent.com/2010/08/25/robert-pease-sr-great-baddow/>, 11/20/2020.

³⁰⁹ <http://rfmin.net/mjgen/pease/english.html>, 11/20/2020.

Robert “The Locksmith” Pease Sr., b. Great Baddow, Essex, England 10 June 1565; d. Apr 1623; bur. Great Baddow 16 Apr 1623; occupation locksmith. Father to Robert and John Pease, immigrants to America.³¹⁰

Below is the published abstract of the Will, reportedly from 1854 correspondence of Horatio G. Somerby:

Robert Pease of Great Baddow, Co. of Essex, Locksmith. Will dated 10 May 1623. Mentions his wife Margaret, sons Robert and John, daughter Elizabeth, son-in-law Abraham Page, and brother-in-law Francis King. Will proved 12 June 1623.³¹¹

Robert “The Locksmith” Pease Sr., m. Great Baddow 1586 **Margaret King**, b. Great Baddow, Chelmsford Essex, England abt. 1570 - 74; d. on, or bef., 1 Sept 1644 Salem, Essex. She may have been the daughter/sister of Francis King, who may have also immigrated to America.³¹² Others argue against the King surname for Margaret.³¹³

Children:

- i. DAUGHTER PEASE; b. 10 Dec 1587; d. young.
- ii. **ROBERT PEASE SR.**, b. 8 Oct 1589 or bapt. 1607; d. Salem, Essex, Massachusetts 7/27 Oct 1644; m. (1) **Lydia West**; m. (2) Marie (*Rodans?*).
- iii. WILLIAM PEASE, bapt. 26 Sept 1591; d. Great Baddow 20 July 1623.
- iv. JOHN PEASE, bapt. 24 May 1593; d. Great Baddow Jan 1599; bur. 10 Jan 1599.
- v. MARY PEASE, bapt. 10 Jan 1600.
- vi. ELIZABETH PEASE, bapt. Sept 1602; m. Abraham Page.
- vii. SUSAN PEASE, b./bapt. Great Baddow 18 June 1606.
- viii. RICHARD PEASE, bapt. 4 Apr 1607; d. 5 Apr 1607.
- ix. JOHN PEASE SR. (second of the name), bapt. 20 Nov 1608; m. ca 1630 Lucy Weston; lived at Martha’s Vineyard; d. probably in Portsmouth, New Hampshire. (for our purposes “Uncle” John, immigrant.)

³¹⁰ Phillip J. Rice, *Pease Family History*, (Monticello, Kentucky, Maron Publishing Co, 1982), 2a, 2b, 5; *UK and Ireland, Find a Grave Index, 1300s-Current*, <online database>, (Provo, Utah, Ancestry.com Operations, Inc., 2012), Memorial #65248992, 9/24/2020.

³¹¹ Pease & Pease, *A Genealogical and Historical Record of the Descendants of John Pease Sr.*, Part II, 12, (archive.org), 9/24/2020; <http://stagge-parker.blogspot.com/2011/08/robert-pease-1565-1623.html>, 9/24/2020; *UK, Extracted Probate Records, 1269-1975*, <online database>, (Provo, Utah, Ancestry.com Operations, Inc., 2009), *Essex, Hertfordshire, Chelmsford Wills, 1400-1619, Index to Wills Now Preserved in the Essex Record Office, Chelmsford*, Chapter 1620-1720: 1623, Pease, Robert, locksmith, Gt. Baddow 262 BW 44, 9/24/2020.

³¹²; Pease & Pease, *A Genealogical and Historical Record of the Descendants of John Pease Sr.*, Part II, Chapter IV, 10, (ancestry.com), 9/24/2020; *U.S. and International Marriage Records 1560-1900*, (ancestry.com), m. 1586, Margaret, b. 1574, 9/24/2020.

³¹³ <https://www.wikitree.com/wiki/King-8017>, 9/24/2020.

From a long list of baptisms, marriages, and burials dating from 1540 to 1623, the following are useful in this connection:³¹⁴

- John, son of Robert Pease, bapt. 24 May 1593.
- John, infant son of Robert Pease, bur. 10 Jan 1599.
- John, son of Robert Pease, bapt. 20 Nov 1608."

As mentioned previously, his sons Robert (1589 or 1607-1644) and John (1608 - 1677) sailed for New England in 1634, aboard the *Francis*. Margaret (King) Pease (following the death of her husband, who was buried 16 Apr 1623), continued to live in Great Baddow before immigrating in 1639 to America with her grandson John. She died in Salem, Essex, Massachusetts, testate; her Will was probated 1 July 1644.³¹⁵

Robert "The Locksmith" Pease Sr. was the son of **John "the Clothier" Pease Jr.**, b. Great Baddow, Essex, England 1540; d. 14 Jan 1616 (age 76); bur. St. Mary's Cemetery.³¹⁶ His father d. 1556, when Robert was only 16 years old, two years before Elizabeth became queen.

John Pease, "the Clothier," m. St. Mary's Church, Great Baddow 23 June 1560 **Margaret (Hyckes)**, b. Great Baddow 1540; d. same 25 Oct 1612; daughter of Richard Hyckes and Emie (Emma) Hyckes. Her father died before she married.³¹⁷

Children:

- i. RICHARD PEASE, b. ca 1563; m. (1) 4 Feb 1590/91 ___Pratt; m. (2) 12 Nov 1604 Susan Wither.
- ii. **ROBERT "THE LOCKSMITH" PEASE**, bapt.1565; d. Great Baddow 16 Apr 1623.
- iii. MARY PEASE, b. ca 1567; m. 1568 Benjamin Carter.
- iv. THOMAS PEASE, b. ca 1569; m. abt. 1609 Sara___.

³¹⁴ <https://minerdescent.com/2010/08/25/robert-pease-sr-great-baddow/>; *Parish registers Great Baddow, Essex, England, Chelmsford District*, 10/5/2020; <https://www.essexarchivesonline.co.uk/Default.aspx> is another searchable site, though membership is required to read many of the documents. 10/5/2020.

³¹⁵ The Essex Institute, 1911-1975, Salem, Massachusetts, *Essex County, Massachusetts Probate Records Supplement 1644-1691, Records and Files of the Quarterly Courts of Essex County, Massachusetts*, Vol 1, 77, 85, 86, (ancestry.com), 10/5/2020; *Essex County, Massachusetts Probate Records 1635-1681*, <online database>, (Provo, Utah, Ancestry.com Operations Inc., 2002), 40-41, has copy of Will and Inventory, 10/5/2020; <https://minerdescent.com/2010/08/25/robert-pease-sr-great-baddow/>, has a reprint of the Will, 10/5/2020; Sidney Perley, *The History of Salem, Massachusetts*, (Salem, Mass., S. Perley, 1924- 28), Vol 1, 370-372 for Pease data, (babel.hathitrust.org), 10/5/2020; *Find A Grave Memorial #65262161*, for Margaret Pease is problematic as it links Margaret Pease with Margaret Weston of Martha's Vineyard, mother-in-law to John Pease of that same locale, 10/5/2020.

³¹⁶ *UK and Ireland, Find a Grave*, Memorial #65249597, buried St. Mary's churchyard, (ancestry.com), 10/5/2020.

³¹⁷ *Church of England Baptisms, Marriages and Burials 1538-1812, Essex, England*, (ancestry.com), *Essex Record Office; Chelmsford, Essex, England, Essex, Church of England Parish Registers, Great Baddow, St Mary the Virgin Parish Records; Select Church of England Parish Registers, 1518-1960*, Essex, England, (ancestry.com), FHL film #001471807; *UK and Ireland, Find a Grave*, Memorial #65251494, (ancestry.com), 10/5/2020.

- v. JOAN PEASE, b. ca 1571.
- vi. ALICE PEASE, b. 1573; m. 16 Apr 1627 John Clarke. Perhaps their daughter was the Miss Clarke, age 15, who accompanied Robert Pease Sr. on the Francis in 1634?
- vii. JOHN PEASE, b. 1575 - 80; bur. Great Baddow 5 Oct 1615.³¹⁸

The Abstracted Will of Richard Hyckes of Great Baddow, 12 December 1558

Towards the mending of the steeple [i.e. tower] these 20s. To "Eme" my wife my household stuff and implements, except 1 featherbed in the parlour, which I will to John Hickes my son. To my wife 10 of the best beasts, a bull and 10 ewes at her choice. To her 5 quarters of good wheat, 5 quarters of oats and 2 quarters of barley, to be delivered by my executors at her dwelling-house in Baddow out of my farm called Sir Hewes during the term of my lease of the farm. To her 10£ in gold and 10£ in money; my better bay mare and all the corn and hay, and all other movables in and about my house that I dwell in. To her my freehold land called Pearke Field and two meadows adjoining (13 acres) now enclosed, for her life; after her death Pske Field and the meadows to John my son. To her 3 acres of meadow in Baddow called Dorans (or Durrans) Hope, for her life; after, to Francis Hickes my son. To her the carriage of 16 loads of wood to be laid where she dwelleth in Baddow. To Francis my tenement and lands in Purleigh held by copy of court roll of the manor of Purleigh. To Margaret Hickes and Dorothy Hickes my daughters 22£ at marriage. To Priscilla Hickes my daughter 40 marks at marriage. To Joan Jurdayne my eldest daughter 10£. To Margery Somme my daughter 10£. To John my son 10£ in gold. To Francis my grey mare called Jugg. To "Sir" Anson my curate of Baddow 10s. To Thomas Hyckes my kinsman 26s. 8d. To Valentine's wife and William's wife each 6s, 8d to Thomas Corne, William Dunton, "Maute" [Mante?] Courteman and Alice Toller each 3s 4d. To Robert Fraunces of London an old angel of gold. To John Oske of Orsett an old angel of gold. My executors shall bestow in penny dole to the poor people at each day of my burial and months' day 40s. over and besides the charges of priests and clerks, which I will shall be honestly done and plenty. My executors at their discretion shall distribute on Good Friday next after my death in the honor and remembrance of Christ's death and passion to the poor people of this parish 13s. 4d. They shall give to 20 of the poorest households 20 bushels of wheat at Christmas next after my death, and shall bestow in penny doles at my year's mind to the poor people besides the priests' and clerks' bread, drink and cheese as aforesaid. To John and Francis equally my lease of Sir Hewes with the profits except as before excepted. The residue of my goods to them equally, whom I make my executors, and Robert Pascall my overseer and for his pains 20s. To each of my three daughters Margaret, Dorothy and Priscilla a farrowable beast when the lease ceases. [No witnesses]."³¹⁹ (*Wills of the County of Essex (England)*, Volume 1, 1558-1565.)

John "The Clothier" Pease Jr. was the son of John "the Smythe" Pease Sr., b. Great Baddow 1510; d. Great Baddow 13 Oct 1556;³²⁰ m. abt. 1553 Anne White, b. abt. 1514; d. Great Baddow 1591; both bur. St. Mary's churchyard.³²¹ He was a blacksmith.

Children of John "the Smyth" Pease Sr. and Anne White³²²:

- i. MARGARET PEASE, b. abt. 1534; m. 23 Jan 1563/64 John Byekinir; d. 1623.
- ii. ROBERT PEASE, b. abt. 1536; d. 26 Apr 1552.

³¹⁸ *Church of England Baptisms, Marriages and Burials 1538-1812, Essex, England*, (ancestry.com), 10/5/2020.

³¹⁹ http://spicerweb.org/Genealogy/Pease/pease_wills.aspx

³²⁰ *UK Extracted Probate Records 1269-1975, Essex, Hertfordshire: Chelmsford Wills, 1400-1619, Index to Wills now preserved in the Essex Record Office Chelmsford 1400-1619*, Vol 4: 1557, Pease, Pease, John, smith, Gt, Baddow 6 ER 8, (ancestry.com), 10/5/2020; *UK and Ireland, Find a Grave, Memorial #65250132*, (ancestry.com), 10/5/2020.

³²¹ *UK and Ireland, Find a Grave, John Pease: Memorial #65250132; Ann Pease: Memorial # 65251260*, maiden name White, d. 1591 Great Baddow, cemetery of St. Mary's, has bio, wife of John Pease, children Robert, Lettis, John and Edward" listed, (ancestry.com), 10/5/2020.

³²² <https://minerdescent.com/2010/08/25/robert-pease-sr-great-baddow/>, 10/5/2020.

- iii. LETTIS PEASE, b. abt. 1538; d. 11 June 1567.
- iv. **JOHN "THE CLOTHIER" PEASE**, b. 1540; d. Nov 1616.
- v. EDWARD PEASE, b. abt. 1542; d. 28 July 1580.
- vi. ALICE PEASE, b. 1544; m. 9 June 1560 John Taft.

I could not find proof of Anne White's parents, though some online trees indicate her father was Richard White, b. Hutton, Essex 1490; d. 1525 and her mother Margaret Strelly, b. Essex 1480.³²³ There may also be a connection to Islington, St. James, Clerkenwell parish about 40/45 miles southeast of Great Baddow. Online trees also indicate his father as Richard White Sr., m. Maud Tyrell. These names need further research.

John "The Smythe" Pease Sr. was the son of **Sir Robert de Pease "the Smythe,"** b. Great Baddow 1485; d. 1547; bur. Great Baddow;³²⁴ m. abt. 1508 **Joan____**, b. Great Baddow abt. 1487/90; d. Great Baddow 25 Feb 1551/52.³²⁵

Children:³²⁶

- i. **JOHN "THE SMYTHE" PEASE**, b. Great Baddow 1510; d. Great Baddow, 1591
- ii. JOAN PEASE, b. abt. 1512; d. 5 Apr 1540.
- iii. MARGARET PEASE, b. abt. 1515; d. 9 Jan 1544/45.

Peases in the Great Baddow parish register (verified):

- Joan Pease; widow late the wife of Robert Pease, bur. 25 Feb 1552.
- Son John Pease, "the Smythe," b. 1510; bur. 13 Oct 1556.
- Daughter Joan Pease, daughter of Robert and Joan, bur. 5 Apr 1540.
- Margaret Pease, daughter of Robert, bur. 9 Jan 1545. I am uncertain of this connection.
- Peter Pease, bur. 22 Aug 1546. He is possibly a child of Robert's, though the name doesn't appear on any lists of children.
- Grandson Robert Pease, son of John the Smythe Sr., bur. 26 Apr 1552.

³²³ UK Extracted Probate Records 1269-1975, Barking, Hertfordshire: Chelmsford Wills, 1400-1619, Index to Wills now preserved in the Essex Record Office Chelmsford 1400-1619: fo. 53, 1538, White, Whyte, Margaret, Barking, 120 ER 6, (ancestry.com), 10/5/2020.

³²⁴ Select Church of England Parish Registers, 1518-1960, Essex, England, FHL film #001471807, Robeart Pease, father John, has a burial date of 26 Apr 1552?, (ancestry.com), 10/5/2020; UK and Ireland, Find a Grave, Memorial #65250248, Robert Pease b. Great Baddow 1485, d. Great Baddow 1547 (age 62), the same year that Henry VIII died, has Bio, spouse Joan (d. 1552), children: Margaret, Joan, John, Peter, (ancestry.com) 10/5/2020; UK Extracted Probate Records 1269-1975, Hatfield, Peverel, Essex, England, Essex, Hertfordshire: Chelmsford Wills, 1400-1619, Index to Wills now preserved in the Essex Record Office Chelmsford 1400-1619, Vol 4, *1547 Pease, Pese, Robert, Hatfield, Peverel 91 BW 28, (Hatfield Peverel is 7 miles NE of Great Baddow), (ancestry.com), 10/5/2020.

³²⁵ Select Church of England Parish Registers, 1518-1960, Essex, England, FHL film #001471807, (ancestry.com), 10/5/2020; UK and Ireland, Find a Grave Index, 1300s-Current, Memorial #65251170, (ancestry.com), 10/5/2020.

³²⁶ <https://minerdescent.com/2010/08/25/robert-pease-sr-great-baddow/>, 10/5/2020.

One additional possible ancestor: Sir Robert de Pease, may have been the son of **Sir Jotham/John de Pease**, 1465 - 1542, Great Baddow; m. 1484 **Lady Florence Reierson**, 1465 – 1541. No proof for either.

The Memorial of Captain Thomas Abbey offers this on the author's opinion on the most famous direct descendant of Captain John Pease (1654 - 1734): Elisha Marshall Pease (1812 – 1883), born in Enfield, he made his way to the far west at a young age and took part with Sam Houston in the revolution which freed Texas from Mexico in 1836. He drafted the constitution and laws of the new republic. After Texas was admitted to the Union, Mr. Pease served for three terms as Governor of the State.

And, as we prepare to study the Goodale Ancestry, *The Memorial of Captain Thomas Abbey* offers this: Noted descendant the Reverend William Goodell D.D. (1792 - 1867), was a missionary to Turkey for over forty years, preached in eight languages and translated the whole Bible into Armeno-Turkish; also, David Harvey Goodell was Governor of the State of New Hampshire.³²⁷

The Goodale/Goodall/Goodell Ancestry Paternal Line

Goodale, Goodell, or Godelle, Goodelle, and even Goodele are spellings of this surname. During the reign of Queen Elizabeth, there was no fixed authority for the spelling of either proper names or surnames; this was also true in early America. The record of Soldiers and Sailors in the Revolution gives no less than sixteen different spellings of the name Goodale, many times concerning the same man in the same document. (I have made some 'corrections' for consistency, using Goodale as my primary spelling.) There are two popular origins of the name:

The Goodell family lived in Yorkshire, which was the largest county in northern England. In the 12th century, this parish was known as Goodale, and meant "nook of land where marigolds grow," from the Old English words "golde" + halh."

Another source claims the name is a metonymic occupational name for a brewer of good ale, deriving from the medieval English "gode" meaning "good" plus "ale."

³²⁷ Freeman, *The Memorial of Captain Thomas Abbey*, 87 (reprint).

Goodale/Goodell is the maiden name of the first wife of John Pease Sr., mother to John Pease Jr., grandmother to Mary Pease, wife of Thomas Abbe of this generation. Most online records, without documentation, place our Goodale ancestors in *Dennington*, Suffolk. *The Tree Dr.* from Ancestry.com disagrees, and her reasoning can be found at *The Tree Dr.* on Ancestry.com³²⁸

Mary Goodale; first wife of **John Pease Sr.**, b. England 5 Jan 1630; daughter of Robert Goodale and Catherine (___), immigrant to the Colonies in 1634 (age 4) from Ipswich, England on the *Elizabeth* with her parents and two younger brothers; m. Salem, Massachusetts 1653 John Pease Sr. (Suffolk is in the far southeast coast of England not far from Ipswich.) Mary (Goodale) Pease, d. Salem 5 Jan 1668/9, three days after the birth of her fifth child.³²⁹

Mary (Goodale) Pease was the daughter of **Robert Goodale**, b. England abt. 1604;³³⁰ d. Salem, Essex, Massachusetts bet. 12 Oct 1682 date of his Will, and 10 Mar 1682/3 date of the Inventory. His Will was probated 24/26 June 1683 in Salem. Text to follow.³³¹

Robert Goodale, m. abt. 1629 (based on the 1630 birth of their first child) (1) Catherine or Katherine (___),³³² b. England abt. 1604/6; d. Salem, Massachusetts aft. Sept 1645, more likely closer to the suggested date of 1666 based on the remarriage of her husband in 1669. She is not seen in New England records, unless she is of the household of seven on 25 Dec 1637, except by implication of the births of her children to 1645.

³²⁸ Personal email with Wendy Mulligan, *The Tree Dr.*, 12/9/2020.

³²⁹ Global, *Find a Grave Index for Burials at Sea and other Select Burial Locations, 1300's – Current*, Memorial #191193268, (ancestry.com), 10/5/2020; *Massachusetts, Town and Vital Records, 1620-1988, Salem, Vital Record Transcripts, Salem Deaths*, (ancestry.com), 10/5/2020; *New England, The Great Migration and the Great Migration Begins, 1620-1635*, Vol 3 G-H, 105 (ancestry.com), 10/5/2020; *North America, Family Histories 1500-2000; Rising Genealogy: descendants of Johnathan Rising of Suffield, Connecticut*, 245, (ancestry.com), 10/5/2020.

³³⁰ John Camden Hotten, *The original lists of persons of quality; emigrants; religious exiles; political rebels; serving men sold for a term of years; apprentices; children stolen; maidens pressed; and others who went from Great Britain to the American Plantations, 1600-1700: with their ages and the names of the ships in which they embarked, and other interesting particulars; from mss. preserved in the State Paper Department of Her Majesty's Public Record Office, England*, (London, Hotten, 1874), 280, (archive.org), 10/5/2020; *New England, The Great Migration and the Great Migration Begins, 1620-1635*, Vol 3 G-H, 101 – 108, (ancestry.com), 10/5/2020.

³³¹ *Essex County, Massachusetts Probate Records Supplement, 1644-1691*; <online database>, (Ancestry.com Operations, Inc., 1998), Melindi Lutz Sanborn, *Records and Files of the Quarterly Courts of Essex County, Massachusetts*, Vol IX, 76, (Salem, Mass., The Essex Institute, 1911-1975), 10/5/2020; *Essex, Massachusetts Probate Records, 1648-1840*, <online database>, (Provo, Utah, Ancestry.com Operations Inc., 1997), File #11137, will extant but not proved, 10/5/2020; *Global, Find a Grave*, (ancestry.com), 10/5/2020.

³³² *US, New England Marriages Prior to 1700*, 309, Goodell Robert (1604) & 1/wf Katherine (?Kilham) 1606; *Dennington, Suffolk...*, (ancestry.com), 10/5/2020.

Catherine/Katherine (___) Pease is frequently, and incorrectly, identified as C/Katherine Killam. The error may have occurred because of a misinterpretation of the Will of Elizabeth Goodale of Dennington, county Suffolk, England 1 March 1601/2. She refers to "Henry Killam and Alice, his wife, my daughter." Henry Kilham, b. 10 Aug 1558; bur. Saint Edmonds, Suffolk; m. his first cousin, Alice Goodell; b. Dennington abt. 1560. Their son Austin Kilham (immigrant), m. 8 Sept 1619, Alice Gorbail. Robert Goodale's daughter, Hannah, married Lott Kilham, Austin Kilham's son, which seems to have added to the confusion. There is no documentation of a daughter named Catherine born to either couple. At this writing, the ancestry of this 9th great grandmother remains unknown.

On 10 April 1634, the ship *Elizabeth* left Ipswich, England, arriving in the Colonies at the port of Boston.

Robert Goodall," aged 30, and "Kathern, his wife," aged 28, were enrolled at for passage to New England on the *Elizabeth* [Hotten 280]. On 30 April 1634, "**Mary Goodale,**" aged 4, "Abraham Goodale," aged 2, and "Isaacke Goodale," aged "half a year," children of "Rob[er]t Goodale," were enrolled at as passengers for New England on the *Elizabeth* [Hotten 282]. Landed Boston in July 1634. (The date of record, in this case, is some six months after the ship departed.)

Alphabetical with age and roll number:

Goodall/Goodale Robert 30, from *Dennington*, Suffolk #37 - from Braxted, Essex, bound for Salem.³³³

Goodall Katherine, twenty-eight, wife of Robert #38

Goodall Mary, four, #98

Goodall Abraham, two, #99 ³³⁴

The ship's "master" was William Andrews. The ship arrived safely at Massachusetts Bay, although some of the persons listed³³⁵ may not have arrived there. Some may have decided not to sail. Some servants may have run away. And there usually was some loss of life among

³³³ <https://www.packrat-pro.com/ships/elizabeth1.htm>, citing Charles Edward Banks, Elijah Ellsworth Brownell, ed., *Topographical Dictionary of 2885 English Emigrants to New England 1620 – 1650*, (Baltimore, Southern Book Company, 1957), 41.

³³⁴ <https://www.geni.com/projects/Great-Migration-Passengers-of-the-Elizabeth-1634-1635/4789>, 10/5/2020; *New England, The Great Migration and the Great Migration Begins, 1620-1635*, Vol 3 G-H, 101 – 108, (ancestry.com), 10/5/2020; <http://www.packrat-pro.com/ships/elizabeth1.htm>, 10/5/2020; *The Planters of the Commonwealth in Massachusetts, 1620-1640, Lists of Passengers and the Ships which Brought Them, 1634*: 123, (ancestry.com), 120, 10/5/2020; Charles Henry Pope, *The Pioneers of Massachusetts, A Descriptive List, Drawn from Records of the Colonies, Towns and Churches, and other Contemporaneous Documents*, (Baltimore, Maryland, Genealogical Publishing Co., Inc., 1998), 191: Robert Goodale ae. 30 with wife Katharine ae 28, Abraham ae 2, Isaac ae 6 month, (no mention of Mary), (books.google.com), 10/5/2020; Virkus, *Immigrant Ancestors*, 33.

³³⁵ The information /names were transcribed in the 19th century by Michael Tepper from records found in London, at Her Majesty's State Papers Office. For each common date of record, groupings of persons in consecutive order in the roll often indicate some relation by kinship, household or town origin. Either the persons were present in person before the scribe at that time and queued up naturally to enroll, or the documents of fealty arrived to him from particular sources and were registered in order as received; <https://www.geni.com/projects/Great-Migration-Passengers-of-the-Elizabeth-1634-1635/4789>, 10/5/2020.

the passengers from disease and malnutrition during the passage. Both the master and ship are known to have made subsequent trips, although no record, other than the departure, of this particular voyage remains.

There were a few key factors that caused so many of our ancestors to leave East Anglia, or the East of England, primarily the counties of Norfolk, Suffolk, and Cambridgeshire. The region had been England's economic powerhouse, but an economic depression hit hard in the first half of the 1600s. Perhaps not coincidentally, the Puritan movement developed deep roots in East Anglia and its bordering counties. The Church of England eventually tired of this and helped drive the militants to the new world.

Oath of Allegiance and Supremacy

As emigration increased, concern escalated within the English monarchy about their ability to control populations far from their shores. In May 1630, King Charles reaffirmed the earlier decree of his father, James I, forbidding people, including "Souldiers, Marchants, Marryners, and their factors and Apprentices," to leave England freely for a foreign port. He appointed commissioners of various English ports to administer an oath to all people, including women and children, who left for anywhere. America was but one possible destination.

The Oath required people to "truly and sincerely acknowledge, profess, testifie and declare in their Conscience before God and the World, that 'our Sovereign Lord King Charles is the lawful and rightful King...' and that ... 'The Pope... has no power or authority...' The Oath continues for several more paragraphs. and

Archbishop Laud sought to ensure the conformity of church members, and a December 1634 decree directed that all subjects bound for the plantations from the port of London were to present proof that they did not owe taxes. Emigrants below the rank of subsidy men were required to provide letters from the justices of their parish certifying that they had taken the Oath of Allegiance and Supremacy, and from their local clergyman certifying they were members of the church in good standing.

These records are an invaluable historical document, recording the aspiration of merchants, ministers, servants, clothworkers, and mariners and setting overseas migrations in the context of English military activity, financial expansion, and a range of overseas enterprises.

Alison Games, *The English Atlantic World: A View from London*, *Pennsylvania History: A Journal of Mid-Atlantic Studies*, vol. 64: 46-72, 1997, JSTOR, www.jstor.org/stable/27774052, 16 Feb 2021; the Oath can be found on quod.liv.umich.edu.

On 4 February 1634, Henry Dade writes from Ipswich, England to William Laud, Archbishop of Canterbury that the *Francis* and the *Elizabeth*, with sixty men in each, intend to sail for New England on about 10 Mar, and he supposes they are debtors or persons disaffected with the established church. These ships and nine others bound for New England were stayed, but on

28 February 1634, allowed to proceed on condition that the passengers took the Oath of Allegiance³³⁶. They took the *Oath of Allegiance and Supremacy* at his Majesties Customs House on 12 November 1634 at Ipswich, Massachusetts.³³⁷ This allowed them to legally leave the shores of England.

Children of Robert and Catherine (___) Goodale:³³⁸

- i. **MARY GOODALE**, b. England abt. 1630; arrived 1634 (age 4); m. by 1654 **John Pease Jr. (Capt.)** (eldest known child b. Salem 20 May 1654); d. Salem, Massachusetts 5 Jan 1668/69.
- ii. **ABRAHAM GOODALE**, b. England 1632; arrived in 1634 (age 2); d. Salem Village abt. 1635. Some mistakenly have him m. Hannah Rhodes; that is an Abraham Goodell, b. 1712.
- iii. **ISAAC GOODALE**, b. England Nov 1633; arrived 1634 (age 'half a year'); d. Massachusetts 1679; m. Salem 25 Jan 1668/69 Patience Cook, b. 1635, daughter of John and Mary (Roote) Cook; d. Salem, 1699; m. (2) James Stimson. Note: Isaac had a son: Isaac, b. 29 Mar 1670; m. 31 Dec 1692 Mary Abbe. As he called John Abbe Jr., 'Uncle,' it is probable that she was the daughter of John's brother Samuel Abbe of Salem, a close neighbor of the Goodales. On 12 June 1693, Isaac Jr. was appointed administrator of his father's estate after the death of his uncle Captain John Pease Jr. Isaac occupied his father's house and farm after his death.
- iv. **NEHEMIAH GOODALE**, b. Salem 30 May 1636; d. Lynn, Essex County, Massachusetts Dec 1726; m. Lynn 30 July 1673 Hannah Haven, b. Lynn 22 Feb 1646, daughter of Richard and Susanna (Newhall) Haven; d. 1 Jan 1727.
- v. **ELIZABETH GOODALE** (possible twin), b. Salem 11 Oct 1638; d. Salem 6 May 1672; m. Salem 1657 (1) John Smith, b. possibly Edgartown, Dukes, Massachusetts, abt. 1645, son of Richard and Mary (Weed) Smith. It seems probable that after she married Smith, they lived with her father, and Smith helped with the management of the farm. Evidence in a 1672 case brought by the wife of Zachariah Goodale (also named Elizabeth) seems to indicate that the marriage was not an especially happy one. Elizabeth, m. (2) Salem 6 Mar 1674/5 Henry Bennett, b. abt. 1635, son of Peter and Elizabeth (Fielder) Bennett; d. Salem 1692. Marriage records published by the court have the groom's name as William, but in deeds (which may be more reliable), he is called Henry.

³³⁶ <https://www.geni.com/projects/Great-Migration-Passengers-of-the-Elizabeth-1634-1635/4789> citing Peter Wilson Coldham (British genealogist and distinguished scholar of Colonial American immigration), *The Complete Book of emigrants 1607 - 1660*, (Genealogical Publishing Co., 1988), 111, (books.google.com).

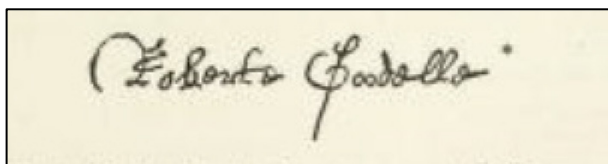
³³⁷ <http://www.olivetreegenealogy.com/ships/elizabeth1634.shtml>, 10/5/2020.

³³⁸ Walter Goodwin Davis, *The Ancestry of Lydia Harmon*, (Boston, Stanhope Press 1924), 33-36, (archive.org), 10/5/2020; New England, *The Great Migration and the Great Migration Begins, 1620-1635*, Vol 3 G-H, 101 – 108, (ancestry.com), 10/5/2020; Perley, *The History of Salem, Massachusetts*, Vol 1, 246, (babel.hathitrust.org), 10/5/2020. Charles Henry Pope, *The Pioneers of Massachusetts...*, 191, (archive.org), 9/21/2020. Note: Several online trees try to include various twin's born to Robert and Catherine, but only list one of a pair, names include Richard and Charity. More accurate records do not list these children.

- vi. SARAH GOODALE, b. Salem, Essex, Massachusetts ca. 1638 - 1644; d. 22 Mar 1729/30; m. Wenham, Essex, Massachusetts 4 May 1666, as his second wife, John Batchelder, bapt. First Church at Salem, 20 Jan 1638; son of Joseph Batchelder of Wenham and Elizabeth (Dickenson) Batchelder; d. 17 Nov 1698; m. (1) 12 July 1661 Mary Denis. Batchelder was one of the witchcraft juries in 1692.
- vii. ZACHARIAH GOODALE, b./bapt. Salem 31 May 1640; d. Salem 30 June 1715; m. Salem 31 Dec 1666 Elizabeth Beauchamp, b. Salem 23 July 1646, daughter of Edward and Mary (Metcalf) Beauchamp; d. Salem 1682.
- viii. JACOB GOODALE, b./bapt. Salem bef. 9 Jan 1642; d. Salem Village, Massachusetts 1676, after being severely beaten by Giles Corey. There are court records regarding Jacob and a suggestion he was mentally incapacitated.
- ix. HANNAH GOODALE, b./bapt. Salem 6 Aug 1645; d. Salem 1677; m. Wenham 22 May 1666 Lot Kilham, b. Salem 11 July 1642, son of Austen Kilham who emigrated in 1637 and Alice (Gorball) Kilham; grandson of Henry and Alice (Goodale) Kilham of Dennington, Suffolk, England; d. Enfield, Hartford, Massachusetts (later Connecticut) 26 Oct 1683. In Sept 1684, John Pease was appointed administrator of the estate of Lot Kilham, a fellow townsman of Salem, and one of the first persons it is said to have died in the new settlement of Enfield, Connecticut.

Robert Goodale was an interesting character, who did not fully participate in his community, but who, throughout the half a century of residence in Salem, pursued a single goal with great determination. He seems to have devoted his life to developing his extensive lands for the benefit of his sons and daughters. As they married, he gave generous acreages as wedding gifts, thus creating a family homestead settlement. So far as we can tell, Robert was never a church member, though, in 1670, the people of Salem petitioned for a church of their own, and Robert Goodell's signature is on that document.

He was never a freeman and never an officeholder. His firm, precise handwriting, noted by his signature on his deeds, would indicate a good education. Still, he took no part in governmental affairs, and his name seldom appears in the records in any capacity except as the plaintiff or defendant in suits based on the ownership of his land and stock.³³⁹



Essex Quarterly Court Record
Vol VII: 294

³³⁹ *New England, The Great Migration and the Great Migration Begins 1620-1635*, Vol 3 G-H, 101 – 108, (ancestry.com), 10/5/2020.

Notes on the Children of Robert Goodale

Elizabeth (Beauchamp) Goodale, the wife of Zachariah Goodale, let slip to a few of her friends that brother John (John Smith, husband of her sister-in-law Elizabeth Goodale) had made some inappropriate advances to her. A secret has no value unless shared! When brother John learned through the grapevine that his sister-in-law was saying less than complimentary things about him, he sued her for slander in the 1672 Salem Quarterly Court. From the looks of the court records, the whole neighborhood got involved, and Smith was found guilty of a countercharge filed by Elizabeth Goodell. His sentence was a fine and a whipping. When his friends promised to pay his fines, the whipping was dropped. Plaintiff's plea: that he objects to the defendant saying that she kept the alleged abuses, private for years and would never have revealed them but to save herself from damage against her in court.

On 15 March 1660, John Goodall sold 50 acres to Giles Corey. Jacob Goodale, age 34, not of "entirely of normal mentality," was employed by Corey. In a 1675 quarrel with Mr. Corey, Jacob was so severely beaten that he died. According to a coroner's jury, he was "bruised to death, with clodders of blood about the heart caused by the blows." Corey's punishment was a fine.

In 1692, Corey and five other men, were charged with witchcraft. The murder of Jacob came back to haunt him during his trial. Refusing to plead, Corey was crushed to death when the tribunal ordered heavy stones laid on his body over two days. Jacob is featured as a ghost (named Robert) in Longfellow's drama, *The New England Tragedies* (1868), appearing to Corey from time to time, crying out about his murder.

"Look! Look! It is the ghost of Robert Goodell,
Whom fifteen years ago this man did murder,
By stamping on his body! In his shroud
He comes here to bear witness to this crime."

Longfellow's use of the name of Robert Goodell, the father, in the place of that of Jacob Goodell the son, was poetic license.

Another, far more descriptive, account of the beating/murder of Jacob Goodell, can be found in George E. Williams, *Descendants of Robert Goodale/Goodell*, (1984), 10-11:

It seems Jacob had taken some apples from the cellar of his brother Zechariah and Zechariah had "pade him som purpos," (beat him with a stick for stealing). That same day, or a few days later, Giles Cory beat Jacob, with nearly 100 blows, in the presence of Elisha Kebee.

Personal email (summer 2019) from Maise Crowther, another Goodale descendant, whose father moved the Goodale house to Ipswich.

Henry Wadsworth Longfellow, *The New England Tragedies*, (Boston, Ticknor and Fields, 1868).

Isaac Goodell, *The Goodell Memorial Tablets*, 1892, 8-9, found at Peabody Essex Reading Room, summer 2019;

<https://minerdescent.com/2010/08/25/robert-goodale/> "The Ancestry of Lydia Harmon": vii;

<https://salemwitchmuseum.com/locations/giles-and-martha-corey-home-site-of/>

The first record of the Goodells in America (at Salem) indicated that they settled at Great Cove in the North Fields. This Spring, so often mentioned in the early records in what was later called Liberty Hill Park, was on Robert Goodell's farm and was known for the first half-century of Salem's history as *Goodell's Spring*.³⁴⁰ One source states that in 1634 Robert Goodell received a grant of 40 acres from Salem, supposed to have been in the northwest portion of what is now the town of Danvers, situated between the Ipswich River, the Reading road and the Newburyport Turnpike³⁴¹. If his lands were in the far southeast corner of that allotment, then they do coincide with the lands once known as Liberty Hill Park. There are records in the 25 December 1637 division of marsh and meadow in Salem: Robert Goodell received one (1) acre for a household of seven. The land was in the field, northeasterly of Cold Spring, in North Salem.³⁴²

Goodale's Spring

Before my June 2019 trip to the East coast, I spent some time researching Goodale's Spring and Liberty Hill Park without success. At the Peabody-Essex Museum, Phillips Library reading room in Rowley, Massachusetts, I requested a map of the North Fields area of Salem. On that map, I located Liberty Hill Road, which formed the western boundary of a large cemetery. In the north of Greenlawn cemetery was a large pond with a spring-fed fountain! Another "eureka" moment of my adventure. I then made the drive to Salem and visited Greenlawn, which began as a cemetery in 1807. In the 1880s, a major redesign brought it into the then-popular rural cemetery style, with winding lanes and landscaping. Today, within its approximately 55 acres, more than 200 species of trees thrive.

North Salem, once called the North Fields, is the city's oldest neighborhood. The bottom of Liberty Hill Avenue was the site of Cold Spring. This spring was a popular source of freshwater for local inhabitants until recent years. It was also a favorite stopping place for Nathaniel Hawthorne, a one-time Dearborn Street resident, on his rambles around Salem. The land on which the spring existed had been the property of Robert Goodell.

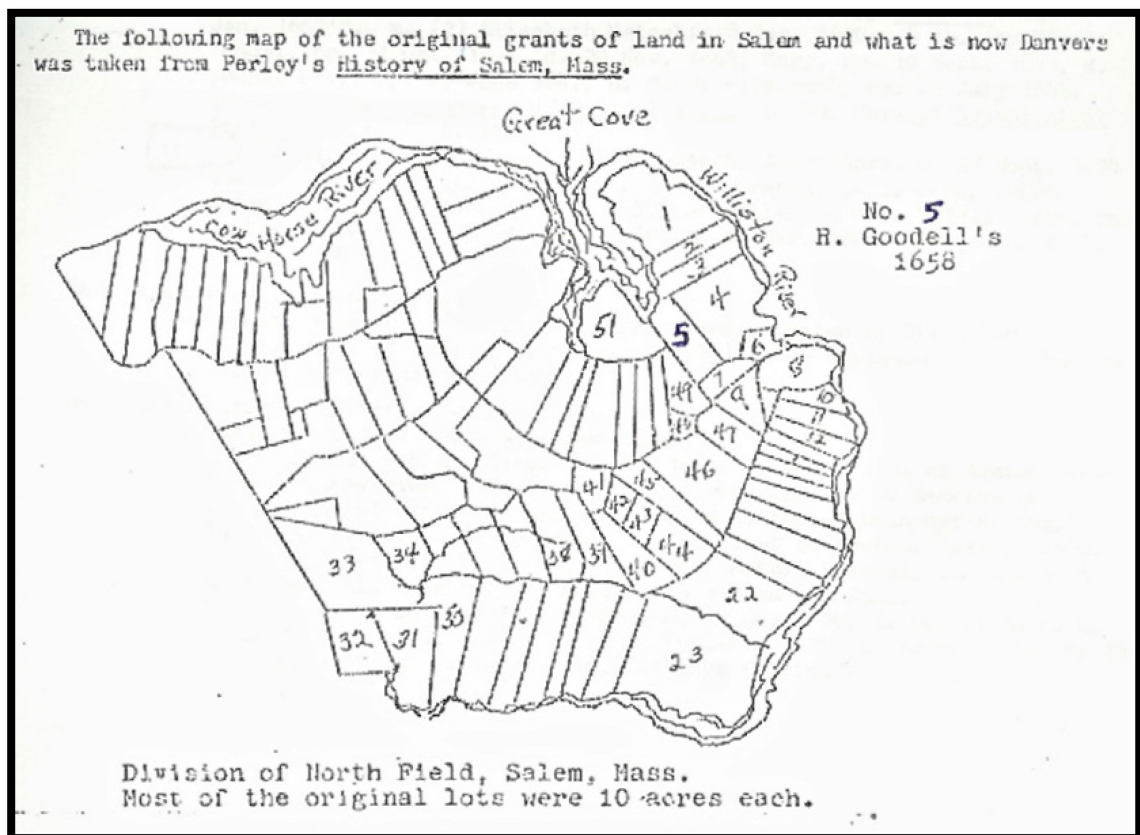
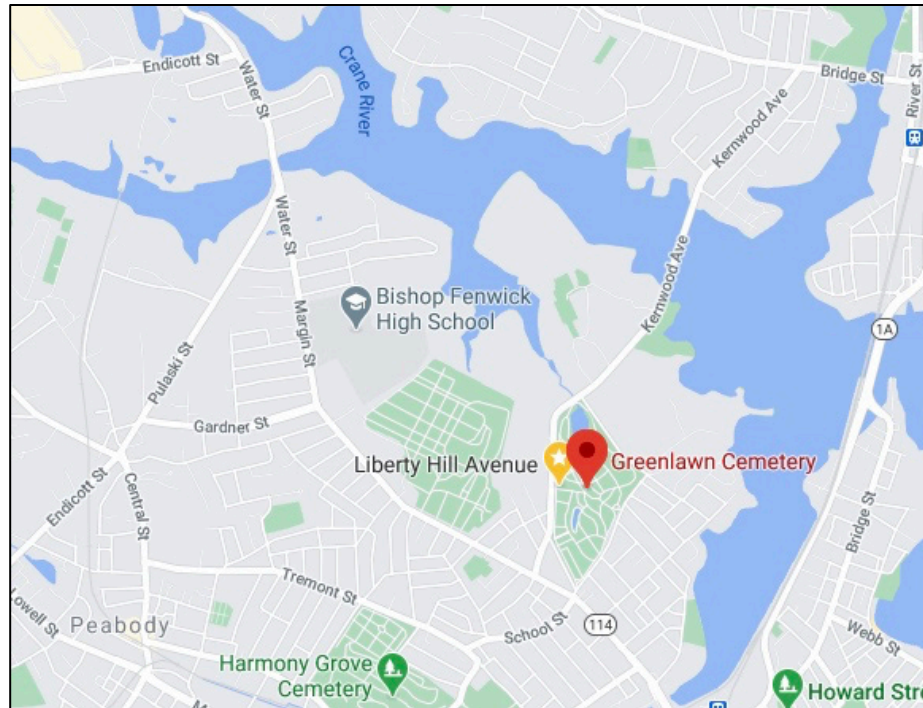
Robert Goodell sometime of Salem, planter, sold to "Mr. George Corwin of the same town, merchant, on 20 December 1662, a piece of sale marsh containing by estimation two acres in Salem aforesaid at the upper end of a placed called the Great Cove, having a spring of water in it with a small parcel of meadow. Liberty Hill Avenue on Google Maps would have saved me time, but wouldn't have been nearly as much fun!

maps.google.com; <https://minerdescent.com>

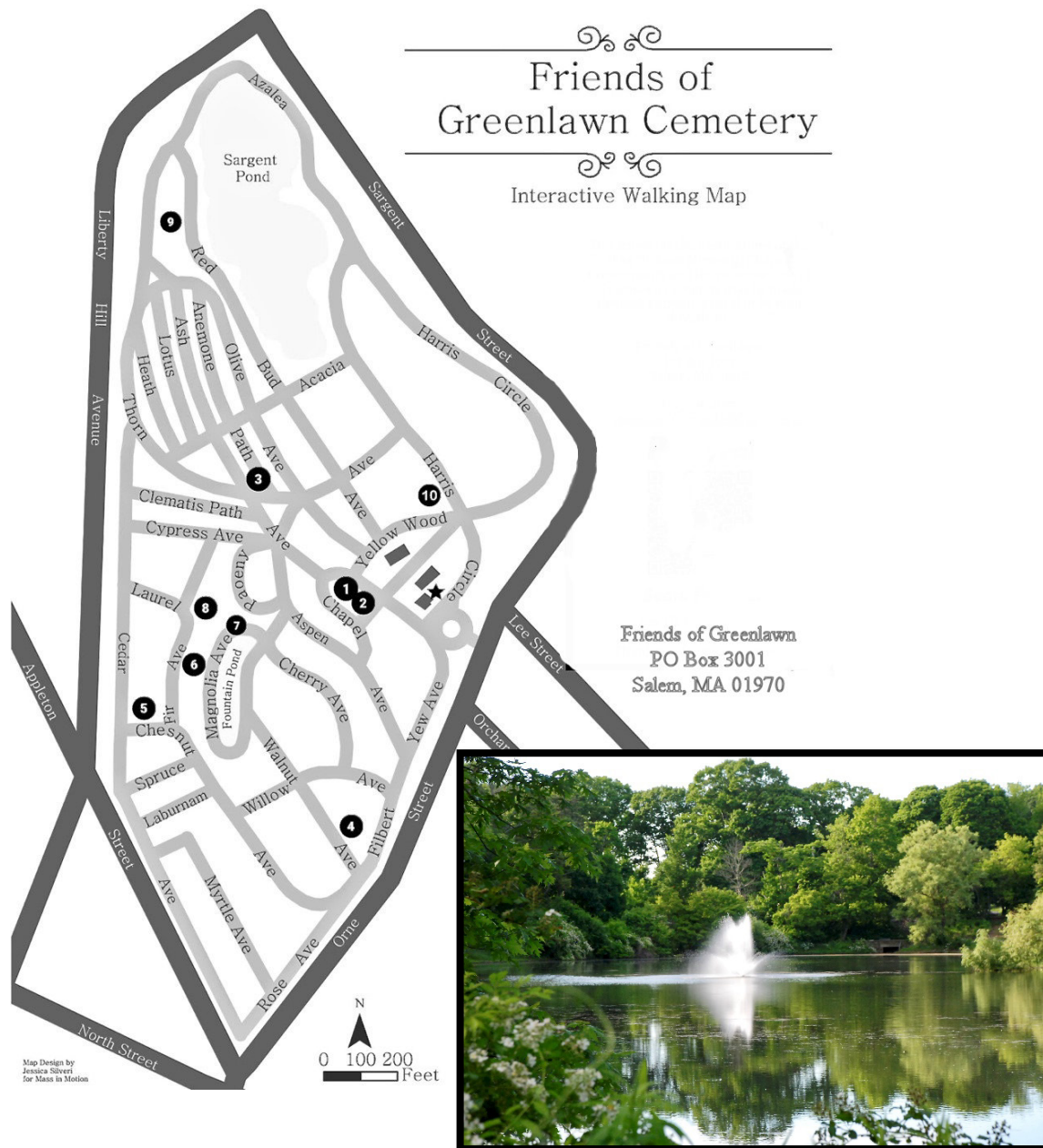
³⁴⁰ George E. Williams, *A Genealogy of the Descendants of Robert Goodale/Goodell of Salem, Mass.*, (West Hartford, Conn., GE Williams, 1984) 5, (archive.org), 10/5/2020.

³⁴¹ Isaac Goodell, *Goodell Memorial Tables*, (Fort Worth, Texas, CO Hervey & Co, 1892) 7, found at Peabody Essex Museum, Phillips Reading Room, summer 2019.

³⁴² <https://minerdescent.com/2012/01/28/division-of-north-field-salem-mass/>, 10/5/2020.



<https://minerdescent.com/2012/01/28/division-of-north-field-salem-mass/>



For additional information please see the cemetery's website – friendsofgreenlawn.org

In 1636 and 1638, Robert Goodale received grants of twenty (20) acres each in that portion of the town, which became known as Salem Village. He gradually acquired by similar purchase, grants made to other early settlers, until by 1651, he was the owner of a tract of land at Bald Hill comprising four hundred and eighty (480) acres. This property was confirmed to him by a town grant on 7 November 1651. He probably moved to this new property at about that time, and, as opportunity offered, disposed of his Great Cove farm, deeding the house and a portion of the land to his son-in-law, John Smith in 1658. He conveyed another lot to Nicholas Manning in 1667, and a third conveyance was probably made to John Orne, who owned a part of the property, hitherto unconveyed in 1684.³⁴³

On 27 December 1642, Robert Goodell was one of twelve men "presented for breaking an order of the court by keeping their cattle in the common cornfields" and fined for this infraction. Similar offenses, on other occasions, brought him more fines. (Essex Quarterly Courts/EQC 1:49; 1:56). On 27 August 1644, Robert Goodell was also fined for "suffering his goat to go in his neighbor's cornfield." (EQC 1:69).

On 18 February 1645/46, a neighbor, Myghel Sollis, accused him of stealing four goats. Sollis had lost one old and three young goats, and finding such, with his mark on them, in the custody of Goodall, the latter promised to return them. When Sollis went for them, Goodall said that he had killed one, and the rest were lost. Quit for lack of testimony." (EQC 1:91) On 11 July 1644, Robert Goodell complained of Ruben Guppy for rent and burning fence. (EQC 1:68). He may be the same Rueben Guppi/Guppy, who stole Robert Peases' axe.

Court records reveal that Ruben, who lived in the Western end of Salem, near the North River, had quite a few problems:

Ruben Guppi to be severely whipped 'for running away to the Eastward from his wyfe great with Childe; for stealing & Blasfemie Lying & swearing etc.,' on complaint of Wm. Vincent. Robt. Pease complained that Guppi had stolen his axe. Sergeant Dixie had seen a hen in Guppi's breeches. Samuel ffuller and Robt ffuller testified that they went to Guppi's house (to determine why he was not in church), and Guppi said that 'the parings of his nails and a chip were as acceptable to God as the day of thanksgiving.' He also Swore."³⁴⁴

Anderson's, *The Great Migration Begins: Immigrants to New England, 1620-1633*, Vol 3 G-H, 103-108, readily available at various libraries and on ancestry.com, has myriad listings of land transactions, purchases, and sales made by Robert Goodale during the years between 1644 and 1667/8. I have chosen not to list them all.

³⁴³ Williams, *A genealogy of the descendants of Robert Goodale/Goodell of Salem, Mass.*, 5, (archive.org), 10/5/2020.

³⁴⁴ *The Essex Antiquarian*, Vol 3 (1899): 191, from *Salem Quarterly Court Records*, date written "30: 1: 1641."

On 10 February 1667/68, Robert Goodell of Salem deeded to “my son Isaack Goodell of the place aforesaid, one hundred acres of upland near the river commonly called the Great River & seven acres of fresh meadow lying almost in a triangle.” And in 1668, Robert built a house in Salem for Isaac. The Goodale family has lived in this house from that time, except for a decade or so in the early 1900s, and in more recent years. The timber frame saltbox is one of the best-preserved examples of a first-period house in New England. It is listed on the National Register of Historic Places. A family buyer moved the house in about 1928 to Ipswich, where it sits on 41 acres with rolling meadows bordered by woods that sweep down to the Great Marsh, the largest salt marsh in New England with a view of Hog or Choate Island beyond.

After the death of his first wife Catherine (___) Goodale, possibly 10 Sept 1666, Robert Goodale, m. (2) 30 Aug 1669 Margaret Lazenby, b. 1614; d. Salem, Essex, Massachusetts 1683. No children of this marriage.³⁴⁵ When they married, he entered into this agreement:

Robert Goodell have made the choice of & by God's permission do fully intend to take to my wife Margaret Lazenby, late of Exeter in New England (& the which being done), I the said Robert do hereby covenant & promise to & with the said Margaret, that in case she outlives me, to give & bequeath unto her for her comfortable maintenance ... a new dwelling house which I do intend God willing shortly to build, with what household stuff therein God shall please to continue unto me until my death; item: two cows & a horse or mare fit for her to ride on, also my whole orchard upon my farm near my dwelling house at Bald Hill, with six acres of the planting ground upon which the said orchard stands, the best of the said ground & four acres of meadow ground near to my said orchard with a pasture plot of about two acres fenced in near to my said house & orchard & also that she shall have a competency of firewood & timber for her use ... & after her decease ... shall fall to my son Jacob Goodell ... [and] in case she outlive my said son Jacob that then she shall have & enjoy for her use & benefit that part of my estate which I shall & do intend to leave unto my said son Jacob, during her life.³⁴⁶

Two additional court cases make note of Robert Goodell:

- 27 June 1671, Robert Goodell sued Gartrid Pope for withholding or “molesting, mowing, and carrying away” the hay on a parcel of meadow. The suit was later withdrawn. (EQC 4:384)
- 7 November 1682, John Pease Sr., aged about 53 years, “saith that in his knowledge the land that my father-in-law Goodell sold to his son in law John Smith was laid out by my father Goodale order and appointment several years before the land my father gave to his son Isaac Goodall.”

On 4/14 April 1683 at Salem, Robert Goodale died.

³⁴⁵ *New England, The Great Migration and the Great Migration Begins, 1620-1635*, Vol 3 G-H, 105, (ancestry.com), 10/5/2020; *U.S., New England Marriages Prior to 1700, Third Torrey Supplement*, 114, (ancestry.com), 10/5/2020.

³⁴⁶ *New England, The Great Migration and the Great Migration Begins, 1620-1635*, Vol 3 G-H, 105, (ancestry.com), 10/5/2020; *The ancestry of Lydia Harmon, 1755-1836: wife of Joseph Waterhouse of Standish, Maine, Section III Goodale, of Salem and Wells*, 33-36, <online database>, (Provo, Utah, Ancestry.com Operations Inc, 2005), 10/5/2020.

**The Will of Robert Goodell/Goodale
dated 12 October 1682 - probated 24 June 1683, Salem**

I, Robert Goodell being now aged & weak, in body as also my wife and my daughter Elizabeth Bennett, hath taken care of me and therefore my will & desire is & I do will & bequeath unto my daughter Elizabeth Bennet & my grandchild, John Smith, my house & the orchard & all the meadows that I now possess with the pasture which is about eight acres of upland be more or less, all which house land & meadows my daughter Elizabeth Bennett, and my grandchild John Smith, shall enjoy after the lease, or term, that it is now let for, is expired, they or either of them paying as much rent, yearly which is to the value of twenty shillings in current pay, dated the twelfth of October one thousand six hundred eighty-two; & after my daughter Elizabeth's decease, the whole lands shall be my grandchild's, John Smith. In witness whereof, I have hereunto set my hand & seal." Robert Goodell, his mark. Francis Skerry and Joh. Massey witnessed his Will on 23 June 1683.

The Inventory of the estate of the "later deceased Robert Goodale taken 10 March 1682/3 totaled 79£, 16s of which 71£ was real estate. Two Cows: 5£, 15s; wearing apparel, bedding, and other lumber: 3£, 1s, signed Nathaniel Putnam, and Job Swinerton³⁴⁷

Francis Skerry and John Massey who are entered as witness to the above written made oath in court at Salem that in their presence the said Robert did sign and seal the above written his act and deed, and Last Will and Testament, 27 June 1683, attests Hilliard Veren, Cleric. ³⁴⁸

We whose names are underwritten being desired by the widow Margaret Goodell wife of the late deceased Robert Goodale to apprise the estate of the said deceased Robert Goodell apprised as followeth:

It. the house, upland orchard and meadow	71£
It. the... wearing apparell, bed	5 15 0
... and other lumber	<u>3 1 0</u>
Total	79 16 0

Salem the 10th day of March 1682/3
Nathaniel Putnam
Job Swinnorten

A disbursement, or account, which I, Zachariah Goodell, have been at on my father Robert Goodale deceased:

Item of finding of wood about 3 year	4 10 0
Item for wintering of 2 caves, cows? At 2£	2 0 0
Item one note that I paid at 12£	0 12 0
Item fetching a load of clay and mending the chimney	0 6 0
It. for fencing timber with my time and labour setting the same	0 10 0
It for two pigs or small swine	0 7 0
It. for funeral charges	<u>? 0 0</u>
Total	9? 5 0

Margaret Goodale of Salem sold to the town on 23 February 1684:

My whole orchard with six acres of planting ground upon which the orchard stands and two acres of ground for a pasture near to the said orchard and also one

³⁴⁷ *The Ancestry of Lydia Harmon, 1755-1836: wife of Joseph Waterhouse of Standish, Maine, Section III Goodale, of Salem and Wells, 34, (ancestry.com), 10/5/2020.*

³⁴⁸ *Probate records 1672 – 1692, 26 June 1683, Essex, Mass., (ancestry.com) 11/20/2020; Americanancestors.org – documents missing. What I've copied below is from a transcription found on Ancestry. Even so, some of the words and numbers are illegible.*

cow, all of which was given me by my husband Robert Goodale deceased, for my comfortable subsistence after his decease as by deed of gift, bearing the date 13 August 1669. The Goodell family lived in Salem for two generations and then began to spread out and find homes in other areas of New England.³⁴⁹

There has been much speculation as to who Robert's parents were, but there is no proof of their identity. George E. Williams' *A Genealogy of the Descendants of Robert Goodale/Goodell of Salem, Massachusetts*, states the immigrant Robert Goodell was the son of Robert Goodell and Joan Artys, b. Dennington, Suffolk County, England 1601; bapt. 15 Aug 1601.³⁵⁰ Anderson, in *The Great Migration* Vol 3:101-108, states that Williams relies "overmuch on tradition and speculation," noting there is a baptism of another Robert Goodall, 17 March 1611, son of Thomas Goodall. He also reminds us widow Elizabeth Goodale had a son Robert. Anderson indicates that further examination of the Dennington records and other surrounds may offer more clarity. However, since the 1996 publication of his works, there have been no new, documented findings.

In the line of speculation and tradition, Robert Goodale, husband of Joan Artys, may have been a small landed proprietor and cultivator, employing his capital and labor in various modes which grew out of the occupation of lands." Or, according to the geni.com site for Robert Goodale of Dennington, he may have made his first appearance as an actor with William Shakespeare in *Henry VI*, preformed before Queen Elizabeth in 1589.

The Boston Transcript No. 9830 states that Robert Goodall brought to America (1634) the arms granted Thomas Goodall of Earle-Stoneham. Earle-Stoneham is a small village and civil parish, formerly called Stonham Earl, in the mid-Suffolk district of Suffolk County, England. It is twenty-two miles southwest of Dennington.³⁵¹

On March 1, 1612, arms were granted to Thomas Goodall of Earle-Stoneham, as follows:

Arms: Gules, an eagle displayed Argent, beaked and membered Or, on a canton of the last a Chaplet Gramine Vert. Crest: On a wreath, an eagle displayed Argent beaked and membered Or and gorged with a chaplet Gramine Vert.³⁵²



³⁴⁹ *Massachusetts, U.S. Wills and Probate Records, 1672-1691*, 428 (online database>, (Ancestry.com Operations Inc., 2015), 4/9/2021.

³⁵⁰ *England: Births and Christenings, 1538-1975*, <online database>, (AmericanAncestors.org, New England Historic Genealogical Society, 2014) Original index: *England Births and Christenings, 1538-1975*, (FamilySearch, 2014), Film #993242, pg. #36071145, (no image), 10/5/2020.

³⁵¹ I have been unable to locate the original document for this citation. *The Boston Transcript* has not been fully digitized and those portions that have been are browsable, not searchable.

³⁵² http://www.wiggo.com/personal/genealogy/goodale_book/goodale_book.htm, 10/5/2020.

The Coat of Arms lends credence to the speculation that our Robert Goodall may have been the son of, or at the very least, related to Thomas Goodall of Earl Stonham. Perhaps a search of the records in that locale might bring new information to light. Earlier generations of Goodells may have been French Huguenots who emigrated to London in the 1530s.

The Goodale House, Ipswich, Massachusetts

The Goodale house was built in 1668 by Robert Goodall and deeded to his son Isaac Goodale whose descendants remained in the house until 1915, when it was sold, for reasons unknown. Three different owners occupied the place over the next several years, but when it was put up for sale again in 1928, Dr. Robert Goodale, a Boston physician and a direct descendent of Isaac's brother Zachariah, was interested. "He went right out to look at the house, bringing a building inspector with him," said Maisie Crowther (then 72), the youngest child of Dr. Goodale, who now lives in Brattleboro, Vermont. "He and my mother decided to buy it then and there. They wanted to bring it back into the family. They wanted to preserve it."

The sale price was \$5,000, and Dr. Goodale planned to have the house moved from Salem to Ipswich, where it would be a summer haven for his family. Dr. Goodale's father, Joseph, owned a commercial orchard on Argilla Road, and gave him 41 acres at the end of the narrow dirt lane. The original plan was to move the house intact, on rollers, along Route 1 to Ipswich, but that proved not possible. "So, they had to dismantle the house piece by piece to transport it. It was rebuilt exactly to the original specs and with the same materials."

A few of the home's original 17th century narrow casement windows with diamond-shaped leaded panes were found in the basement, and the Goodale family restored them. They had replicas commissioned for the rest of the house. During reassembly, they also exposed the original raised paneling and returned the openings of four massive fireplaces to their original size – nearly 6 feet long and 4 feet high.

After nearly 340 years of ownership, the Goodale family put the place on the market in 2009 for \$1.39 million, hoping to attract a buyer who will respect the storied structure's origins.

As I prepared for my 2019 trip, I googled the Isaac Goodale house at 141 Argilla Road and sent a snail mail letter to that address, stating I was a descendant and asking if I might visit. Julie Nelson, who currently lives at 141, responded. She told me the house numbers were changed when 911 began, and 141 was no longer the Goodale house. It was a happy mistake! Julie is a realtor and sent me photos of the Goodale house, exterior, and interior, from two different sale dates, including one just a few months before. I also contacted Miranda Russell, one of the owners of the Russell Orchards Farm Store and Winery at 143 Argilla Road. Argilla Road runs through their property, back around the barn and past several homes to the Goodale House at

the end of the lane. I wanted to be sure I would have access. Miranda reached out to the new owner on my behalf.

On the day of my visit, I connected with both women before driving the lane down to the Goodale House, which was only barely visible through the trees. Sadly, the new owners were unwelcoming and my request to take exterior photographs was denied. I returned to the Russell Orchard Barn, where Miranda shared my disappointment. I then stopped at Julie's home down the road. She suggested we visit Crane Beach (a 4-mile-long sandy beachfront, and dunes, which is a protected nesting site for piping plovers). We drove, top-down in her convertible, walked the boardwalk to the beach so I could run bare feet through the sand, then we headed up to Castle Hill.

The Crane Mansion sits atop a 165-acre drumlin surrounded by sea and salt marsh, part of the 2,100-acre Crane Estate. As we walked the grounds, Julie met one of the trustees who let us inside this magnificent home. Don't tell anyone, but we climbed up into the rooftop cupola. It would be fun to take a yoga class here! The panoramic view was magnificent. The 2018/9 movie *Little Women* offers a glimpse of the estate from the waterside.



Author and Julie Nelson in the cupola



View of the Crane Mansion from the Ocean Side

When I returned to my room at Shea's Riverside Inn in Essex, I had a delightful conversation with Maise, Dr. Goodale's daughter. Having grown up in the home, she later sent me marvelous interior photos. She was then an 84-year-old delight, and I'm thankful we connected even if only by phone and email. I mentioned my lack of success in visiting the house to a waiter that evening, and he said, "the house at the end of Argilla Road?" "Yes." It turned out he had been good friends with the young man whose family had lived in the house between Maise and the current owner! I may not have seen inside the house or the grounds, yet generous people, who shared my enthusiasm for history and family connections, filled my day.

The Isaac Goodale House



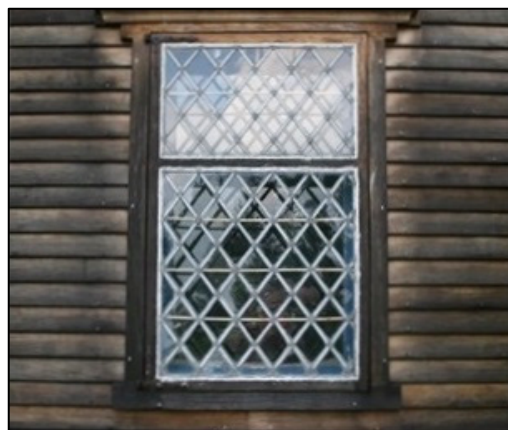
Detail of underlying stone wall and plaque



The Restored Barn



Diamond lead paned windows
HistoricIpswich.org





Fireplaces and Raised Paneling
Left - courtesy Julie Nelson
Right - courtesy Maise Crowther



Vintage photos courtesy Maise Goodale Crowther



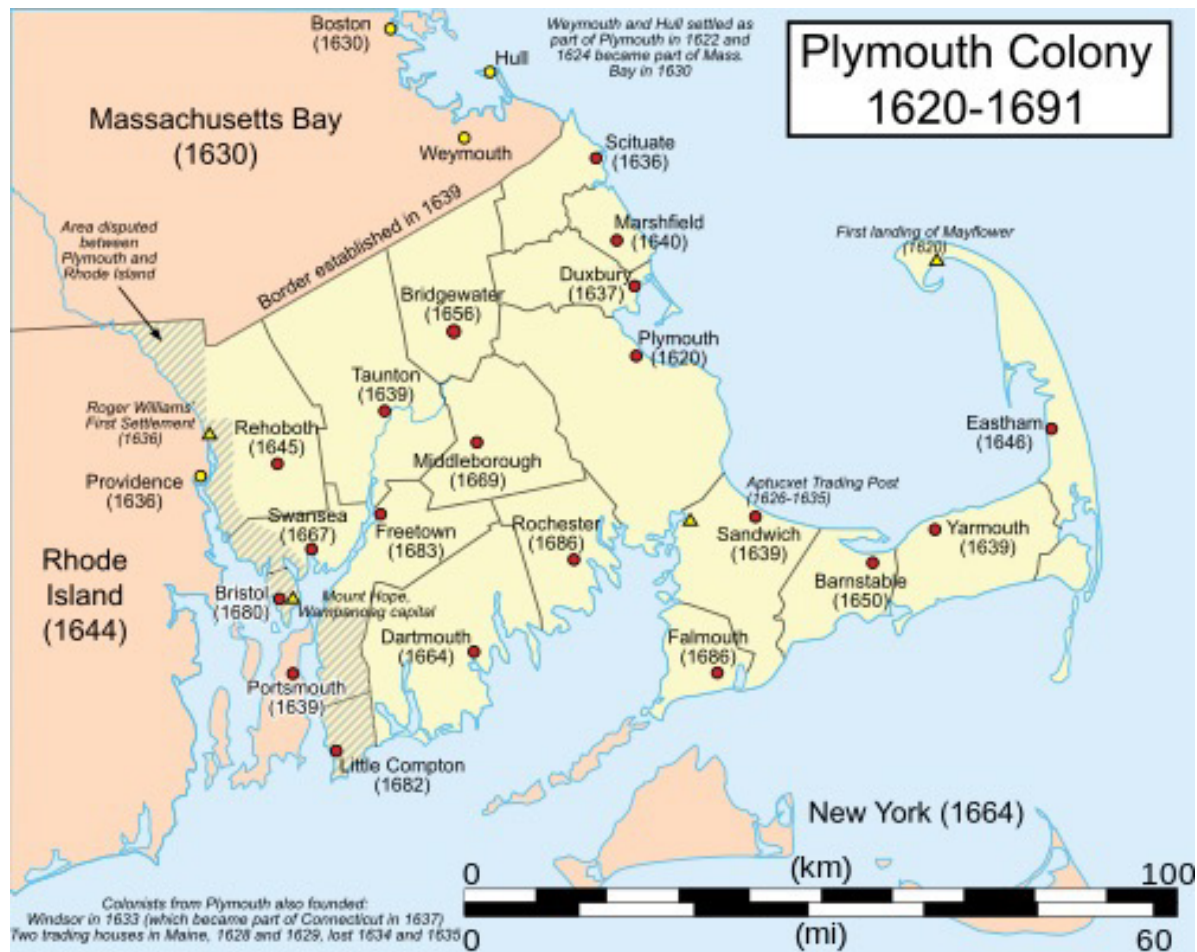
Facing the Great Marsh, the largest salt marsh in New England,
with a view of Hog or Choate Island beyond



View of the meadows running down toward the Marsh

Photos: courtesy of Julie Nelson, Maisie Crowther, HistoricIpswich.org and the author

Visiting Plymouth and Scituate, Massachusetts



Historically known as Plimouth or Plimoth³⁵³, this town in Plymouth County, Massachusetts holds a place of great prominence in American history, folklore, and culture. It is the oldest municipality in New England and one of the oldest in the United States, and was the site of the 1620 colony founded by the *Mayflower* Pilgrims.

The town of Plymouth, then served as the capital of Plymouth Colony until its 1691 merger with the Massachusetts Bay Colony. Plimouth, Devon, England, where the *Mayflower* set sail for America, is the town's namesake.

³⁵³<https://plimoth.org>, 10/6/2020.

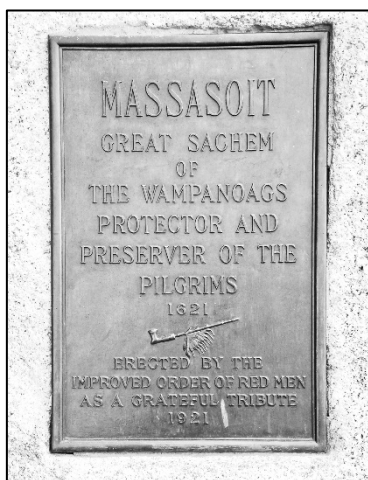
It is located about 40 miles south of Boston in a region known as the South Shore. After a second morning researching at the NEHGS in Boston, I found my way to a rental car location. Soon I was driving south on I-93S toward the Pilgrim Sands motel, just south of the main tourist area of Plymouth. My first stop, however, was Plimoth Plantation, a living history museum consisting of a re-creation of the Plymouth settlement in 1627, as well as a replica of a 17th century Wampanoag (Patuxet Indian) homesite. The museum features role-playing tour guides, (who speak as pilgrims would) as well as a large crafts center and gift shop. The replica of the *Mayflower* was not “in port” as it was undergoing restoration in preparation for the 400th anniversary of its landing in 2020. Throughout the 19th century, Plymouth thrived as a center of rope making, fishing, and shipping. It continues to be an active port, but today its primary industry is tourism.



Plymouth Rock Memorial

After a walk on the beach outside the motel, I made my way to town and *Woods Seafood and Fish Market*. I shared a table with a family whose college-age son had helped me with my luggage. After dinner, I wandered the waterfront visiting the Plymouth Rock Memorial, the statues of Massasoit and William Bradford, and a sarcophagus, which rests atop Coles' Hill, containing the bones of the fifty-one Pilgrims who died in the winter of 1620. As the sun was setting, I found ice cream and decided it was time to head back to the motel and bed.

Author's photos, June 2019.



The next morning, I returned to the town center and walked in the waterfront park to see the two monuments dedicated to our Pilgrim foremothers and the women of the *Mayflower*. Then on to Bridgewater to see the Joseph Alden house, then the John Alden House in Duxbury and the cemetery in Marshfield. More on our *Mayflower* ancestors in Volume Two. I then traveled up the coast to Scituate.



Scituate is pronounced 'sit-chew-it' with the accent on the first syllable and is a seacoast town midway between Plymouth and Boston. The name is derived from *satuit*, the Wampanoag term for *cold brook*, which refers to a stream that runs to the inner harbor of the town. On arrival, I found lunch, and then The Scituate Historical Society housed in the Kathleen Laidlaw Center, a little red schoolhouse.³⁵⁴ There I located further information on our Vassall ancestors. In preparation for time in Scituate, I found a website of Historic Scituate Trails, which, if one has the time, appear to be wonderful day trips by foot, bike, or kayak around the area. I did drive out to the lighthouse, set long after the Vassalls had sailed for Barbados. I then made my way North, skirting Boston, to Essex and Shea's Riverside Motel, my "home away from home" on the Essex River, centrally located for several more days of exploring in Massachusetts.

Talk Like a Pilgrim

Instead of "Hi, how are you" the Colonists might say: "Good Morrow." "How now?" "How do you fare?" "What cheer?"

Instead of "Excuse me," the Colonists might say: "Pray pardon me."

Instead of "Congratulations!" the Colonists might say "Huzzah!"

Instead of "Goodbye," the Colonists might say: "God bye to you," "Fare thee well," or "Pray remember me."

Some other words from old English:

Instead of "fireplace," say "hearth."

Instead of "cat," say "mouser."

Instead of "Stew or porridge," say "pottafge."

Instead of "pants," say "breeches."

Instead of "skirt," say "petticoat"

Instead of "pillowcase," say "pillowbere."

Instead of "backwards," say "arsy varsy."

<https://www.plimoth.org/learn/plimoth-online-historyhome/talk-pilgrim>



³⁵⁴ Author's photo, Scituate Historical Society, June 2019;

<http://scituatehistoricalsociety.org/early-scituate-families>;

http://www.historicscituatetrails.org/Scituate_Historic_Bike_Trail/Historic_Scituade_Trails.html;

https://www.familysearch.org/wiki/en/Scituate,_Plymouth_County,_Massachusetts_Genealogy, all accessed 10/6/2020.

Adams Family Ancestry *Maternal line*

Adams is a common surname of English and Scottish origin, meaning "son of Adam."

Margaret Adams, wife of **John Pease Jr.**, mother of Mary Pease, wife of Thomas Abbe, bapt. Marshfield, Plymouth County, Massachusetts 18 Mar 1654;³⁵⁵ d. Enfield, Hartford, Connecticut 2 Jan 1737; m. Ipswich, Massachusetts 30 Jan 1676/77 John Pease Jr.³⁵⁶
The couple's children are listed earlier in this chapter under John Pease Jr.

Margaret Adams was the daughter of **James Adams**; b. bef. 27 May 1627 Plymouth, Plymouth, Massachusetts³⁵⁷, and **Frances Vassall**. His father John Adams Sr., d. Plymouth 11 Nov 1633. After his father's death, his mother m. (2) Kenelm Winslow.

Both Kenelm Winslow and his stepson, James Adams (age 16 or older), appear in a list of those able to bear arms in the colony of New Plymouth in 1643. They are listed consecutively under the town of Marshfield.³⁵⁸

The *Plymouth Colony Records*, under date of June 10, 1651, state that James Adams came before the governor and acknowledged that he had received from Kenelm Winslow (his stepfather) the 5£, which was to be paid to him when he became of age. "On the 26th of December 1651, it was ordered to be entered upon the public record as paid and received."³⁵⁹

Later it is recorded that James Adams:

Resided on a farm on the Marshfield side of North River, nearly opposite Mr. Vassall's, the father of Frances, the future Mrs. Adams. Subsequently, James Adams moved to Scituate, where he married Frances Vassall and later lived at Concord. They worshipped with the second church in Scituate, and their children were carried there for baptism.³⁶⁰

³⁵⁵ *Massachusetts: Vital Records, 1620-1850, Scituate Vol I, Scituate Births to the year 1850*, 11, <online database>, (*AmericanAncestors.org*, New England Historic Genealogical Society, 2001-2016), 10/5/2020.

³⁵⁶ *Massachusetts, Compiled Marriages 1633 – 1850*, <online database>, (Provo, Utah, Ancestry.com Operations, Inc., 2005), has marriage date, 30 Nov 1676, Salem, Essex, FHL film #0761210. I have been unable to locate definitive sources for her death, though 1737 is often cited; *North America, Family Histories 1500-2000, Rising Genealogy*, 246 for marriage and children, (ancestry.com), 10/5/2020; *U.S., New England Marriages Prior to 1700*, 566, (ancestry.com), 10/5/2020.

³⁵⁷ *AGBI*, Vol 1: 433: citing *Gen. Column of the " Boston Transcript"*, 1906-1941, 12 Aug 1925: 3293; 13 Feb 1928: 6661, James Adams; b. 1624 Massachusetts; *U.S. Sons of the American Revolution membership Applications 1889 – 1970*, <online database>, (Provo, Utah, Ancestry.com Operations Inc., 2011), #81621: James Adams, b. 10 June 1626.

³⁵⁸ *Vital Records from The NEHGS Register*, Vol. 4, 259, *List of Those Able to Bear Arms in the Colony of New Plymouth in 1643*, (*AmericanAncestors.org*), 10/5/2020.

³⁵⁹ David Pulsifer, Nathaniel Bradstreet Shurtleff, and Massachusetts General Court, *Records of the Colony of New Plymouth, In New England*, (Boston, Press of W. White, 1855-61), Vol 2, 176, (*babel.hathitrust.org*), 10/6/2020.

³⁶⁰ Marica Abiah Thomas, *Memorials of Marshfield and guidebook to its localities at Green Harbor*, (Boston, Dutton and Wentworth, 1854), 36-37 covers the Adams family, (*archive.org*), 10/6/2020.

James Adams, m. Scituate 15/16 June or 16 July 1646, **Frances Vassall**,³⁶¹ b. Stephney, London Borough of Tower Hamlets, Greater London, England 1623;³⁶² arrived in colonies 1635 on the *Blessing*, age 12, with father William Vassall, and siblings, Judith 16, Jno 10, Ann 6, Margaret 2, and Mary 1;³⁶³ d. Marshfield, Plymouth, Massachusetts 1670.

Children:

- i. WILLIAM ADAMS, b. Marshfield, Plymouth County, Massachusetts 16 May 1647; bapt. by Mr. Witherell 23 May 1647; d. Sudbury, Middlesex, Massachusetts Bay 1678; m. Elizabeth (___).
- ii. ANNA ADAMS, b. Marshfield 18 Apr 1649; bapt. 20 May 1649; d. Marshfield 1649.
- iii. RICHARD ADAMS, b. Marshfield 19 Apr 1651; bapt. 27 Apr 1651; d. Scituate, 25 July 1651.³⁶⁴ There is another Richard Adams of this same time, m. Sudbury, Mass., June 24, 1679, Rebecca Davis. He is from another Adams family.
- iv. MARY ADAMS, b. Marshfield 27 Jan 1653; bapt. 5 Feb 1653; d. Sudbury, Middlesex, Massachusetts Bay 29 Dec 1717.
- v. **MARGARET ADAMS**, no record of birth, Marshfield; bapt. 18 Mar 1654;³⁶⁵ d. Enfield, Hartford, Connecticut 2 Jan 1737; m. Ipswich Massachusetts 30 Jan 1677 **John Pease Jr.**

William Witherall was the first minister of the Second Church of Scituate. He was ordained 2 September 1645 and ministered for thirty-nine years. During that time, he baptized 608 children, including William Adams named above. His record of those baptisms still exists, and shows that people came to him in (current day) Norwell from as far away as Yarmouth on Cape Cod. Before he died, he was able to bring about an end to the feud that initiated the creation of the Second Church of Scituate. The church which he served as the first minister continues on today as the First Parish of Norwell.

³⁶¹ *Massachusetts, Town and Vital Records, 1620-1988, Scituate: Scituate Town Records, with Births, Marriages and Deaths, Marriage*, (ancestry.com), 10/6/2020; *Massachusetts: Vital Records, 1620-1850*, (americanancestors.org), *Plymouth*, Vol 1, 655, 10/6/2020; *Vital Records from The NEHGS Register*, Vol 9, 313; *Plymouth Colony Records*, (americanancestors.org), 10/6/2020; There are at least ten additional sources confirming one of the three dates.

³⁶² AGBI, Vol 1: 397, citing *Gen. Column of the Boston Transcript*, 19 Nov 1906: 8949, (ancestry.com), 10/6/2020; *New England, The Great Migration and the Great Migration Begins, 1620-1635*, Vol 3, 1872, (ancestry.com), 10/6/2020.

³⁶³ *Ibid.*, 10/6/2020; *U.S. and Canada, Passenger and Immigration Lists, Index, 1500's – 1900's*, Boston, Massachusetts, 1635, referencing Banks, *Planters of the Commonwealth: Frances Vassall*, (ancestry.com), 11/13/2020.

³⁶⁴ Scituate, Massachusetts, *Vital records of Scituate, Massachusetts: to the year 1850*, (Boston, New England Historic Genealogical Society, at the charge of the Eddy town-record fund, 1909), *Scituate Deaths to the Year 1850*, 347, (babel.hathitrust.org), 10/6/2020.

³⁶⁵ *Massachusetts Compiled Birth, Marriage and Death Records, 1700-1850*, <online database>, (Lehi, Utah, Ancestry.com Operations, Inc., 2018), *NEHGS, Scituate Births to the Year 1850*, 11, 10/6/2020.

"James Adams died at sea in the good ship called the *James* of London on the 19th of January, 1651, to which Captain John Allin was master, and chief commander of said vessel." His step-father Kenelm Winslow was the administrator of his estate. His Inventory amounted to 34£, 15s.³⁶⁶ This date seems to be in error as at least two children are born to James and Frances in 1653 and 1654. Another source indicates he died 19 January 1654.³⁶⁷ His father in law, William Vassall in his 1655 Will, calls his daughter Frances, the wife of James Adams, not the widow of James Adams.³⁶⁸ The family last appeared in the Plymouth records 8 April 1657; they may have moved to Massachusetts Bay Colony.³⁶⁹

On 15 May 1672, Frances (Vassall) Adams, the wife of James Adams, and daughter to the late William Vassall petitioned the Massachusetts Court for 150 acres of land, about 8 miles northward from Lancaster, near Lunenburg.³⁷⁰ The court granted her request. On 7 May 1673, the court noted that the survey of a farm of 150 acres belonging to the wife of James Adams of Concord was returned to and approved by the court.³⁷¹

James Adams was known to have had interests in **Barbados**, most likely through his father-in-law, William Vassall's connections on that island. Throughout the 17th and 18th centuries, horses, cattle, beef, pork, and sometimes pipe-staves were exchanged for sugar and molasses and, at a later period, rum. During this time, there was a continuous flow of settlers from Barbados to virtually every point on the Atlantic seaboard. Many families in America today trace their origins in the New World first to Barbados. Another country for me to explore!

<https://www.wikitree.com/wiki/Adams-967>;
<https://www.living-in-the-past.com/lordsofthesea.html>

³⁶⁶ Thomas, *Memorials of Marshfield*, pp. 36-37. Miss Thomas adds this quotation, "...but the year must be an error, perhaps, typographical, as he had a child born in March 1651." 10/6/2020.

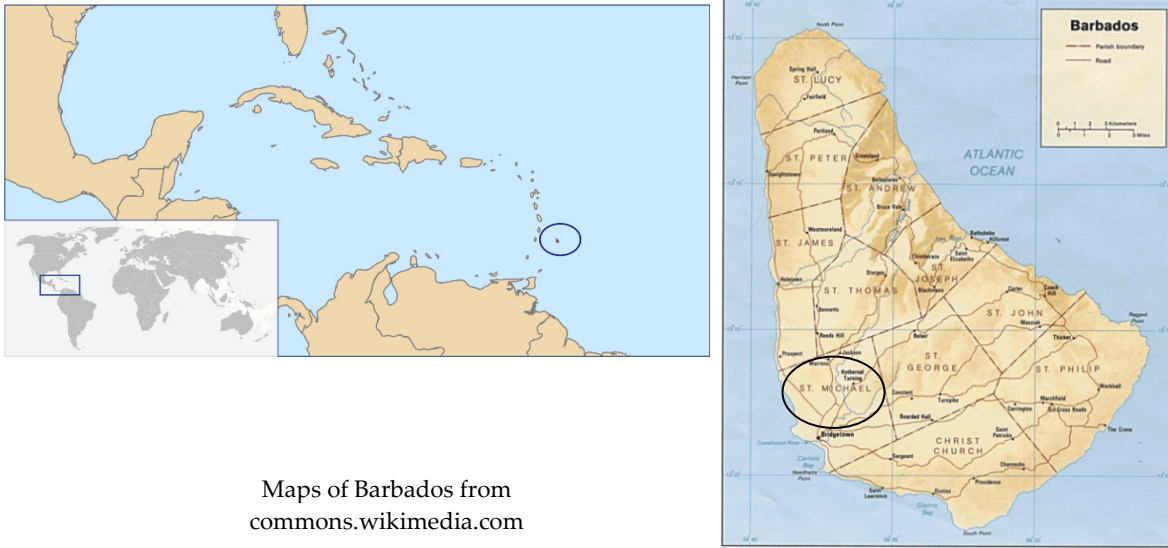
³⁶⁷ [https://familypedia.wikia.org/wiki/James_Adams_\(1626-1653\)](https://familypedia.wikia.org/wiki/James_Adams_(1626-1653)), 10/6/2020.

³⁶⁸ James C. Brandow, *Genealogies of Barbados Families from Caribbeana and the Journal of the Barbados Museum and Historical Society*, 666, (Baltimore, Maryland, Genealogical Publishing Co., 1983), <archive.org>, 10/7/2020.

³⁶⁹ https://www.plimoth.org/sites/default/files/media/pdf/adams_john.pdf, 10/6/2020.

³⁷⁰ *Ibid.*, 10/6/2020.

³⁷¹ William Frederick Adams, William Richard Cutter, *Genealogical and personal memoirs relating to the families of the state of Massachusetts*, (New York, Lewis Historical Pub. Co., 1910), 529-530, (books.google.com), 10/7/2020; Eugene Aubrey Stratton, *Plymouth Colony, its History & People 1620-1691*, (Salt Lake City, Utah, Ancestry Pub. 1986), 231-232, (books.google.com), 10/6/2020.



Maps of Barbados from
commons.wikimedia.com

James Adams was the son of **John Adams Sr.** and **Eleanor/Ellen Newton**. Assuming John Adams Sr. came to the colonies as an adult, he was born before 1600. Some references offer 7 Aug 1595, some say 1585, others pre-1590. There are some published records for John Adams in London. However, that man does not seem to be the John Adams of Plymouth. Therefore, I have concluded, there is no parental lineage.³⁷²

John Adams, “one of the *first comers*” arrived Plymouth Colony on the *Fortune*, 9 November 1621.³⁷³ In 1623, the Pilgrims divided up their land; the people mentioned came on the *Mayflower* (1620), the *Fortune* (1621), and the *Anne* (1623). A few may have arrived on the *Swan* (1622) or the *Little James* (1623), but these were small ships carrying mostly cargo. The Division of Land is recorded in Volume XII of the *Records of the Colony of New Plymouth* and reprinted in the *Mayflower Descendant*, 1: 227-230: one (1) acre per family member. “John Adams, a passenger on *The Fortune* - one acre.”³⁷⁴

³⁷² *New England, The Great Migration and the Great Migration Begins, 1620-1635*, Vol 1:11-12, (ancestry.com), 10/6/2020.

³⁷³ James Savage, O. P. (Orrando Perry) Dexter, & John Farmer, *A Genealogical Dictionary of the First Settlers of New England: Showing Three Generations of Those Who Came Before May, 1692, On the Basis of Farmer's Register ...*, (Boston, Little, Brown & Company, 1860-62) Vol 1:11, (babel.hathitrust.org), 10/6/2020; *US and Canada, Passenger and Immigration Lists Index, 1500's – 1900's*: John Adams, age 26, b. abt. 1595, arrived 1621, Plymouth, Massachusetts, citing Kate Caffrey, *Passengers on the Mayflower, Fortune, Anne and Little James*, in the *Ark Valley Crossroads* Vol 6:1, (Wichita, Kansas Genealogical society, Jan 1995), 25-27, (ancestry.com), 10/6/2020; https://www.plimoth.org/sites/default/files/media/pdf/adams_john.pdf, 10/6/2020.

³⁷⁴ https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Passengers_of_1621_Fortune_voyage, 10/6/2020; <http://johnadamsofnewnynj.blogspot.com>, 10/6/2020.

John Adams, “a substantial citizen,” m. abt. 1625 **Ellen Newton** of the *Anne*, this identification, long in print, is based on the fact that she is the only Ellen in the 1623 land division, and there was no other known addition to the Plymouth population in the next few years. Ellen Newton (also called Helen and Elinor) arrived in the summer of 1623, either aboard the *Anne* or *Little James*.

Children:

- i. **JAMES ADAMS**, b. bef. 22 May 1627; m. Scituate 15/16 June or July 1646, **Frances Vassall**, daughter of William Vassall.
- ii. **JOHN ADAMS (CAPT.)**, b. aft. 22 May 1627; d. Flushing, Long Island, New York after 1690; m. (1) Marshfield 27 Dec 1654 Jane/Joan James; three children; m. (2) by 10 Dec 1666 Elizabeth ____; possibly twelve children. The family moved to Flushing, Long Island, New York, aft. June 1660, where they became Friends/Quakers.³⁷⁵
- iii. **SUSAN ADAMS**, b. aft 22 May 1627, referred to in the 1633 settlement of her father’s estate; no further record.

In the 1627 Plymouth Cattle division, John Adams Sr., Elinor Addams, and James Adams were the 2nd, 3rd and 4th person in the 6th company. Along with nine others, they were to share the “lesser of the black cows, came at first in the *Anne*; with which they must keep the bigger of the two steers.”³⁷⁶ The family stayed in Plymouth, where the 1633 list of freemen contains the name of John Adams Sr., and indicates he was a freeman before 1 January 1632/3.³⁷⁷ The *US Craftsperson Files* reference John Adams as a carpenter.³⁷⁸

On 1 July 1633, with four others, John Adams Sr. was assigned to mow where Mr. Gilson had mowed the year before. He was assessed 9s in the tax list of 25 March 1633, and 25 April 1633. On 27 March 1634, the same rate applies to “widow” Adams.

John Adams Sr. died of infection fever, most likely from a smallpox epidemic that raged through Plymouth in 1633, between 1 July 1633 (the assignment of mowing ground) and the 24 October 1633 date of the Inventory. As a carpenter, he was able to leave “a decent estate for that day.”³⁷⁹ He is buried in Plymouth.³⁸⁰

³⁷⁵ *The New England Historical and Genealogical Register*, Vol 33, Oct 1879, 410-413, (americanancestors.org), 10/6/2020.

³⁷⁶ Goodwin, *The Pilgrim Republic ...*, 294, (babel.hathitrust.org), 10/7/2020.

³⁷⁷ *New England, The Great Migration and the Great Migration Begins, 1620-1635*, Vol 1:11-12, (ancestry.com), 10/6/2020.

³⁷⁸ *U.S. Craftsperson Files*, (ancestry.com), 10/6/2020.

³⁷⁹ *Signers of the Mayflower Compact*, 103, <online database>, search Ancestry.com Card Catalogue, 10/7/2020.

³⁸⁰ *New England, The Great Migration and the Great Migration Begins, 1620-1635*, Vol 1:11-12, (ancestry.com), 10/6/2020; *U.S., Find a Grave*, Memorial #156549434: John Adams III, b. 1595 England, d. 1633 Plymouth, Plymouth Co., Massachusetts (age 37-8) has bio., spouse Eleanor Winslow, children John Adams, James Adams; Body, lost or destroyed, more specifically, unknown location of burial, 10/6/2020.

The Fortune

The *Fortune* was the second English ship to Plymouth Colony, arriving in the fall of 1621, one year after the *Mayflower*. The ship with thirty-five settlers, some of whom would become notable figures in Plymouth, reached Cape Cod on 9 November 1621, and the Colony itself in late November.

The ship remained at the tip of the Cape for some time, which caused alarm to the natives who thought it might be a hostile French vessel. Governor Bradford had Myles Standish arm his militia and load the cannon on Burial Hill, in case of a French attack. When the *Fortune* at last entered Plymouth Bay, the earlier settlers were delighted and much relieved to see she was a friendly English ship.

The *Fortune* passengers, however, were shocked by the barren and bleak shoreline. They found it hard to believe that anything could exist in such a forbidding land. When they saw the depressing conditions within the colony, some became so disheartened and had such misgivings, they advised the shipmaster they wanted to return to England.

Bradford recorded, "... so they were landed; but there was not as much as biscuit-cake or any other victuals for them neither had they any bedding, but some sorry things they had in their cabins, nor pot, nor pan, to dress meate in; nor over many cloathes..." He was not pleased that new settlers had been sent without provisions or other goods to support them. Bradford calculated that even if they halved their daily rations, the store of corn would only last for six more months. He wrote, "They were presently put to half allowance, one as well as another, which began to be hard, but they bore it patiently, under hope of (future) supply."

There were a large number of non-religious passengers on the *Fortune*, many of them single men. Although their labor was welcome, Bradford characterized them as "lusty young men, and many of them wild enough." The colony now had sixty-six men and only sixteen women. As there no accommodations for the new settlers, Bradford divided them among the preexisting seven houses and four public buildings, some of which became male dormitories for the many young men.

The *Fortune* returned to England in December, loaded with valuable furs and other goods. But instead of heading into the English Channel, a navigation error caused the ship to sail south-east to the coast of France, where it was overtaken and seized by a French warship. The *Fortune* finally arrived back in London in February 1622, over two months after leaving Plymouth and without its valuable cargo.

Various sources including Wikipedia.org

On 24 October 1633, John Winslow and John Jenny took an Inventory of the goods of John Adams Sr., totaling 71£ 14s of which 37£ 10s was in *neat* (horned) cattle. (MD 1:157-58) The Inventory was presented at court on 11 November 1633. The widow Ellen Adams was named administratrix. The deceased having left no Will; Ellen Adams was bound for 140 pounds, John Barnes surety to provide 5 pounds apiece to her three children by John Adams: James, John, and Susan when they came of age if she should choose to remarry. (PCR 1:19) The payment to son James Adams, made by Kenelm Winslow, was recorded 26 December 1651. (PCR 2:1176)³⁸¹

Newton Family Ancestry

The surname Newton was originally derived from the Old English words, *neowe*, meaning new, and *tun*, meaning enclosure or settlement. It is one of the most common English surnames as there are eighty-three places called Newton or Newtown in England and Wales, and it is said that the place name appears in every one of the forty-three English counties, except for Westmoreland and Rutland.

The parents of Ellen/Elinor Newton are not verified. Some online unsourced trees indicate Peter Worden, Sr., ca. 1570-1639, who died at Yarmouth, Massachusetts in 1638 and Mary __ Worden, ca. 1568 -." Some old printed sources show that she was Ellen Worden, who then married a Newton, then Adams, then Winslow. Peter Worden has royal descent, which motivates some to connect Ellen to him. There is no evidence supporting the claim that Peter Worden had a daughter named Ellen or Eleanor.³⁸²

Charles E. Banks in *English Ancestry and Homes of the Pilgrim Fathers*³⁸³, calls her Mrs. Ellen Newton (Ellen Newtin). In 1623, at age 25, she emigrated from England to America on the ship *Anne*, arriving in Plymouth about 10 July 1623. The *Anne* was accompanied by the *Little James*, bringing new settlers along with many of the wives and children who had been left behind in Leyden, South Holland, the Netherlands when the *Mayflower* departed in 1620.³⁸⁴

Ellen was one of the twenty-seven women arriving aboard the *Anne*. William Bradford, one of the prominent Mayflower passengers, is quoted by George Willison in his work, *Saints, and Strangers*, as having written that "the company was about sixty persons for ye generall, some of

³⁸¹ https://www.plimoth.org/sites/default/files/media/pdf/adams_john.pdf, 10/6/2020; *New England, The Great Migration and the Great Migration Begins, 1620-1635*, Vol 1:11-12, (ancestry.com), 10/6/2020. The best treatment in print of John Adams and his two sons is Robert S. Wakefield, *Men of the Fortune: John Adams, The American Genealogist*, (New Haven, Connecticut, D. L. Jacobus, 1937-), Vol 55 (1979) 212-214, <online database>, (AmericanAncestors.org, New England Historic Genealogical Society, 2009 -), 10/6/2020.

³⁸² <https://www.wikitree.com/wiki/Unknown-194904>, for discussion of Ellen (Newton) Winslow, 10/6/2020.

³⁸³ Charles Edward Banks, *The English ancestry and homes of the Pilgrim Fathers who came to Plymouth on the "Mayflower" in 1620, the "Fortune" in 1621, and the "Anne" and the "Little James" in 1623*, (Baltimore, Maryland, Genealogical Pub. Co., 1962), 103-105, (babel.hathitrust.org), 10/7/2020.

³⁸⁴ *US and Canada, Passenger and Immigration Lists Index, 1500's – 1900's*, Plymouth, Massachusetts, 1623, referencing Goodwin, *The Pilgrim Republic...*, (ancestry.com), 10/6/2020.

them being very useful persons . . . and some were so bad as they were faine to be at charge to send them home againe ye next year.” Undoubtedly Ellen was among the useful group. On the 1623 list of land allotments in the colony, she was identified merely as Ellen Newton, “Her acre ”goeth in with a corner by ye pond.”³⁸⁵

Her single status upon arrival has caused much speculation over the years, as it would have been very uncommon for a single woman to make such a trip on her own, and “widow” could disguise her singleness. Some say she was a relative of one of the other passengers on the *Anne*, in particular Bridget (Lee) Fuller, but the reason for this is simply because their acres of land were adjoining. Others argue the preceding statements regarding single women have no basis in reality. Marie (Mary) Buckett arrived on the ship, the *Anne* also receiving one (1) acre in the 1623 land division. She married George Soule of the *Mayflower*. There has never been any question that she was anything but a single woman.³⁸⁶ Note: George Soule was a family servant/employee to Edward Winslow.



The Pilgrim Maiden

bronze by Henry Hudson Kitson (1922)
Brewster Gardens, Plymouth, Massachusetts,
Author's photo, June 2019.

In 1625, Ellen married John Adams Sr., who had arrived in Plymouth in 1621 aboard the ship the *Fortune*. Both Ellen and John were classified as “Strangers.” This designation was given to those who were not part of the religious separatist group of Puritans (sometimes called “Saints”) who had spent time at Leiden/Leyden, Holland, to avoid religious persecution in England. The Strangers were motivated more by a desire for land and improved economic prospects than for obtaining religious freedom. No doubt, there was also a sense of adventure calling them across the sea.³⁸⁷

³⁸⁵<http://victoriajosfamilystories.blogspot.com/2015/02/ellen-newton-plymouth-landowner-1623-52.html>, 10/6/2020.

³⁸⁶ *New England, The Great Migration and the Great Migration Begins, 1620-1635*, Vol 3: 1706, (ancestry.com), 10/6/2020; <https://www.familysearch.org/service/records/storage/das-mem/patron/v2/TH-904-58044-450-80/dist.txt?ctx=ArtCtxPublic>; 10/7/2020.

³⁸⁷ *The New England Historical and Genealogical Register*, Vol 33, Oct 1879, 410-413, (americanancestors.org), 10/6/2020.

By the time of the 1627 division of land and cattle in Plymouth, she was married to John Adams Sr., who died in 1633, leaving his widow, Ellen, and their three children.

Wainscot Joined Chair of American Red Oak
(Thought to have been made by Kenelm Winslow)
Pilgrim Hall Museum



Ellen (Newton) Adams, m. (2) June 1634 Kenelm Winslow, b. Droitwich, Worcestershire, England 1598/99. He was a Marshfield carpenter, by whom she had several children. He may have arrived on the *Mayflower* when it returned in 1629. He was a joiner, a maker of fine furniture and coffins, without the use of nails.³⁸⁸ He and John Alden may have worked together at cabinetmaking.³⁸⁹

Unlike his brothers, who were “Saints” or Puritans, Kenelm was a “Stranger” like Ellen. From 1641 on, they lived in Marshfield, Massachusetts, one of the earliest towns founded after Plymouth. They “settled on a gentle eminence by the sea, near the extremity of a neck of land lying between Green Harbor and South River. This tract of the township was considered the Eden of the region. It was beautified with groves of majestic oaks and graceful walnuts, with the underground void of tangled shrubbery.”³⁹⁰

Children³⁹¹:

- i. KENELM WINSLOW II (COL.), b. abt. 1635; d. 11 Nov 1715; m. (1) by 1688 Mercy Worden, seven children; m. (2) by 1693 Damaris Eames, daughter of Mark Eames, four children.
- ii. ELEANOR/ELLEN WINSLOW, b. abt. 1636; d. Aug 1676; m. Marshfield 20 Dec 1656 Samuel Baker; eight children.
- iii. NATHANIEL WINSLOW, b. abt. 1639; d. 1 Dec 1719; m. Marshfield 3 Aug 1664 Faith Miller; eight children.
- iv. JOB WINSLOW, b. abt. 1641; d. 14 July 1720; m. by 1674 Ruth___;³⁹² thirteen children.

³⁸⁸ <http://miller-aanderson.blogspot.com/2011/07/kenelm-winslow-1599-1672.html> has a lengthy discussion of Kenelm, especially as a New England joiner, 10/6/2020.

³⁸⁹ U.S., *Craftperson Files, 1600 – 1995*, (ancestry.com), 10/6/2020.

³⁹⁰ *New England, The Great Migration and the Great Migration Begins, 1620-1635*, Vol 2: 1332, (ancestry.com), 10/6/2020; *North America Family Histories 1500-2000: The Tracy Family/The Winslow Family*, 154, (ancestry.com), 10/6/2020; *Thomas, Memorials of Marshfield*, 27, (archive.org), 10/6/2020; U.S., *New England Marriages Prior to 1700*, 829, (ancestry.com) 10/6/2020; https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Edward_Winslow, 10/6/2020.

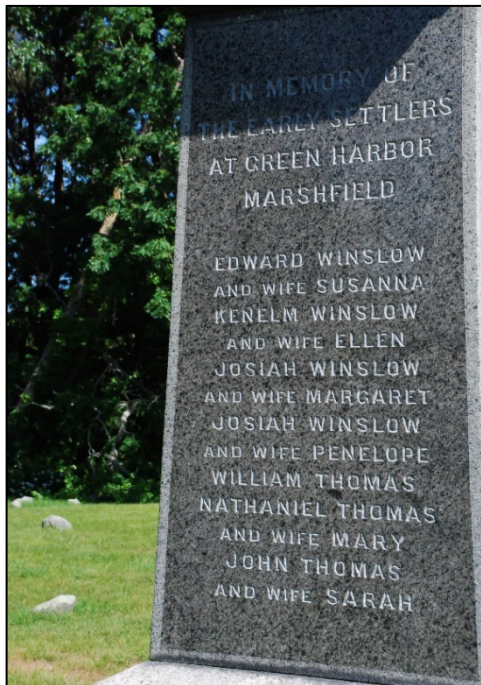
³⁹¹ *New England, The Great Migration and the Great Migration Begins, 1620-1635*, Vol 3: 2033-2036, children listed on 2035-36, (ancestry.com), 10/6/2020; U.S., *Find a Grave Index, 1600s-Current*, Memorial # 34694524, (ancestry.com), 10/6/2020.

³⁹² *New England, The Great Migration and the Great Migration Begins, 1620-1635*, Vol 3: 2036, “In 1914, Richard Henry Greene (author and genealogist of NY, 1839-1926) rejected the claim that this Ruth was daughter of Daniel Cole; considered she was related to Stephen Hopkins, but came to no firm conclusion.” (ancestry.com), 10/6/2020.

Kenelm was the brother of Edward Winslow, an early governor of the Plymouth Colony, also Gilbert Winslow, John Winslow, and Josiah Winslow. He was a freeman and signed his own Will. His Inventory included one Bible and seven other books. He held many offices in the Plymouth Colony and later in Marshfield. He had several land grants at Green's Harbor and Teticutt.

Kenelm was also a very litigious man and was always either suing or being sued and generally getting into scrapes of one sort or another. Ellen Winslow would have stood by her husband through many situations.³⁹³ If interested, you can read about them in *The Great Migration*, or on geni.com where author and descendant Joanne Barnard recalls the stories and writes, "Perhaps his good family connections caused some of his irascibility to be overlooked."

Kenelm Winslow died in Salem 13 September 1672 and was buried there, some undocumented sources say 'after a long illness.' In his Will, dated 8 August 1672, he described himself as 'being very sick and drawing nigh unto death.' He may have been visiting his niece (Mrs. Elizabeth (Winslow) Corwin, daughter of Edward Winslow), at her home in Salem, perhaps to obtain medical aid.



Ellen (Newton) (Adams) Winslow died in Marshfield 5 December 1681, "being 83 years old." She was buried there. "As one of the first settlers of Marshfield, a cenotaph at the Old Winslow Burying Ground bears her name."³⁹⁴

Author's photo, June 2019

³⁹³ <http://victoriajosfamilystories.blogspot.com/2015/02/ellen-newton-plymouth-landowner-1623-52.html>, 10/6/2020.

³⁹⁴ *Massachusetts, Town and Vital Records, 1620-1988, Marshfield Town Records*, 213, (ancestry.com), 10/6/2020; U.S., *Find a Grave*, Memorial #34694524m (ancestry.com), 10/6/2020.

Reputable and more recent sources assert that Ellen was born as a Newton.³⁹⁵ If so, her parents may have been John and Margaret __Newton. My research offers the following:

John Newton, b. Newton, Lancashire, England 1572; d. Barrs Court, Herefordshire, England 24 Oct 1633; son of Sir Henry Newton; unknown - 1599 and Catherine Paston, 1535-1605; m. (1) Katherine Paston, b. Kingston on Hull, Yorkshire, England ca. 1592; d. Kingston on Hull, Yorkshire, England 1616; m. (2) Margaret Grice, b. 9 June 1569; d. 2 Jan 1612 (age 42); bur. at Bristol Cathedral, Bristol, Bristol Unitary Authority, England (no known parentage.) However, there is *no proof* that he is the son of Sir Henry Newton and Catherine Paston; their only documented child is a son, Theodore.

It seems I've reached an impasse. I spent numerous hours going back along this line, based on several user-generated sources, but without any primary sources on which to base their speculation. It would have been fun to claim John Newton, as he was a direct descendant to the great-grandmother of Queen Consort Anne Boleyn, wife of King Henry VIII of England, Lady Anne Elizabeth Boleyn (Hoo) of the Hasting Hoo family.³⁹⁶ We could have also claimed a connection to Princess Diana! If interested, go to famouskin.com.

Alas, one royal connection through the Fairfield, Skipper line, will have to suffice. A Newton connection would offer links to royalty, plus they were a prominent British family in their own right. Members of Parliament, Chief Justices, Knights, and several generations can be found in Charles Mosley's, *Burke's Peerage and Baronetage* and other sources.³⁹⁷

We now come to Vassall, the final ancestral surname of this generation. When I started the project of researching the women who married the Abbe/Abbey men, I had no idea that I would find ancestors who were so prominent in the colonization of America. There are artisans, religious rebels, first *cumers*, links to British royalty, and strong women who owned land themselves. I knew there was a connection with John Alden (Volume Two), as millions of Americans today can make that claim. To all these, I am humbled.

³⁹⁵ *New England Marriages Prior to 1700*, 829, (ancestry.com), 10/6/2020; *NEXUS: New England Across the United States*, <online database>, (Boston, Mass., New England Historic Genealogical Society, 1983-1999), (americanancestors.org, New England Historic Genealogical Society, 2014), Vol 3:179, *Notable Kin*, *New England in Hollywood*, traces the ancestry of Bette Davis and Jane (Seymour) Fonda back to Kenelm and Ellen (Newton) (Adams) Winslow, 10/6/2020.

³⁹⁶ Hoo is a topographic name for someone who lived on a spur of a hill, <https://www.ancestry.com/name-origin?surname=hoo>, 10/6/2020.

³⁹⁷ <http://www.burkespeerage.com/search.php>, query "Newton," 10/6/2020.

Vassall Family Ancestry
Frances Vassall - wife of James Adams of Scituate
Mother of Margaret (Adams) Pease - Grandmother of Mary (Pease) Abbe

Vassall is an English surname of ancient origins. A vassal is a person regarded as having a mutual obligation to a lord or monarch, in the context of the feudal system in medieval Europe. The duties often included military support by knights in exchange for certain privileges, usually including land held as a tenant or fief.

The Vassalls were an ancient Catholic family of Normandy, which included two cardinals and a marshal of France. Still, Jean/John Vassall became a Huguenot and fled to England a few years before the 1572 massacre of St. Bartholomew.³⁹⁸ There are no records of naturalization, but as the 1920 author of *John Vassall and His Descendants*³⁹⁹ writes in the forward, "The omission can be accounted for by the birth of the succeeding Vassalls in England, thus becoming citizens by birth." They were of the Episcopalian faith and supporters of the revolution against the authority of King Charles.

Most of the Vassalls were loyal to the British crown during the American Revolution. Exile, and the confiscation of their estates, was a painful consequence. After their return to England in 1776, members of the family distinguished themselves in the British army and navy.

Two of the seven mansions still standing in Brattle Street, Cambridge, Massachusetts, known as Tory Row, belonged to William Vassall (#95) and to John Vassall (#105), which now belongs to the National Park Service. #105 was also the home of America's poets, James Russell Lowell and Henry Wadsworth Longfellow. It served as George Washington's Headquarters and home for a time during the American Revolution. John Vassall fled the colonies and later died in England in 1792.⁴⁰⁰



³⁹⁸ Freeman, *The Memorial of Captain Thomas Abbey*, 98, through our Vassall ancestry, we can claim membership in the Huguenot Society; The St. Bartholomew's Day massacre in 1572 was a targeted group of assassinations and a wave of Catholic mob violence, directed against the Huguenots during the French Wars of Religion, https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/St._Bartholomew's_Day_massacre, 10/6/2020.

³⁹⁹ Charles Maclear Calder, *John Vassall and his Descendants*, (Hereford, England, S. Austin, 1921), Forward, (archive.org), 10/6/2020. Much of the information is derived from records kept in Jamaica.

⁴⁰⁰ Wikipedia.org, 10/6/2020.

Our link to this family begins with **Frances Vassall**, born in Stepney, Middlesex, England London Borough of Tower Hamlets, Greater London, England about 1623; daughter of **William Vassall** and **Anna King (Kinge)**.⁴⁰¹ Her parents obtained license to marry on 9 June 1613 at Cold Norton.⁴⁰²

9 June 1613 William Vassall, of Eastwood, Essex, Yeoman, Bachr, 21, son of John Vassall, of same, Gent., who consents, & Anne King, of Cold Norton, Essex, Spinster, 20, dau. of George King, of same, Yeoman, who consents; at Cold Norton afsd.

About July 1635, Frances (age 12), her parents, and her siblings came to the Colonies on the *Blessing* (this was a return trip for her father), and the family settled at Roxbury, Massachusetts.⁴⁰³

The Blessing 1635:

Vassall, Ann 42

Vassall, Ann 6 * Listed together in this order.

Vassall, Margaret . . . 2 *

Vassall, Mary 1 *

Vassall, Frances . . . 12 (Entered as "Fra.")

Vassall, Judith 16

Vassall, William42

Vassall, Jo: 10

Also, aboard the *Blessing* was Thomas Kinge, age 21, brother to Ann (Kinge) Vassall, William's wife and a Susan Kinge, age 30. Susan may have been a cousin, daughter of George Kinge's brother.⁴⁰⁴

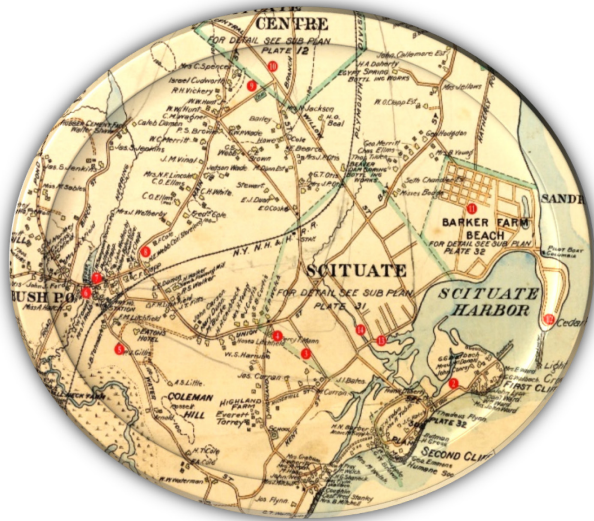
The family soon moved to Scituate, on the Atlantic coast, just south of Boston, and were admitted to the church 28 November 1636.

⁴⁰¹ AGBI, Vol 1, 397, citing *Gen. Column of the Boston Transcript*, 19 Nov 1906: 8949, (ancestry.com) 10/6/2020; *New England The Great Migration and the Great Migration Begins 1620-1635*, Vol 3, 1872, (ancestry.com), 10/6/2020).

⁴⁰² *London, England, Extracted Church of England Parish Records*, Collection: London – Marriage Licenses 1611- 1828, <online database>, (Provo, Utah, Ancestry.com Operations Inc., 2001), 10/6/2020.

⁴⁰³ Calder, *John Vassall and his Descendants*, 7, (archive.org), 10/6/2020; *New England, The Great Migration and the Great Migration Begins, 1620-1635*, Vol 3: 1871 - 1875, (ancestry.com), 10/6/2020; *U.S. and Canada, Passenger and Immigration Lists Index, 1500s – 1900s*, referencing Banks, *Planters of the Commonwealth and New England Ship and Passenger Lists*, *Boulder Genealogical Society Quarterly*, Vol 5:4 (Nov 1973), 30-34 (1635 – 1637), (ancestry.com), 10/6/2020.

⁴⁰⁴ <https://www.packrat-pro.com/ships/blessing.htm>, 10/6/2020.



Frances, married in Scituate, Plymouth County, Massachusetts 16 July 1646 **James Adams**, of Scituate, son of John Adams Sr. of the *Fortune*.⁴⁰⁵

There are conflicting dates for Frances (Vassall) Adams' death: died Marshfield 3 April 1670 or died Marshfield 1673.⁴⁰⁶

As the daughter of an original patentee, who had probably received nothing for his monetary advance to the colony, in 1672, Frances (Vassall) Adams received from the Federal Court, a grant of 150 acres. The date of this grant would indicate a 1673 date of death.

Frances (Vassall) Adams was the daughter of **William Vassall Esq.**, Pilgrim of the *Blessing*, b. Ratcliffe, Stepney, London, Middlesex bef. 27 Aug 1592, son of John Vassall and Anne Russell; d. St. Michael's Parish, Barbados, Lesser Antilles, West Indies bef. 13 July 1655; bur. Bridgetown Saint Michael, Barbados, Cathedral Church of St. Michael and All Angels; m. aft. 9 June 1613 date of *allegation* (license), perhaps 29 June 1613,⁴⁰⁷ **Anna King**, b. Woodham Mortimer, Essex 1 Dec 1594, daughter of George King(e) Sr., yeoman, and Joane Lorraine; d. Bridgetown, St. Michael, Barbados 13 Apr 1670.⁴⁰⁸

⁴⁰⁵ Massachusetts, Town and Vital Records, 1620-1988, Scituate: Scituate Town Records, with Births, Marriages and Deaths, Marriage, (ancestry.com), 10/6/2020. For other sources see previous footnotes.

⁴⁰⁶ U.S., Find a Grave, Memorial #117685474, d. 1670 (age 46/47), (ancestry.com), 10/6/2020; U.S., New England Marriages Prior to 1700, 4, d. abt. 1673+, (ancestry.com), 10/6/2020.

⁴⁰⁷ England, Select Marriages, 1538-1973, <online database>, (Provo, Utah, Ancestry.com Operations Inc., 2014), FHL film #571176: William Vassall, m. 29 June 1613 Cold Norton, Ann King, 10/6/2020; New England, The Great Migration and the Great Migration Begins, 1620-1635, Vol 3, 1871-1875, (ancestry.com), 10/6/2020.

⁴⁰⁸ Find A Grave, Memorial Anna: # 34887098, William: Memorial #34886642 (ancestry.com), citing Henry F. Waters, Genealogical Gleanings in England, Vol 2:1319, (Boston, New England Historic and Genealogical Society, 1901), (babel.hathitrust.org), 10/6/2020.

Children:

- i. ANNA VASSALL, b. and d. Cold Norton, Essex, England 6 Sept 1614; ⁴⁰⁹bur. same 22 Sept 1614.
- ii. JUDITH VASSALL, b. abt. 1619; bur. 3 Apr 1670; m. 5 Nov 1640 or 8 Apr 1640 *Mayflower* passenger Resolved White, son of Pilgrim William White, *Mayflower* passenger and Susanna White, second wife of Edward Winslow. Resolved White is in the 1643 Scituate section of the list of those between the ages of 16 - 60 able to bear arms in Plymouth Colony. On 16 July 1637, Judith joined the church at Scituate. She had five sons and three daughters.
- iii. FRANCES VASSALL, b. abt. 1623; m. Scituate, Massachusetts 15/6 July 1646, **James Adams**, son of John Adams Sr.
- iv. SAMUEL VASSALL (twin), b. 22 June 1624; bur. 16 Nov 1624.
- v. MARY VASSALL (twin), b. 22 June 1624; d. bef. 1634.
- vi. JOHN VASSALL, b. abt. 1625; d. bet. 10 Aug 1684 - 6 July 1688 Jamaica, West Indies; m. Anna Lewis, daughter of John Lewis, an English resident of Genoa, Italy. In 1643, John Vassall was also in the Scituate section of the list of those between the ages of 16 - 60 able to bear arms in Plymouth Colony.⁴¹⁰ He became quite wealthy, acquiring large tracts of land in Jamaica after the 1655 - 57 British capture of Jamaica from the Spanish. On 2 Mar 1646/7, the Court ordered John Lewis to serve out his term as an apprentice by serving John Vassall.⁴¹¹ On 26 Aug 1658, Christopher Winter was excommunicated by the church at Scituate for marrying Mrs. Cooper, "a woman of scandalous carriage." Mr. Vassall, Mr. Hetherly, and Goodman Raylings did not consent to this.⁴¹² In 1661, John Vassall sold his Scituate estates and left, perhaps, for the West Indies.⁴¹³
- vii. WILLIAM VASSALL JR., bapt. Little Baddow, Essex 2 Feb 1627. No further record.
- viii. ANNA VASSALL, bapt. Little Baddow, Essex 20 Apr 1628; m. before 1655 Nicholas Ware of Virginia; they later settled in Barbados.
- ix. MARGARET VASSALL, b. abt. 1633; d. probably Barbados, West Indies; m. St. Michael's Parish, Barbados 25 Apr 1656, Joshua Hubbard (Hobart).
- x. MARY VASSALL (second of the name), b. 1634; d. probably in Barbados, West Indies 1657; unmarried.

⁴⁰⁹ *England, Select Births and Christenings, 1538-1975, Essex, England, Select Church of England Parish Registers, 1518-1960*, (ancestry.com), 8/4/2021.

⁴¹⁰ *New England Historical and Genealogical Register*, Vol 4, (1850), 255-259, Nathaniel B. Shurtleff, *List of Those Able to Bear Arms in the Colony of New Plymouth 1643*, (americanancestors.org), 10/6/2020.

⁴¹¹ *Court Records, Laws and 17th Century Texts*, Plymouth Colony Archive Project, <http://etext.lib.virginia.edu/users/deetz>, 10/6/2020.

⁴¹² *New England Historical and Genealogical Register* Vol 9, (1855), 279-287; Vol 10, (1856), 37-43, 345-351, Amos Otis, trans., *Scituate and Barnstable Church Records*, (americanancestors.org), 10/6/2020.

⁴¹³ *New England Historical and Genealogical Register*, Vol 17, (1863), 56, Harris, Edward Doubleday, *The Vassalls of New England*, (americanancestors.org), 10/6/2020. For all footnotes on this page see also: http://treetreetree.org.uk/Alphabet/V/Vassall/Vassall.htm?LMCL=nDc_8Kz, 10/6/2020.

William Vassall Esq., was a highly educated gentleman, as shown by his signature as a witness in legal cases. He was far ahead of his time and publicly supported freedom of religion. In March 1629, William Vassall was recorded in the Charter of the Massachusetts Bay Company as a patentee, along with his brother Samuel, and an Assistant to the Governor. He was a part of the Committee to consider the division of lands, the Committee to resolve orders, and a court arbiter. In 1629, he was a signatory to both the Massachusetts Bay Charter and the Cambridge Agreement. The Charter founded the Massachusetts Bay Colony, bringing over 20,000 English immigrants to New England in the 1630s; the Cambridge Agreement moved Massachusetts' entire government from England to the New World. Note: Samuel Vassall has his own Wikipedia page if you want to know more.

At an October 1629 meeting of the Company, William Vassall, with others, was appointed to travel to New England. The *Mayflower Quarterly*, Sept 2010: 256 states, "William Vassall sailed on the *Lyon* to New England in 1630 and returned on the *Lyon* to England about one month later." There is some confusion in the article as it states that Vassall traveled in company with Governor John Winthrop, who was just assuming his post." Other sources say that Winthrop did not travel on the *Lyon* but was on the *Arabella*, the flagship of what became known as The Winthrop Fleet, eleven ships bringing over 700 persons. This immigration came to be known as The Great Migration, thousands of English settlers coming to New England in the early-mid-1630s. Note: William Vassall was the owner of the *Lyon*.

There is a record of the Reverend John White (1575 - 21 July 1648)⁴¹⁴ holding a service on board the *Lyon* before she sailed. Reverend White is an uncle to Stephen Terry, (possible) great-great-grandfather of Penelope Terry, who will marry Captain Thomas Abbey, son of Thomas and Mary (Pease) Abbe, in the next generation. Research indicates that if William Vassall traveled on the *Lyon* to New England, he might have arrived in February 1630, as per the letter from Deputy Governor Thomas Dudley to Lady Bridget, Countess of Lincoln, March 1631. In this letter, the *Lyon* is noted several times, once for its arrival date from Bristol on 5 February 1630, and another for being in port in Salem on 7 July 1630. Additionally, some sources state that his family came with him on this first trip, but this cannot be confirmed.

Another source states, William Vassall, along with his brother Samuel, first came to Salem, Massachusetts in 1630, on the *Arabella*, as one of the assistants of the Massachusetts Bay Company. He is present at a court of assistants on the *Arabella*, 23 March 1629/30. He returned to England in the fall of 1630 on the *Lyon*. Around July 1635, he returned to America on the *Blessing*, at the age of 42, with his wife, also aged 42. Six of their children come over to America at that time.

The family first settled in Roxbury and then removed to Scituate, Massachusetts Colony, which had been settled by 1628, making his home near the banks of the North River.

⁴¹⁴ <https://www.apuritansmind.com/puritan-favorites/john-white-1575-1648/>;
[https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/John_White_\(colonist_priest\)](https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/John_White_(colonist_priest)), 10/6/2020.

William Vassall named his plantation *West Newland*, and it covered the whole *neck* of land. His home, built in 1635, was called *Belle House*.⁴¹⁵ He is recorded as owning 200 acres of upland and some acreage of meadowland and was licensed to operate a ferry on the North River, where an old Indian ferry had been. The toll was 2d for a man and 4d for a beast.⁴¹⁶

A windmill was erected by 1636 on the third cliff and that same year, Vassall built a bridge over Rotten Marsh Creek. William Vassall's surveying instruments were frequently used in Plymouth Colony and the *History of Scituate, Massachusetts* reports he was foreman of the first Jury for laying out roads. The first records of the town (before 1636), appear to be "in the beautiful hand of Mr. William Vassall, there being no town clerk."⁴¹⁷ He became one of the wealthiest settlers in Plymouth Colony, owning this Scituate estate and later an estate in Barbados, the West Indies.

On 28 November 1636, the family was admitted to the Scituate church, Reverend John Lathrop, pastor. What followed were many years of rancorous events involving Vassall over his perception of Puritan religious intolerance in New England.

On 1 February 1638, Vassall took the Oath of Allegiance to the Plymouth Colony, becoming a Freeman. On 3 December 1638, he was granted 150 acres of land. In 1639, William Vassall was given the liberty to make an oyster bank, 60 rods in length, in the North River in some convenient place near his farm, *West Newland*. He could also appropriate the oyster bank for his use, forbidding all others to use it without his permission. According to the *History of Scituate* (p. 367) no one remembers if oysters were actually found in the North River.

On 27 September 1642, when the Narragansett Indians became a threat, Vassall was chosen to be Deputy and a member of the Council of War. In 1643, he was on the list of men able to bear arms in the Situate section of Plymouth Colony. About this same time, he moved to Marshfield, where he was again a town officer.

Vassall was an advocate of religious freedom and publicly opposed those who followed the strict Puritan line. He also agitated against the heavy-handed methods of the colonial government. Both stances caused him no end of problems with the conservative colonial government. William and his brother Samuel, along with Mr. Symon Whetcombe and William Pynchon, were chosen by John and Samuel Browne to speak on their behalf when the Brownes were hauled before the court for reading out of the Church of England's *Book of Common Prayer*.

He was involved in a controversy (1644/45) involving the church in Scituate about baptism - to sprinkle or immerse? The rift caused half the congregation, with the minister, to relocate to

⁴¹⁵ Thomas, *Memorials of Marshfield*, 37-38, (archive.org), 10/8/2020.

⁴¹⁶ Samuel Deane, *History of Scituate Massachusetts*, (Boston, James Loring, 1831) 17; (reprint by Forgotten Books, 2016), download 2/17/2021.

⁴¹⁷ Deane, *History of Scituate Massachusetts*, 111, 2/17/2021.

Barnstable. Those who remained voted to replace Reverend Lathrop with Reverend Chauncey of Plymouth, who later became President of Harvard. Chauncey preferred to immerse infants into the frigid water. William Vassall opposed this practice. William and his supporters met separately; both Chauncey and Vassall claimed that their group was the *First Church* and the others the separatists. Chauncey, who was rather hot-tempered, and certain his way was “the only way,” gave an account of William's behavior to the neighboring churches and complained that “he was in fear for his life!” The Plymouth elders asked for reconciliation; the Massachusetts Bay Colony supported the right of William's group to form their own church.

The congregation that included William Vassall and his daughter Judith White, wife of Mayflower passenger Resolved White, now *the Vassall group*, called their church the *Second Church of Scituate*, the First Church being the one that moved to Barnstable. The Vassall church also brought the pastor from the Duxbury church, William Witherall, (who in his nearly 40-year ministry performed over 600 “sprinkling” baptisms), to Scituate to be their pastor, ordaining him September 1645 despite the Duxbury church’s refusal to dismiss him.⁴¹⁸

The Church of Plymouth sent Vassall a message by way of John Cook. *The Book of the Second Church, Scituate*, under the date of 14 April 1645, contains this letter. The Church hopes he (Vassall) would desist from his intended proceedings, and they questioned if they would commune with him if he continued.⁴¹⁹ Vassall hosted the first meetings of the Second Church in his home at Belle House Neck, near the present junction of Neal Gate Street and Route 3A, overlooking the North River. Later, the meetinghouse moved to Wilson Hill, Main Street, at the corner of Old Meeting House Lane. It was a small frame building with a thatch roof, and no glass in the windows, just oiled paper. The society used this building for thirty-nine years, and Mr. Witherall served as pastor.⁴²⁰

Vassall was also involved in a 1645 incident in which he petitioned the Plymouth General Court asking for full religious toleration for well-behaving men (i.e., religious freedom). Along with Dr. Robert Child, Samuel Maverick, Thomas Burton, Thomas Fowle, David Yale, John Dand, and John Smith, Vassall proposed that all members of the Church of England and the Church of Scotland be admitted to communion in the New England church. This proposal forced an unwelcome examination of the legality of the colonial government.⁴²¹

Many of the town deputies and assistants, including Myles Standish, William Collier, Thomas Prence, and Edward Winslow (brother to Kenelem), were opposed. The petition could have passed, but a delaying action by William Bradford gave the conservative side time to maneuver

⁴¹⁸ Stratton, *Plymouth Colony, its History & People 1620-1691*, 79-81, 86, 155, 478, (books.google.com), 10/7/2020.

⁴¹⁹ *New England Historical and Genealogical Register*, Vol 17, (1863), 58, Harris, Edward Doubleday, *The Vassalls of New England*, (americanancestors.org), 10/6/2020.

⁴²⁰ Dorothy Carpenter, *William Vassall and Dissent in Early Massachusetts*, © 2004, 63 – 111, also has a good bibliography, <https://firstparishnorwell.org/vassall.pdf>, 10/6/2020.

⁴²¹ *New England, The Great Migration and the Great Migration Begins, 1620-1635*, Vol 3, 1871-1875, (ancestry.com), for much of the material re William Vassall, 10/6/2020.

against it, which caused its defeat. In a letter to Governor Winthrop, Winslow expressed his pleasure at their success: "But the *Governour* would not suffer it to come to vote as being that indeed would *eate* out the power of Godliness, etc."⁴²²

In another letter to Governor Winthrop, Edward Winslow wrote, "I utterly abhorred it, and ... if such a change (religious freedom and democracy) came about, I would move from Plymouth to Massachusetts (Bay Colony) where, "I trust that we shall finde (I speake for many of us that groane under these things) a resting place amongst you for the soules of our Feet."⁴²³

In his *History of New England*, Winthrop writes, Vassall was "a busy and factious spirit, and always opposite to the civil governments of this country and the way of our churches."⁴²⁴ He called "Mr. Vassall, a man never at rest, but when he was in the fire of contention."

William Vassall was also known for the *Remonstrance of 1646*, also known as *The Bill for Liberty of Conscience*, in which Robert Child and others petitioned the Bay Colony General Court for greater religious and political freedom and closer adherence to the laws of England. Vassall, as a resident of Plymouth, did not sign the Bay Remonstrance of 1646, but Governor Winthrop, and most other persons, believed it was his creation. To answer Vassall's charges, the very conservative Edward Winslow went to London in 1646 on behalf of Governor Winthrop and other Bay Colony leaders.

In 1646, after several years of religious controversy, William Vassall returned to England to petition Parliament in an effort to expose his perception of the Massachusetts Puritan leaders' political corruption, religious intolerance, and abuse of power. He never returned to New England. This process also ended his increasingly tenuous friendship with Edward Winslow, *Mayflower* Pilgrim, stepfather to Resolved White, Vassall's son-in-law, and a diplomat representing Plymouth Colony's interests in England. Both men died in the Caribbean in the 1650s, Vassall on Barbados and Winslow off the coast of Jamaica.

In England, Vassall was a friend of trans-Atlantic merchant Isaac Allerton, another *Mayflower* Pilgrim. Both men were members of the London group *Merchant-Adventurers*, which had provided funding for the 1620 *Mayflower* voyage. Being a wealthy man, Vassall was known to people in business throughout Europe. He was the owner of the ship *Lion/ Lyon*, which he offered to Allerton, who put it to much use in his trans-Atlantic trading business. Both Vassall and Allerton were close associates of Matthew Craddock, who had been the first governor of the Massachusetts Bay Company.

⁴²² Joseph B. Felt, *Ecclesiastical History of New England*, (Boston, Congregational Library Association, etc., 1855-62), *Plymouth Colony*, 549 – 552, (books.google.com), 10/6/2020.

⁴²³ Stratton, *Plymouth Colony, its History & People, 1620 – 1691*, 137, footnote #4, (books.google.com) 10/6/2020.

⁴²⁴ *Proceedings of the Massachusetts Historical Society*, vol. 6, 1862, pp. 470–491, March Meeting, *William Vassall No Factionist*; *Letter of William Palfrey*; *Letter of Thomas Hutchinson*, read at www.jstor.org/stable/25079299, 10/7/2020.

About 1648, after two years in England, Vassall sailed for Barbados in the West Indies, where he settled at St. Michael's Parish, purchasing land and remained there for the rest of his life. Barbados lies to the northeast of Trinidad and Tobago's islands, off the north coast of Venezuela and was a British colony from 1625 until 1966.

William Vassall died in in the Parish of St. Michael, Barbados, between July 1655 - June 1657. His Will is dated 13 July 1655 and is on file in the Barbados Records Office.⁴²⁵

**The Will of William Vassall
Written 13/31 July 1655 - Proved 12 June 1657:**

William Vassall, now a resident of this Island, Esq., Son in law Nicholas Ware and his wife Anna, my daughter. My two other daughters, Margaret and Mary Vassall. All now here with me. My estate in this Island, New England, or any other part or place in the world. One-third to son John. To my daughters, Judith, wife of Resolved White, Frances, the wife of James Adams, Anna, the wife of Nicholas Ware, and Margaret and Mary Vassall, the other two thirds, to be equally divided among them, to each a fifth. My son John not being now in the island, my son in law Nicholas Ware to act and manage for him and he and his wife, child, and family, to remain, abide and dwell on my plantation until my said executor's arrival, or order from him concerning same. (BarbPR 365)

The Testator made his mark in the presence of Humphrey Davenport, Humphrey Kent, and Lion Hill. John Vassall, the sole executor, proved the Will.⁴²⁶

His wife Anna (Kinge) Vassall died, most likely in Barbados, before the 1655 writing of her husband's Will, as she is not mentioned. William Vassall's grave no longer exists, and his wife's grave is unknown.⁴²⁷

King (e) Family Ancestry

The surname King(e) generally comes from the Old English *cyning*, originally meaning "tribal leader." A man who carried himself like royalty, or who played the part of the king in a medieval pageant received this nickname. Occasionally, a man who served in a royal household used the name.



Woodham – Mortimer Hall⁴²⁸

⁴²⁵ G. Andrews Moriarty, *More Notes on New England and Barbados*, article in *Genealogies of Barbados Families*, 666.

⁴²⁶ *The New England Historical and Genealogical Register* Vol 51: 286, Waters, *Genealogical Gleanings in England*, (americanancestors.org), 10/7/2020.

⁴²⁷ *New England, The Great Migration and the Great Migration Begins, 1620-1635*, Vol 3, 1871-1875, 1872, (ancestry.com), 10/7/2020.

⁴²⁸ Commons.wikimedia.com

Anna King(e) wife of William Vassall, b. Woodham Mortimer, Essex, England 1 Dec 1594; d. before her husband's death, June 1657. She is not mentioned in her husband's 1655 Will. These dates are not consistent with a news article, which found its way to Bridgetown, Saint Michael, Barbados, West Indies. *The Boston Evening-Post*, 28 January 1670:

On Thursday morning died Mrs. Anne Vassall, agreeable consort of Mr. Wm. Vassall, Esq. We hear her funeral will be attended this afternoon.⁴²⁹

Anna King(e) was the daughter of **George King(e) Sr.** yeoman, b. Woodham Mortimer, Essex 1567; d. Cold Norton, Essex on or bef. 7 Dec 1625/26; bur. *possibly* London, either in Southwark at St. George the Martyr, or in East County at St. Dunstan.⁴³⁰

The New York Genealogical and Biographical Record, Vol 91: 3 (found online), indicates George King(e) m. (1) Margaret (___), bur. 19 June 1597. This date does not seem to work for his second marriage. He m. (2) Cold Norton, Essex, 23 June 1589 **Joane Lorraine**⁴³¹, b. Stow Maries, Essex or Cold Norton ca. 1570 or abt. 10 May 1578; d. Gloucestershire 20 Oct 1603; bur. Cold Norton.⁴³² *The New York Record* then states Joane (Lorraine) King(e) m. (2) William Hasteler after the death of George King(e). Again, the dates do not work. There are no confirmed sources for these names, or dates, and the citations from ancestry.com may not be correct.

Children:

- i. **ANNA KINGE**, b. Woodham Mortimer, Essex, England 1 Dec 1594; d. 13 Apr 1670 Bridgetown St Michael, Barbados; m. **William Vassall**.
- ii. **GEORGE KINGE JR.**, b. Woodham ca. 1595; d. maybe Massachusetts 1 May 1648; bur. Barbados?
- iii. **THOMAS KINGE**, b. Woodham ca. 1597; d. Scituate 24 Sept 1691; immigrated with his brother-in-law William Vassall and family. Thomas left a long line of descendants.

⁴²⁹ L. Vernon Briggs, *History of Shipbuilding on North River, Plymouth County, Massachusetts: with genealogies of the shipbuilders, and account of the industries upon its tributaries: 1640 – 1872*, (Boston, Coburn Brothers, 1889) 40, (books.google.com), 10/7/2020.

⁴³⁰ London, England, Church of England Baptisms, Marriages and Burials, 1538-1812, <online database>, (Provo, Utah, Ancestry.com Operations, Inc., 2010), *Parish Register*, 10/7/2020.

⁴³¹ England, Select Births and Christenings 1538-1975, <online database>, (Provo, Utah, Ancestry.com Operations, Inc., 2014), birth of daughter Anne/Anna to George and Joanna King (no date listed), 10/7/2020; U.S. & International Marriage Records, 1560-1900, <online database>, (Provo, Utah, Ancestry.com Operations, Inc., 2004), 10/7/2020.

⁴³² Find a Grave, George: Memorial #178292239, Joane Lorrain King: Memorial #193467641, (ancestry.com), 10/7/2020.

- iv. DANIEL KINGE, b. Woodham ca. 1599; d. Cold Norton 1648, bur. Barbados?
- v. JUDITH KINGE, b. Woodham ca. 1601; d. Weymouth, Suffolk, Massachusetts 11 Feb 1661; m. John Rogers.
- vi. FRANCES KINGE, b. ca 1602.

There may have been another daughter, MARY KING, d. 11 Mar 1598. These last two children are not mentioned in his Will. They are only found in unsourced, online trees.

**The Will of George Kinge of Woodham Mortimer, Essex, yeoman,
14 October 1625 - proved 7 December 1625**

I give to my wife Joanne (for life) the lease of the house wherein I dwell, and after her death I give it to George King my eldest son, with remainder to second son Thomas Kinge, next to my third son Daniel King and lastly to my daughter Judith. Reference made to "my" right Worship good master Sir Arthur Harris knight. My four children, George, Thomas, Daniel and Judeth. I am possessed of a lease for years of a farm call Westcannon in Cold Norton and Stow Maris, Essex, and seized in fee of a tenement &c. in Stowe Maris. I give to son Thomas my lease of West Cannon (subject to a rent charge of six pounds per annum payable to my son George. I give to my son Daniel my farm of East Cannon in Cold Norton and Purleigh in Essex. Other gifts to the above-named children. I give unto Anne Vassal my daughter my sealing ring of gold. To my cousin William Petchey my suit of silver buttons. To Edward, John, Anne and Johan Petchey my kinsmen and kinswomen ten shillings apiece. To my kinswoman Susan Purcas forty shillings. To my three grandchildren, John, Judeth and Frances Vassall, twenty shillings apiece. Certain reckonings or accompts between me and Susan the daughter of my late brother Christopher Kinge, clerk deceased. James Kinge, the son of my said brother. I give to my son in law William Vassall all my instruments and tools for the measuring and plotting of lands and the suit of silver buttons the which he hath of mine and my gown. John Harding my servant. Thomas Totman of Norton. John Lurron, my wife's kinsman. The widow Marrion of Norton. Old Tabor of Stow Maris. I make my said son in-law William Vassall sole executor.⁴³³

Online searches indicate George Kinge's mother may have been named Anne or Anna, his father may have been Thomas and he may have had a brother Christopher, wife Susan, who predeceased him and may have had another brother, Daniel. This "fits" somewhat with the naming patterns of the day. He had a nephew James Kinge and John Lurron/Lurran was his wife's relative. There are relatives of the surnames Petchey and Purcas. I leave it to others to research further.

⁴³³ *England & Wales, Prerogative Court of Canterbury Wills, 1384-1858*, The National Archives, Kew, England, Prerogative Court of Canterbury and related Probate Jurisdictions: Will Registers; Class: PROB 11; Piece: 147, <online database>, (Ancestry.com Operations Inc., Provo, UT., 2013) 1624-1643, 147: Clarke, Quire Numbers 103-147 (1625) 307.

Naming Patterns

In genealogy we usually concentrate on surnames since they are the most important way of identifying people who are related. A surname is usually inherited and, while it may be changed, some form of it is usually retained. Given names are more important in a way because they represent a voluntary choice by the parents or, sometimes, by an individual. A name is usually not given lightly. It represents thought and feelings and can be significant to the researcher.

You will often see the same names used over and over again in families. While certain names are popular in different areas in different times in history, the repetition could represent a pattern. Many cultures believe in honoring their elders and do so by naming children after them. Angus Baxter in "In Search of Your British and Irish Roots" describes a pattern that was popular in England in the 1700-1875 period:

The first son was named after the father's father (paternal grandfather)

The second son after the mother's father (maternal grandfather)

The third son after the father

The fourth son after the father's eldest brother

The fifth son after the mother's eldest brother

The first daughter was named after the mother's mother (maternal grandmother)

The second daughter after the father's mother (paternal grandmother)

The third daughter after the mother

The fourth daughter after the mother's eldest sister

The fifth daughter after the father's eldest sister

If this pattern would result in a duplication of names -- i.e., both grandfathers had the same name -- then they would skip to the next one on the list.

<https://englishancestors.blog/2020/04/01/english-naming-traditions/>

https://www.genealogy.com/articles/research/35_donna.html

Lorran Family Ancestry

Possible parents for Joanne Lorran are George Lorran, 1551 - 1610 and Anna (Agnes) Stone 1555 - 1616, daughter of John Stone 1528 - 1596 and Agnes Barton 1530 - 1597. John Stone may have been the son of Simon Stone 1517-___ and Agnes Clarke 1517- ___. There are more unsourced ideas online. The surname Lorran seems to be Scottish in origin.

King (e) Family Ancestry Concluded

The New York Genealogical and Biographical Record, Vol 91, 3 provides the following: George Kinge was son of **Thomas Kinge**, bapt. Saffron Walden, St Mary the Virgin, Essex, 4 Apr 1543⁴³⁴; d. 1558 leaving a Will; m. **Anne** (____).

Children:

- i. CHRISTOPHER KINGE.
- ii. EDWARD KINGE.
- iii. **GEORGE KINGE SR.**, b. Woodham, Mortimer, Essex ca 1567; d. 7 Dec 1625; m. **Joanne Lorrain/Lorraine**.
- iv. DAUGHTER KINGE, m. Thomas Hastier.

Thomas Kinge was the son of **William Kinge/Kynge**, b. Purleigh, Essex, England 1515; d. Great Baddow 1 Sept 1570⁴³⁵, leaving a Will; m. **Cicely** (____) of Purleigh. William Kinge owned extensive lands in Burnham, Mayland and Althorn.

Children:

- i. **THOMAS KINGE**, bapt. Saffron Walden, St Mary the Virgin, Essex, 4 Apr 1543; d. possibly London 1588 leaving a Will; m. **Anna** ____.
- ii. ABRAHAM KINGE.
- iii. JOHN KINGE, (youngest son).
- iv. PRISCILLA KINGE.

William Kinge was the son of **John Kinge** of Andrews in Althorn, called "John Kynge by West," probably to distinguish his from another John Kynge, d. 1524, leaving a Will; m. **Alice Slyne**, b. Slyne-with-Hest, Lancashire, 1493. John Kinge was an extensive land owner as well.

Children:

- i. **WILLIAM KINGE** of Great Baddow; b. Purleigh ca. 1515; d. Great Baddow 1 Sept 1570; bur. St. Mary's Churchyard Great Baddow; m. **Cicely** (____).
- ii. ROBERT KINGE, (second sonne.)
- iii. JOHN KYNGE, 1520 – 1547.
- iv. EMME KYNGE.
- v. ELYNOR KYNGE.

⁴³⁴ Essex, England, Church of England Baptisms, Marriages and Burials 1538-1812, (ancestry.com), Essex Record Office, Chelmsford, Essex, Essex Church of England Parish Registers, Saffron Walden, St. Mary the Virgin, Parish Records 1558-1630, 10/7/2020.

⁴³⁵ UK and Ireland, Find a Grave, Memorial #180247368, (ancestry.com), 10/7/2020.

An extensive Pedigree of this prominent Essex King family has been compiled, after an almost exhaustive examination of all the early records, Wills, etc., of Essex County. The first ancestor of record appears to have been a **John Kynge**, of Dompnar in Burnham, County Essex who died in 1490, leaving a Will and known issue: John, Richard, Thomas and Joan.⁴³⁶

Vassall Family Ancestry Concluded

William Vassall was the son of **John Vassall**, "the Gallant Alderman of London" (also known as "Vestal" and "Huguenot Refugee"), b. Caen, Calvados, Basse-Normandie, France ca. 1544; d. 13 Sept 1625 Stepney, London, Middlesex, England. The records at the parish church of St. Dunstan's states he died "of the plague" and was buried at Stepney Church 18 Sep 1625. Though 1625 was not the year of the "Great Plague," over 40,000 died from the disease that year.

John Vassall, m. (1) St. Dunstan's, Stepney 25 Sept 1569 Anne Hewes/Howes; she predeceased him, no children; m. (2) St. Dunstan's 4 Sept 1580 **Anne Russell** of Ratcliffe, Stepney, Middlesex, England, b. 23 Sept 1569 or 4 Sept 1580; bur. Stepney, England 5 May 1593, six children; m. (3) St. Dunstan's 27 Mar 1594 Judith (Borough) Scott, daughter of Stephen and Joan Borough of Stepney and Chatham, and the widow of Thomas Scott of Colchester and London; d. Jan 1639, two sons, four daughters.

Children with Anna/Anne Russell:⁴³⁷

- i. JUDITH VASSALL, b. 25 Mar 1582; m. John Freeborne, a yeoman of Prittlewell, Essex, made his Will on 27 Jan 1617; proved on 17 Feb 1617; he mentions his wife Judith and his brother William Vassall.
- ii. JOHN VASSALL (first of the name), died as an infant.
- iii. SAMUEL VASSALL, b. 5 June 1586; d. New England, 1667; m. Frances Cartwright, the daughter of Abraham and Joan (Ware) Cartwright of St. Andrew's Undershaft, London. Samuel was a merchant of London and an alderman. He refused to submit to the Tax of Tonnage and Poundage in 1628, which led to his imprisonment and a loss of property. He was a Member of Parliament 1640 - 1641. He was of St. George's, Southwark, and Bedale, Yorkshire. There are a number of articles and books covering Samuel Vassall should the reader want to know more. There is also a bust of Samuel Vassall in Kings Chapel, Boston, Massachusetts.⁴³⁸

⁴³⁶ <https://www.ebooksread.com/authors-eng/new-york-genealogical-and-biographical-society/the-new-york-genealogical-and-biographical-record-volume-91-ywe/page-3-the-new-york-genealogical-and-biographical-record-volume-91-ywe.shtml>, e-book online, or *The New York Genealogical and Biographical Record*, (New York, NY: New York Genealogical and Biographical Society, 1870-) <online database>, (AmericanAncestors.org, New England Historic Genealogical Society, 2011.) Vol 42: 15, 10/7/2020.

⁴³⁷ <http://www.treetreetree.org.uk/Vassall.htm> 10/7/2020 citing *NEHGR* 51, 249-290 Waters, *Genealogical Gleanings in England*, (americanancestors.org), 10/7/2020.

⁴³⁸ https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Samuel_Vassall, 9/30/2021.

- iv. **WILLIAM VASSALL**, b. Stepney, Middlesex, England 27 Aug 1592; d. Barbados 13 July 1655; m. Cold Norton, Essex, England 29 June 1613 **Anne King/e**, b. 1 Dec 1594 Woodham Mortimer, Essex, daughter of George Kinge and Joane Lorrان of Woodham Mortimer, Essex; d. 1655/1657 Barbados, West Indies; most likely bur. St Michael's Parish Barbados.
- v. JOHN VASSALL (second of the name), died in infancy.
- vi. JOHN VASSALL (third of the name), d. abt. 2 years of age.

Children with Judith Borough:⁴³⁹

- i. ANNA VASSALL, b. 10 Jan 1595, m. John Jones.
- ii. RACHEL VASSALL, m. Peter Andrews.
- iii. STEPHEN VASSALL, Rector of Rayleigh, d. 1643; m. (1) Mary Bromley of Orsett, County Essex; d. 20 Jan 1632/3; m (2) Mary Grubb/e daughter of John Grubbe/e of St. Albans, Hertfordshire, b. 2 Jan 1614.
- iv. THOMAS VASSALL, b. 7 Apr 1602; d. after 1650; m. 1625 Anne Dickenson; Thomas Vassall was a draper of St. Leonard's, Eastcheap.
- v. MARY VASSALL, m. Edward West.
- vi. ELIZABETH VASSALL, m. Henry Church.

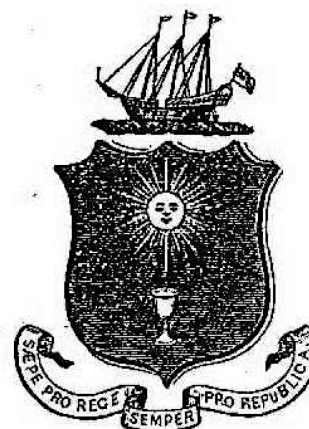
John Vassall had been a Huguenot (French Protestant) refugee from Normandy in the time of the 16th century French religious purges. In England, he hailed from Ratcliffe, Stepney and Eastwood, Essex County, and was a vestryman of Stepney. Stepney is a district in the East end of London, in the London Borough of Tower Hamlets. The section is not officially defined and is usually used to refer to a relatively small area; however, the place name applied to a much larger manor and parish for much of its history. John Vassall was also an Alderman of the City of London, a prosperous sea captain, and a merchant-adventurer in the early 17th century's age of exploration.⁴⁴⁰

Some sources speculate that John Vassall was the builder and half-owner of the famous *Mayflower*, aboard which his future grandson-in-law, Resolved White, was a passenger along with his parents, William and Susanna White. However, there is no documented evidence of Vassall's ownership of the *Mayflower* of 1620 Plymouth fame. There was a *Mayflower* of London; 250 tons, owned by John Vassall and others, fitted out by Londoners for the queen in 1588 and mentioned in documents until 1594. Also, the Mayflower Society states that the building date and original owner of the ship *Mayflower* that came to Plymouth in 1620 are unknown.

⁴³⁹ *Ibid.*

⁴⁴⁰ Calder, *John Vassall and his Descendants*, 5, (archive.org), 10/7/2020; *English Origins of New England Families*, Vol III, *Alderman John Vassal and His Descendants*, 220-231, <online database>, search Ancestry.com card catalogue, 10/7/2020.

Queen Elizabeth recognized him as achieving merit in the war with the Spanish Armada in 1588 by joining the Royal Navy and providing two ships which he commanded and outfitted at his own expense, the *Samuel* and the *Little Toby*, a vessel of 140 tons. A *Mayflower* (not the Pilgrim ship), of 250 tons out of London, owned by John Vassall and others, was outfitted in 1588 for the Queen, possibly also for Armada service. Queen Elizabeth subsequently granted him a coat of arms, an image of which appears on the west face of the National Armada Memorial in Plymouth, England, erected 1888, unveiled 1890.⁴⁴¹



Arms.—Az. in chief a sun, in base a chalice, or.
Crest.—A ship with masts and shrouds ppr.
Motto.—Sæpe pro rege, semper pro republica.

From that time on, his branch of the Vassall family used this coat of arms, giving up those they had borne in France. Matthews' *American Armoury and Blue Book* (1907), describes the arms:

Arms - Azure, in chief a sun in base a chalice or.

Crest - A ship with masts and shrouds proper.

Motto - Often for the king, always for the state.



As a merchant-adventurer, John Vassall had a keen interest in North America's colonization and became one of the Virginia Company's founding members. He helped finance Jamestown in 1607, England's first permanent colony in North America. In 1609, John Vassall, gentleman, was recorded as a shareholder on the Second Charter of The Virginia Company. In the following year, he subscribed 25£ towards the adventure. As descendants we can join the Jamestown Society.⁴⁴² For more information: <http://www.jamestowne.org>.

John describes himself in his Will as a "Mariner, of French extraction." Recognized as an authority in questions of navigation, Vassall is questioned by the judge of admiralty, as to the skill of a ship's pilot, in a suit respecting the 1577 wreck of a vessel on the Goodwin Sands,⁴⁴³ a sandbank at the southern end of the North Sea, lying 6 miles off the Deal coast in Kent, England.

On 29 April 1625, John Vassall, mariner of Ratcliffe in Stepney, made his Will. Six months later, on 16 September 1625, his Will was proved. He mentions his wife, Judith; his sons:

⁴⁴¹ *New England Historical and Genealogical Register*, Vol 25, (Jan 1871), 39, (americanancestors.org), 10/7/2020.

⁴⁴² Jamestown Society Seal based on the Seal of the Virginia Company of London, unknown artist, public domain.

⁴⁴³ C. S. (Christine Stephanie) Nicholls, Robert Blake, Sidney Lee, and Sir Leslie Stephen, *The Dictionary of National Biography*, (London: Oxford University Press, 1921) 155 (155-158), (babel.hathitrust.org), 10/7/2020.

Samuel, William, Stephen, and Thomas; his daughter Ann Jones; his daughter Rachel, the wife of Peter Andrews; his daughter Mary, the wife of Edward West; his daughter Elizabeth, the wife of Henry Church; his daughter Judith, relict of John Freeborne; his son-in-law John Jones. An excerpt follows:

**The Will of John Vassall
Made 29 April 1625 – Proved 16 September 1625**

John Vassall of Ratcliffe in the parish of Stepney, Middlesex, mariner, 29 April 1625, proved 16 Sep 1625. To be buried in the parish church of Stepney, where I am now parishioner. To my wife Judith, all my household stuff whatsoever, my plate only excepted. To my son Samuel my great gilt salt, to my son William, my plain white silver salt.... I give to the said William Vassall to his use forever all the wainscot, portals of wainscot, cupboards, and benches of wainscot affixed and fastened in the house wherein I now dwell and all the dresser boards, shelves, iron backs for *cimnies*, locks and other ironworks upon the doors and window now standing and being in and about my said dwelling house in Ratcliffe. I give him also the great table of walnut tree now standing in my great parlor... to Judith my daughter, the relict of John Freeborne late deceased, hath had and received divers and sundry large sums of money far surpassing and surmounting the portions of the rest of my daughters, I give her therefore only twenty shillings to buy her a ring ... And to be overseers, I do appoint my sons, Samuel Vassall, William Vassall, and my son in law John Jones. ⁴⁴⁴

John may have been sent by his father, John/Jean Vassall, from Rinant by Cany (Caen) to England to escape the religious dissension that was taking place in Normandy at the time. William Vassall's passion for religious freedom, may have been passed down by these Huguenot dissenters.

There is no sourced evidence of parentage for John Vassall, and so all ancestral generations found on various online family trees are suspect. He is listed as the son of Jean III de Vassall, Seigneur de Rignance, also known as Devassal and also known as Jean de Commiers de Vassall; b. Caen, Calvados Basse-Normandie ca. 1485 - 1488; d. France 1586. There are claims of ancestry in an ancient French family, traced back, to the 11th century, from Dinant by Caen in Normandy to the house of Du Vassall, Barons de Guerden, in Querci, Perigord. ⁴⁴⁵

There are Lords and Knights in unsourced line as far back as: Renaud de Bar De Vassall I, b. Frayssinet, Lot, Mid Pyrenees, France between 1040 and 1100; d. Rignac, Aveyron, Midi-Pyrénées, France ca. 1377. The region later became later Caen, Calvados, Lower Normandy, France. I did not research the Vassall ancestry in France.

⁴⁴⁴ *Genealogical Gleanings in England*, 1313-1315, <online database>, (Provo, Utah, Ancestry.com Operations Inc., 2005), search Ancestry.com card catalogue, 10/7/2020; UK, *Extracted Probate Records*, 1625 Vassall, John, Mariner, Ratcliffe in Stepney, Middlesex 99 Clarke, (ancestry.com), 10/7/2020.

⁴⁴⁵ Thomas, *Memorials of Marshfield*, 37, (archive.org), alleges Italian Heritage for the Vassall's of New England, without documentation. 10/8/2020; *The Vassalls of New England and their Immediate Descendants*, <online database>, (Ancestry.com Operations Inc., 2005), 3, 10/7/2020; *Note there is no evidence that he is the son of John Vassall from Rinant by Cany in Normandy.

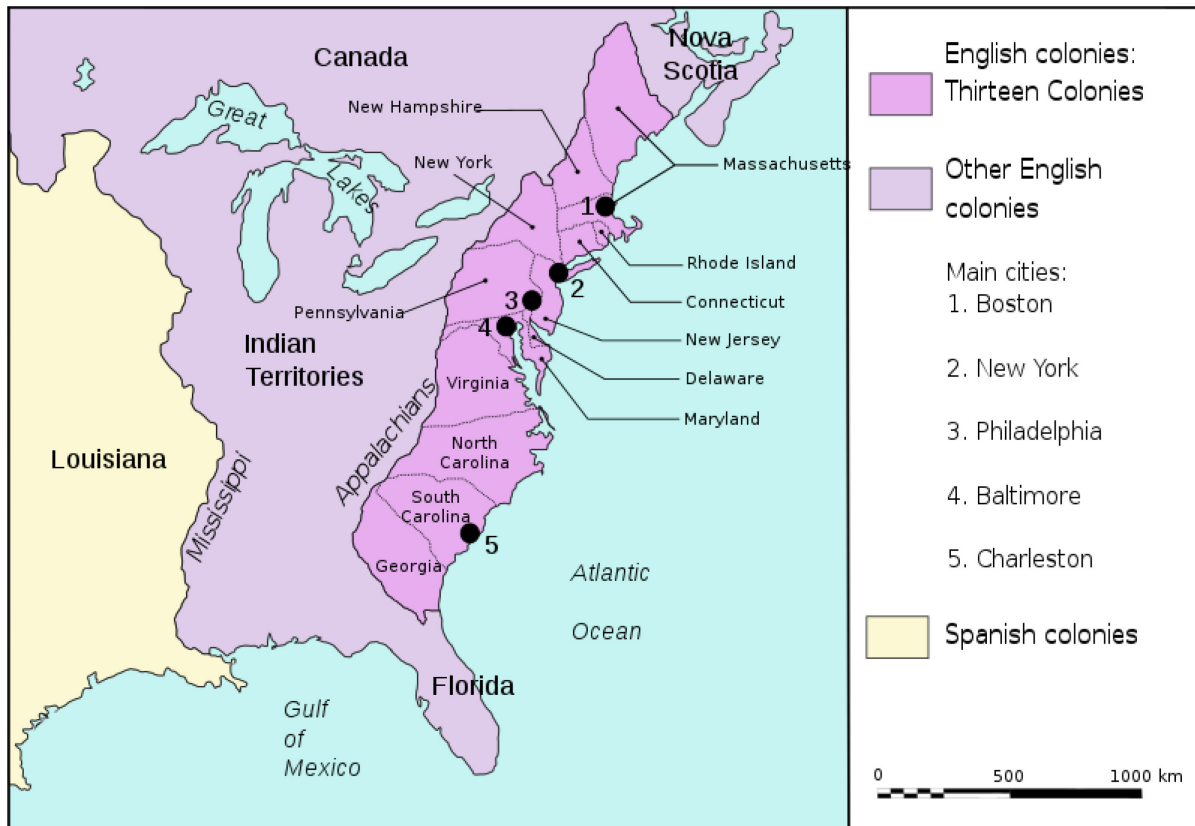
I began this chapter with the following quote by Edward Sellner:

We inherit from our ancestors, gifts so often taken for granted. Each of us contains within this inheritance of soul. We are links between the ages, containing past and present expectations, sacred memories, and future promise.

I find in this generation, and its ancestors, much that I have inherited: a love of history, and the history of furniture and design, of architecture, of old houses and the stories they have to tell; a “rebellious” spirit in my work in ministry which always seemed to be to “comfort the disturbed and disturb the comfortable;” and a willingness to travel, to move, to make a home where once there was no home.

The final generation in this Volume will bring us into the American Revolution. The colonial ancestors to date (as well as those yet to come), have had an indomitable spirit. They have fled oppression, sought new opportunities and fortunes; possessed a sense of adventure and willingness; gathered the strength to forge new pathways and homelands and brought new generations of a people who will come to be called “Americans” into being.





By 1775, there were thirteen North American Colonies which would become the original United States

Chapter Five

Generation Four of the Abbe/Abbey Family in America

Thomas Abbey III and Penelope (Terry) Abbey 1731 – 1817

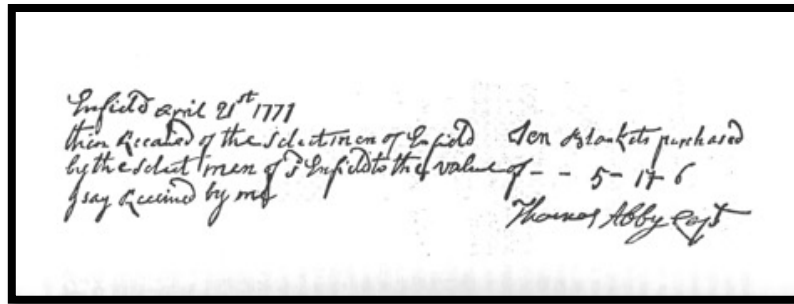
*Remember, remember always, that all of us, and you and I especially,
are descended from immigrants and revolutionists.* Franklin D. Roosevelt⁴⁴⁶

4. Thomas Abbey III (Capt.), son of Thomas Abbe Jr.³, (Thomas², John¹) and Mary (Pease) Abbe, b. Enfield, Hartford County, Connecticut 11 Apr 1731; d. Enfield, Connecticut 1 June 1811. He is unquestionably buried in Enfield, although "the huge monument of a more recent family has probably obscured his grave."⁴⁴⁷ He m. Enfield 22 June 1749 **Penelope Terry**, b. Enfield, Connecticut 5 Feb 1729/30; d. Enfield 2 Dec 1817, daughter of Dr. (Capt.) Ebenezer and Mary (Helme/s) Terry. The couple had eight children. The Daughters of the American Revolution Chapter located in Enfield bears her name. Before this generation, most of the Abbes clung to the old spelling of the name. Captain Abbey himself spelled his surname with the ending Y, as proven by his signature on documents (*Abbey* was adopted by his sons in 1793.) Most subsequent generations us the Abbey spelling.⁴⁴⁸

⁴⁴⁶ Goodreads.com/quotes, 10/8/2020.

⁴⁴⁷ Abbe & Nichols, *Abbe-Abbey Genealogy*, Thomas Abbey III, 51 – 53.

⁴⁴⁸ Alden Freeman, author/compiler, *Memorial of Captain Thomas Abbey, His ancestors and Descendants of the Abbey Family, Pathfinders, Soldiers and Pioneer Settles of Connecticut, It's Western Reserve in Ohio and the Great West*, (reprinted by Forgottenbooks.com), 57.



Children, all born in Enfield, Connecticut:⁴⁴⁹

- i. ABIGAIL ABBEY, b. 13 May 1750, d. 22 June 1844 (age 93 and 8 months);⁴⁵⁰ resided in the east part of Enfield; m. Enfield 1 Nov 1770 Eliphalet Collins,⁴⁵¹ b. Enfield 11 July 1744; d. 22 May 1815, son of Nathaniel and Abigail (Pease) Collins; nine children. Eliphalet was a private in the Company which marched from Enfield for the relief of Boston Apr 1775; he is named in *American Silversmiths*.⁴⁵²
- ii. OBADIAH ABBEY, b. 15 June 1752; d. East Winsor, Hartford, Connecticut 24 Aug 1808 (age 56)⁴⁵³; m. Jane McClester; lived at Warehouse Point, left Enfield (aft. 1783) to move from the Ferry "out west," probably East Winsor as he was recorded there in the 1790 census.⁴⁵⁴
- iii. PENELOPE ABBEY (twin), b. 24 March 1755; m. Josiah Bicknell, b. 4 Dec 1760, son of Ebenezer and Mary (___) Bicknell; d. 17 May 1824; four children; Josiah m. (2) Submit ____.⁴⁵⁵
- iv. MARY ABBEY (twin) (first of the name), b. 24 Mar 1755; d. 16 May 1759.
- v. THOMAS ABBEY IV, b. 22 March 1764; m. Ruth Bush; lived in Enfield at the Ferry; in the 1790 Census he is recorded at Enfield; in the 1810 Census, in Oxford, New York. I am uncertain of the details of his death, though it most likely occurred in New York. His father-in-law, Johnathan Bush, moved to Chenango County, New York and for many years kept a hotel at Oxford.⁴⁵⁶
- vi. MARY ABBEY, (second of the name), b. 7 July 1766; d. East Winsor 16 Sept 1850 (age 84); bur. East Winsor, Town Street Cemetery; m. George Prior of East Windsor.

⁴⁴⁹ Abbe & Nichols, *Abbe-Abbey Genealogy*, 51- 53 for this generation.

⁴⁵⁰ U.S. Newspaper Extractions from the Northeast 1704-1930, <online database>, (Provo, Utah, Ancestry.com Operations Inc., 2014) *New Haven Columbian Register*, 10 Feb 1844, call # 85751, Abigail Collins, death abt. 1844, age 93, 10/7/2020.

⁴⁵¹ *Ancestors of Rejoyce Ballance Collins and Constance Dorothy Van Etten Collins who participated in the civil and military affairs of the American Colonies...* <online database>, (Provo, Utah Ancestry.com Operations Inc, 2005), 16-18, 46,48. This volume has references to nearly all of our Abbey and extended Colonial families, 10/7/2020.

⁴⁵² <http://americansilversmiths.org/makers/silversmiths/210049.htm>, 10/7/2020.

⁴⁵³ *Connecticut, Deaths and Burials Index, 1650-1934*, (ancestry.com), FHL film #3076, 10/7/2020.

⁴⁵⁴ Abbe & Nichols, *Abbe-Abbey Genealogy*, 103.

⁴⁵⁵ *Ibid.*

⁴⁵⁶ In the next generation of the Abbey family there will be more connections to the Bush family.

5. vii. **PETER ABBEY**, b. 20 July 1769; d. Cleveland, Cuyahoga, Ohio 13 July 1857; m. Enfield 23 June 1789 **Hannah Alden**; eight children. Her life and ancestry are covered in Volume Two.
- viii. **SIMEON ABBEY**, b. 3 Feb 1772; d. Albany, New York 18 Apr 1823; m. Enfield 3 Feb 1772 Tabitha Killam, b. Enfield 7 Nov 1776, daughter of Eliphalet and Submit (___) Killam; d. Brooklyn, New York 15 Mar 1851; five children. Simeon was a merchant in Enfield for some time, studied law and practiced in Somers, about 1800. From there he moved to Vermont, then to New York. He is said to have "possessed an unusual store of natural wit and a considerable faculty for public speaking."⁴⁵⁷

The title that best suited Thomas Abbey III was Captain Abbey. He first enlisted during the French and Indian Wars and served as Corporal in the 3rd Company, 1st regiment under Captain and later Major Josiah Griswold, and Ensign Nathaniel Terry (of Enfield), 25 May - 22 November 1758 during the capture of Fort Ticonderoga. He then served as Lieutenant in the 7th Company, 1st Regiment, under Captain Seth King, 1 April 1 to 1 December 1761, during the conquest of Canada. He was also a member of the Enfield Minute Men and according to tradition, at the Lexington Alarm in April, 1775, he drummed the congregation out of the meeting house.

He then marched to the relief of Boston with the Enfield Company, led by Major Nathaniel Terry and Captain John Simons, Jr. He then served as Lieutenant in Captain Hezekiah Parson's company, 1775. On 9 May 1776, he was appointed by the general assembly of Connecticut to First Lieutenant in Captain Abel Pease's Company and was also First Lieutenant in Captain John Harmon's Company of Colonel John Douglas' Connecticut Regiment. He served under General Gates at Ticonderoga and Vicinity, June - November 1776 and served as Adjutant of Colonel John Chester's Connecticut State Regiment from June to December 1776. He was commissioned Captain in the Third Regiment "Connecticut Line on 1 January 1777 and then appointed by The Council of Safety, 1 February 1777, to Colonel Samuel Wyllys's Regiment in New York.⁴⁵⁸ Lieutenant Abbey held this command until 15 November 1778.

In his *Quest of Ancestors*, Mr. Alden Freeman writes:

That long line of warlike Abbe/Abbeys beginning with John who came in the *Bonaventure* and settled in Salem in 1636; his son Thomas who settled in Enfield after King Phillips War; his grandson Lieutenant Thomas Abbe, and his great-grandson, Thomas Abbey, Ensign and Lieutenant in the French and Indian Wars and afterward Captain under Washington throughout the Revolutionary War, whose service I was invited to represent in the Connecticut Society of the Cincinnati. On the Thursday following the Battle of

⁴⁵⁷ Abbe & Nichols, *Abbe-Abbey Genealogy*, 104-105.

⁴⁵⁸ *Ibid.*, 51; Connecticut Historical Society (CHS), Albert Carlos Bates, *Rolls of Connecticut Men in the French And Indian War, 1755-1762 ...* (Hartford, Connecticut Historical Society, 1903-05), Vol 2: 247 – Lt. 7th Co. under Capt. Seth King, 1761, (babel.hathitrust.org), 10/8/2020.

Lexington, Thomas Abbey, on learning of the fight, procured a drum and drummed the people out of the meeting-house at Enfield, where they were gathered at their regular weekday lecture."⁴⁵⁹

There were no clocks in early Enfield and until 1784, no church bell, and so it fell upon the shoulders of the town drummer to call the people together on time. It was his duty to drum the people to worship on Sunday morning, let the minister know that the congregation was ready, and to drum the call to funerals, lectures, and town meetings. A continuous beating of the drum was the traditional alarm.

On Wednesday, 19 April 1775, fighting between the British soldiers and the colonial army at Lexington had begun. The next day a rider came to Enfield with furious speed, his horse lathered and covered with foam from the hard ride to deliver a message. On that day, Thursday, 20 April 1775, the town drummer was Thomas Abbey;⁴⁶⁰ his drum was battered and bore a painted unicorn.⁴⁶¹

"To Abbey Sir, Relief is badly needed, the men are weak and weary, and food is short."

With that news, Thomas Abbey picked up his drum and hurried to Enfield's third meetinghouse where Reverend Elam Potter's Thursday afternoon lecture was taking place. Lieutenant Abbey began to beat his drum, and when the drumming did not cease, the minister stopped the service and the curious congregation went out to see what was going on. Once everyone was gathered, Lieutenant Abbey announced the word from the rider that Bunker Hill needed relief. Corporeal Abbey was one of the seventy-four volunteers who marched to the aid of Boston with the Enfield Company led by Major Nathaniel Terry (son of Ephriam Terry-his wife's uncle) and Captain John Simmons, Jr.⁴⁶²

⁴⁵⁹ Abbe & Nichols, *Abbe-Abbey Genealogy*, 51; Freeman, *Memorial of Captain Thomas Abbey*, (reprint), 13-14; the author writes that indeed the meeting was on a Thursday, despite the poem stating it was on the Sabbath day. Thursday was a day of study at the church. This work can also be read @ archive.org.

⁴⁶⁰ www.enfieldhistoricalsociety.org 10/8/2020.

⁴⁶¹ Freeman, *Memorial of Captain Thomas Abbey*, 190.

⁴⁶² CHS and Bates, *Rolls of Connecticut Men in the French And Indian War, 1755-1762*, Vol 2, 10-11, (babel.hathitrust.org), 10/8/2020; Iris Rose Guertin, comp., *Connecticut Soldiers, French and Indian Wars*, <online database>, (Provo, Utah, Ancestry.com Operations Inc., 2000), 10: Thomas Abby, Corpl., First Regiment, Commander Capt. and Col. Phineas Lyman, 3rd Company Commander Capt. and Col. Josiah Griswold, 1758 payroll, 10/8/2020; *Ibid.*, 247: Thomas Abbe Lieut., CT First Regiment, Commander Phineas Lyman Col. & Capt., 7th Company Commander Capt. Seth King, 1761, payroll. (Note: In 1755, the Connecticut General Assembly ordered the mustering of colony men to fight in what became known as the French and Indian War. This database is a listing of over 29,000 men who served in the colonial militia between 1755 and 1762. It reveals the soldier's name, rank, location of enlistment, regiment, and company. Additionally, researchers will find the regimental and company commanders, with accompanying rank, listed with each record. The page number refers to the original work from which these records were transcribed.) 10/8/2020.

Thomas Abbey returned home from the war, commissioned as a Captain. Note: There is a record of a Thomas Abbey's *Survivors' Pension Application* on ancestry.com.⁴⁶³ After review, I determined it to be the record of Thomas Abbey, son of Benjamin Abbe, son of Samuel Abbe, son of immigrant John Abbe and first cousin once removed (I think!) to "our" Thomas Abbey. The church around which Captain Abbey beat the long roll was completed January 1754 and stood near the present church. The town used it as a church until 1849. Bought by the town and moved, it now stands on the west side of the street. It has been used as a town hall ever since.⁴⁶⁴ A statue of Captain Thomas Abbey III now stands proudly in front of the Congregational Church on Enfield Street.

A Memorial to Captain Abbey and others of the family is about to be erected by Mr. Alden Freeman with his mother Francis Maria (Abbey) Freeman, widow of Joel Francis Freeman, granddaughter of Peter Abbey, and daughter of Judge Seth Alden Abbey; and his sisters.

The Abbey Memorial will be on the green in Enfield, on the site of the church, out of which Captain Abbey drummed the congregation at the Lexington Alarm. The actual site of the old church is just in front of the present edifice. The design is of a marble statue on a pedestal surrounded by four marble seats in the Greek style. The marble is from the Ross Quarry in Tennessee. Inscriptions line the backs of the seats commemorate the achievements of some of the best-known descendants of the Abbey family, in the fields of war, literature, and science. The sculptor Sherry Edmundson Fry, used for a model for the face and figure for the statue of Captain Abbey, a daguerreotype of his grandson Seth Alden Abbey, taken at the same age. Daniel C. French, sculptor of the "Minute Men," unveiled at Concord Bridge in 1875, has taken great interest in the work of Mr. Fry and loaned him the simple Colonial Uniform used for the presentation of Captain Abbey. A poem was written by Benjamin F Taylor and published in the *Atlantic Monthly* in May 1878, beautifully commemorates this compelling event. The four sides of the base of Captain Thomas Abbey's statue are carved with its words. The memorial was dedicated on

4 November 1916 and sits in front of the First Congregational Church at the intersection of S Road and Hwy 5, or Enfield Street. (Written 1916)

The following is an extract from a letter written by the grandson of Capt. Thomas Abbey, Seth Alden Abbey to his son Henry Gilbert Abbey dated 15 June 1872 telling something of Thomas Abbey:

When I was a small boy, I was frequently at his house of a week at a time and have heard him tell many a thrilling tale of his hairbreadth escapes, hardships, sufferings, etc. During the French War, he received a commission as Ensign in the Colonial troop and saw

⁴⁶³ *Connecticut, Revolutionary War Military Lists, 1775-83*, <online database>, (Provo, Utah, Ancestry.com Operations Inc., 1999), 88: Thomas Abbe, Capt. Enfield, discharged before 1/1/1780; Freeman, *Memorial of Thomas Abbey*, 37, 10/8/2020.

⁴⁶⁴ Today it is the Enfield Old Town Hall Museum located at 294 Enfield Street (Route 5), <https://www.enfieldhistoricalsociety.org/EHSoth.html>, 10/8/2020.

considerable service against the French and Indians. At the breaking out of the Revolution, a volunteer company was formed in his neighborhood, and he was elected their Captain, and they were soon ordered to join Colonel Willett's Regiment in New York. I have heard him say, frequently, that he had chances of promotion, often, but his men would not consent to his leaving them. When a boy, I saw many of his old soldiers who had served during the war; and the neighbors were as particular in addressing any of them, in giving them their title as Corporal such as one, or Sergeant such as one, as they would be in addressing a General. Thomas Abbey died in 1811 and was as anxious for a fight with Old England, which was then much talked of, just before his death, as in his younger days. He died suddenly with apoplexy.⁴⁶⁵

Up until the late 19th century, **apoplexy** referred to any sudden death that began with a sudden loss of consciousness, especially one in which the victim died within a matter of seconds after losing consciousness. Ruptured aortic aneurysms and even heart attacks and strokes were referred to as apoplexy because, before the advent of medical science, there was limited ability to differentiate abnormal conditions and diseased states.

Before his death, the 1790 *US Federal Census*⁴⁶⁶ lists his family:

Thomas Abbey home in 1790, Enfield, Hartford, Connecticut:

Free white persons, male, under 163

Free white persons, male, 16 and over1

Free white persons, females 2

Number of Household members6

Capt. Thomas Abbey III, died Enfield, Connecticut 1 June 1811.⁴⁶⁷ I have been unable to locate a Will.

DIED—At Chatham, May 24th, Mr. Eliakim Usserl, aged 68.—At Norwich, June 2d, Miss Sabell Huntington of Lebanon, aged 42.—At Enfield, Mr. Thomas Abbey, aged 80.—At Ellington, widow Mary Grant, aged 91.—At Bloomfield, (New-York,) widow Jewima Mporc, aged 68, formerly of this town.—At Waterbury, Lauren Barnes, Esq, aged 80; Mr. William Scovil, aged 91.

⁴⁶⁵ Abbe & Nichols, *Abbe-Abbey Genealogy*, 53.

⁴⁶⁶ 1790 *U.S. Federal Census*, <online database>, (Provo, Utah Ancestry.com, Operations Inc., 2010), Enfield, Hartford, Connecticut; Series: M637; Roll: 1; Page: 423; Image: 614; FHL Film #0568141, 10/8/2020.

⁴⁶⁷ Patricia Law Hatcher, *Abstract of Graves of Revolutionary Patriots*, <online database>, (Provo, Utah, Ancestry.com Operations Inc., 1999), Enfield Hartford, County, Connecticut, Vol., 1 Serial 12260, Vol 5: Thomas Abbe Enfield Cemetery, Enfield Ct 59. 10/8/2020; *Ibid.*, Vol. 1 serial 11127, Vol 2, Enfield CT 46. 10/8/2020; Connecticut State Library (CSL), *Hale Collection of Cemetery Inscriptions and Newspaper Notices 1629-1934*, Vol 13, #95, Vol 19, #37, Vol 26 #229, (ancestry.com), 10/8/2020.

The Statue of Captain Thomas Abbey

"The memory of our fathers should be the watchword of liberty throughout the land; for, imperfect as they were, the world before had not seen their like, nor will it soon, we fear, behold their like again. Such models of moral excellence, such apostles of civil and religious liberty, such shades of the illustrious dead looking down upon their descendants with approbation or reproof, according as they follow or depart from the good way, constitute a censorship inferior only to the eye of God; and to ridicule them is national suicide."

Henry Ward Beecher 1813 - 1887

"The embattled farmers at Lexington, the men who already had arms, who seized them and came forth in order to assert the independence and political freedom of themselves and their neighbors. That is the ideal picture of America – the rising of a nation."

Woodrow Wilson - 29 January 1916





THE CAPTAIN'S DRUM

"A battered drum that bore a painted unicorn."

There was nothing irreverent in Thomas Abbey's summoning the people from church by beating a drum. His news was vital and demanded immediate action. It was the decisive moment in our Revolution, and he used the usual and accepted method of assembling the people in that early day. Throughout New England at that period congregations were called to church service by the beating of a drum through the town.

The third Meeting House in Enfield was built in 1775 by Isaac Kibbe (another ancestor we will meet in Volume 2). It replaced the church which stood on the green, one-third of a mile to the south, where on 8 July 1741 Jonathan Edwards preached the famous sermon, "Sinners in the Hands of an Angry God."

This "new" meeting house was in use from 1775 to 1848. In 1776, while Enfield's Minutemen were attending services in the building Captain Abbey used his famous drum to announce the outbreak of war at Concord and Lexington. *The Abbey Memorial* stands just across the road from where this "venerable structure was originally erected."

Descendant Alden Freeman writes:

The Town Meeting is justly regarded as the cradle of American Independence, and this building, by reason of its traditions, both as a place of worship, where three generations of the people of Enfield were baptized, married and their funerals held, and also as the Town Hall, where three later generations have fulfilled their political duties as free American citizens, deserves, for all future time, to be cherished with affection and with pride by a religious and liberty-loving people.

In 1848, this meeting house became the Town Hall of Enfield, and in 1923, with much help from the Penelope Terry Chapter of the DAR, it was renovated and opened as a community house. In 1972, the Enfield Historical Society began further restoration and in the early 1980s it was opened as the Old Town Hall Museum, and houses the Enfield Historical Society.

Freeman, *Memorial of Captain Thomas Abbey*, 20;
<https://www.enfieldhistoricalsociety.org/EHSoth.html>

The Captain's Drum

I. In Pilgrim land one Sabbath day
 The winter lay like sheep about
 The ragged pastures mullen gray;
 The April sun shone in and out,
 The showers swept by in fitful flocks,
 And eaves ticked fast like mantel clocks.

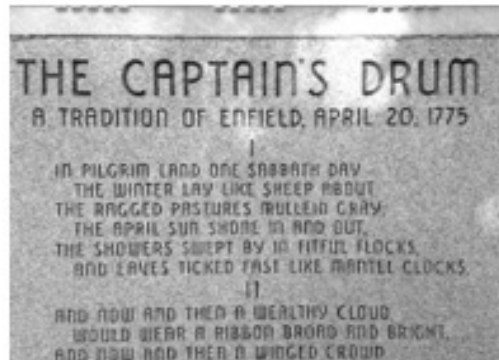
II. And now and then a wealthy cloud
 Would wear a ribbon broad and bright,
 And now and then a winged crowd
 Of shining azure flash in sight;
 So rainbows bend and blue-birds fly
 And violets show their bits of sky.

III. To Enfield church throng all the town
 In quilted hood and bombazine,
 In beaver hat with flaring crown
 And quaint vandyke and victorine,
 and buttoned boys in roundabout
 From calyx collars blossom out.

IV. Bandanas wave their feeble fire
 And footstoves tinkle up the aisle,
 A gray-haired Elder leads the choir
 And girls in linsey-woolsey smile.
 So back to life the beings glide
 Whose very graves have ebbled and died.

V. One hundred years have waned, and yet
 We call the roll, and not in vain.
 For one whose flint-lock musket set
 The echoes wild round Fort Duquesne,
 And swelled the battle's powder smoke
 Ere Revolution's thunders woke.

VI. Lo, Thomas Abbey answers "Here!"
 Within the dull long-metre place;
 That day upon the parson's ear
 And tramping down his words of grace
 A horseman's gallop rudely beat
 Along the splashed and empty street.



VII. The rider drew his dripping rein
 And then a letter wasp-nest gray
 That ran: "The Concord Minute-Men
 And Red-Coats had a fight to-day.
 To Captain Abbey this with speed."
 Ten little words to tell the deed.

VIII. The Captain read, struck out for home
 The old quickstep of battle born.
 Slung on once more a battered drum
 That bore a painted unicorn,
 Then right-about as whirls a torch
 He stood before the sacred porch;

IX. And then a murmuring of bees
 Broke in upon the house of prayer,
 And then a wind-song swept the trees,
 And then a snarl from wolfish lair,
 And then a charge of grenadiers,
 And then a flight of drum-beat cheers.

X. So drum and doctrine rudely blent.
 The casements rattled strange accord,
 No mortal knew what either meant,
 'Twas double-drag and Holy Word.
 Thus saith the drum and thus the Lord.
 The Captain raised so wild a rout
 He drummed the congregation out!

XI. The people gathered round amazed,
The soldier bared his head and spoke,
And every sentence burned and blazed
As trenchant as a sabre-stroke :
"Tis time to pick the flint to-day,
To sling the knapsack and away —

XII. The Green of Lexington is red
With British Red-Coats, brothers' blood
In rightful cause the earliest dead
Are always best beloved of God.
Mark time now let the march begin!
All bound for Boston, fall right in!"

XIII. Then rub-a-dub the drum jarred on,
The throbbing roll of battle beat!
"Fall in, my men!" and one by one.
They rhymed the tune with heart and feet
And so they made a Sabbath march
To glory 'neath the elm-tree arch.

XIV. The Continental line unwound
Along the church-yard's breathless sod,
And holler grew the hallowed ground
Where Virtue slept and Valor trod.
Two hundred strong that April day |
They rallied out and marched away.

XV. Brigaded there at Bunker Hill
Their names are writ on Glory's page,
The brave old Captain's Sunday drill
Has drummed its way across the Age.

Benjamin Franklin Taylor 1819-1887
Enfield, April, 1875



Author with Thomas Abbey – Fall 2012



Many other Abbey ancestors are commemorated in engravings on the benches around the Thomas Abbey statue.

Author's photos Fall 2012

Penelope Terry – wife of Capt. Thomas Abbey III
Fourth Generation of her Ancestral Lines in America
1729 – 1817

Penelope Terry, b. Enfield, Connecticut 5 Feb 1729/30, daughter of **Dr. (or Captain) Ebenezer Terry** and **Mary (Helme/s) Terry**. She m. Enfield 22 June 1749, Capt. Thomas Abbey III. They had eight children.

She was the granddaughter of Captain Samuel Terry, pioneer settler, whose father, Sergeant Samuel Terry, came from Barnet, England, as an apprentice to William Pynchon, founder of Springfield. The first marriage recorded in Enfield was that of Captain Samuel Terry to Hannah Morgan, daughter of Captain Miles Morgan, defender of Springfield against the Indians on 5 October 1675.⁴⁶⁸

Penelope (Terry) Abbey followed in her father's footsteps as a physician. Ebenezer Terry was Enfield's earliest physician, and Penelope was her father's pupil and assistant, and Enfield's first female doctor. In April 1775, Thomas Abbey left with the other men from Enfield to engage the British at the Lexington Alarm, and Penelope remained at home to provide medical care to the community.

She was a forerunner of women physicians of today. In her obituary, the *Hartford Courant* states that she practiced for thirty-three years and was present at the birth of 1,389 children. She welcomed into life a whole generation of the inhabitants of Enfield. She was the mother of eleven children⁴⁶⁹ and left forty-five grandchildren, fifty-two great-grandchildren, and two great-great-grandchildren. A total of 104 descendants of herself and Captain Abbey were living at the time of her death. The *Town Records* indicate she died 2 December 1817, "the widow Penelope Abby of age and a cancer, aged 87."⁴⁷⁰ Other sources indicate 2 January 1818, (age 88) but that may be the date of her burial.

The Penelope Terry Abbey Chapter of the Daughters of the American Revolution (DAR) in Enfield, Connecticut, organized in 1922, has nine past or current members descended from Captain Thomas Abbey and his wife Penelope (Terry) Abbey. Three past members are descendants of Penelope's parents, Dr. Ebenezer Terry and Mary (Helme/s) Terry. Her female descendants, if members of the DAR, can become auxiliary members of the Penelope Terry chapter. My application is in process at the time of this writing.

⁴⁶⁸ Freeman, *The Memorial of Captain Thomas Abbey*, 39, or 37 in reprint.

⁴⁶⁹ I find records for eight children, perhaps there were children who died at/near birth and were not recorded?

⁴⁷⁰ Francis Olcott Allen and John Chauncey Pease, *The History of Enfield, Connecticut*, (Lancaster, Pennsylvania, Wickersham printing co., 1900), Vol 2:1416, (babel.hathitrust.org), 10/8/2020.



This is an older image of the bench erected in honor of Penelope (Terry) Abbey in the Enfield Street Cemetery. The tree behind it is no longer standing. Sadly, today the bench has a lot of mildew obstructing the writing. The bench seat is of the same Greek style as the seats around Captain Thomas Abbey's memorial. Both monuments were installed in November 1916 by Alden Freeman, great-great-grandson of this couple.⁴⁷¹

Visiting Enfield, Connecticut



Enfield is located in Hartford County, 18 miles north of Hartford, Connecticut and 8 miles south of Springfield, Massachusetts. Enfield was named and incorporated by the Colony of Massachusetts in 1683 and annexed to Connecticut in 1749. Enfield's population grew as settlers traveled west on the King's Highway. After 1781, Enfield became home to a Shaker community, and in the 19th century, was home to a carpet mill and a gunpowder mill. Later, Thompsonville Carpets and the North American headquarters of the Lego Corporation, were located in Enfield. The town is 33.8 square miles with a current population of approximately 45,246.

Wikipedia.com

I have traveled to Enfield on two occasions, once in 2012, during a season of spectacular fall foliage and again in 2019, in the rain of early summer. On the earlier trip, I entered from the south, and exiting the interstate, and easily found the statue of Thomas Abbey which stands in front of the Congregational Church on Route 5. The weather was cooperative for photography, and a

⁴⁷¹ *Connecticut, Deaths and Burials Index, 1650-1934* <online data base>, (Provo, Utah, Ancestry.com Operations, Inc., 2011), FHL film #3212; CSL, *Hale Collection of Cemetery Inscriptions and Newspaper Notices 1629-1934*, (ancestry.com) 10/8/2020; *North American Family Histories 1500-2000, Daughters of the American Revolution Lineage Book of the Charter Members of the DAR, Lineage Book, NSDAR, Vol 162, 1920: 15*, 10/8/2020; www.ptadar.org, Sadly the tree had to be cut down and the bench is in disrepair, 10/8/2020; *U.S., Find a Grave Index, 1600s-Current*, Memorial #39171178, citing: Freeman, *Memorial of Thomas Abbey*, <https://archive.org/stream/memorialofcaptai00free#page/39/mode/1up>, 10/8/2020.

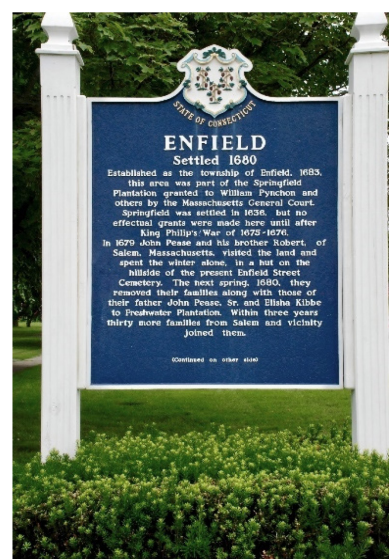
generous benefactor had recently had the statue cleaned. Thomas stood in sparkling contrast to the stained marble of the benches surrounding the memorial.



I spent some time taking photos and reading the poem and inscriptions that I had previously only seen in my mother's *Abbey Memorial* book. A church caretaker graciously took my photo with Captain Abbey. I then headed out of town to find the Appalachian Trail as it traversed the Berkshires in Western Massachusetts, before heading toward Boston where a Country Heritage Quilt Tour was to depart the following day.

Fast forward to the summer of 2019, when I approached Enfield from Springfield, Massachusetts, to the north. Not only were these rainy days in Enfield, but Thomas Abbey was also sporting a high school cap and gown, duct-taped to his statue. I will leave the image to your imagination! I was so thankful to have had the previous photographs. On this visit, I wandered through the Enfield Street Cemetery and met with William Friday, the curator at the Enfield Historical Society. I also enjoyed breakfast with Kelly Davis, regent of the Penelope Terry DAR chapter, and did further research at the Enfield library. Yes, I hope to return, perhaps with a grandchild or two! Somehow, I missed walking down Abbe Road.

Author's photos Fall 2012

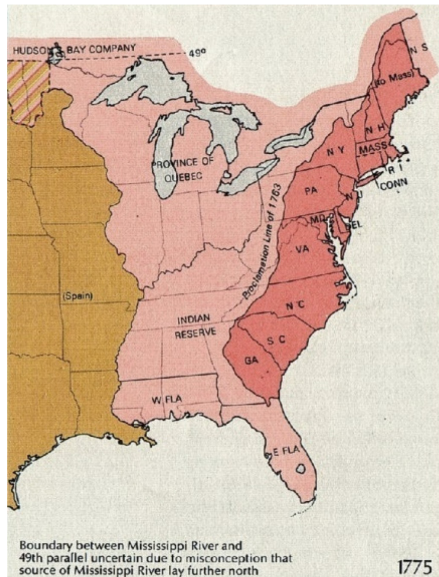


History and Inventions in this Generation 1731 – 1817



In December 1760, King George III⁴⁷² enacted a ban on colonial land grants. In February 1763, the Treaty of Paris ended the French and Indian Wars, but only a few months later, Pontiac's war began in the Great Lakes region. During Pontiac's War in 1763, four years after Mary (Pease) Abbe's death, a loose tribal alliance of Native peoples attacked British settlements in Ohio, Pennsylvania, and the Great Lakes area, surprising the British military and causing panic among civilians. Fighting was brutal on both sides.

⁴⁷² George III by Allan Ramsay 1765



King George III issued a proclamation which forbade colonists from settling beyond the Appalachian Mountains and established a new "Indian reserve" on land that some frontier colonists felt entitled to, and had even previously directly purchased.⁴⁷³ Tensions increased with and among the Native peoples living already on those Western lands. Under pressure, tribes left their lands in exchange for lands further west, and the fate of the American continent's indigenous residents would be changed forever.

In 1764, the English colony of Rhode Island and Providence Plantation establish Brown University. In August of 1765, riots erupt in Boston as colonists react to numerous taxes, and the Quartering Act passed by England. In 1766, the New York assembly refused to house British soldiers at

colonist's expense. In response, the British government passes the Townshend Acts, which:

- raised revenue in the colonies to pay the salaries of governors and judges so that they would remain loyal to Great Britain
- created a more effective means of enforcing compliance with trade regulations
- punished the Province of New York for failure to comply with the 1765 Quartering Act
- established the precedent that the British Parliament had the right to tax the colonies.

Tensions continued to escalate, and in February 1768, Massachusetts sent a circular letter to the other colonial assemblies; in England, Parliament passed a resolution calling for harsher treatment of the American Colonists. British soldiers occupy Boston, and on 15 March 1770, the *Boston Massacre* occurs. British soldiers shot and killed several people while being harassed by a mob. In April 1770, the Townshend duties and taxes are repealed on all goods except tea.

Patriot leaders of the thirteen Colonies formed *Committees of Correspondence* to coordinate responses to England, rally opposition on common causes, and share plans for collective action. By 1773, these committees had emerged as shadow governments, superseding the colonial legislature, and royal officials. The Maryland Committee of Correspondence was instrumental in setting up the First Continental Congress in Philadelphia, the beginnings of a formal political union among the colonies.

About 7,000 - 8,000 colonial patriots served on these committees, at the colonial and local levels, comprising most of the leadership in their communities; loyalists excluded. In the previous generation, loyalists would have included Vassall ancestors. The committees became the leaders of the American resistance to British actions and largely determined the war effort at the state

⁴⁷³ Indian Reserve map (wikimediacommons.org)

and local level. When Congress decided to boycott British products, the colonial and local committees took charge, examining merchant records and publishing the names of merchants who attempted to defy the boycott by importing British goods. In December 1773, the Boston Tea party took place.

The committees promoted patriotism and home manufacturing, advising Americans to avoid luxuries and lead a simpler life. The committees set up espionage networks to identify disloyal elements, displace the royal officials, and help topple the entire Imperial system in each colony. In late 1774, and early 1775, they supervised the elections of provincial conventions, which took over the actual operation of the colonial government.



From March to April 1775, the battles of Lexington and Concord took place, and the Second Continental Congress met. On 23 August 1775, following the Battle of Bunker Hill (ancestor John Fairfield once owned land nearby), King George III issued *A Proclamation for Suppressing Rebellion and Sedition*, declaring elements of the American Colonies to be in a state of "open and avowed rebellion."⁴⁷⁴

On 10 January 1776, the publication of Thomas Paine's *Common Sense*'s took place. It urged the colonies to seek independence from Great Britain. Writing in clear and persuasive prose, Paine marshaled moral and political arguments to encourage ordinary people in the Colonies to fight for a government built on the concept of social equality. It became an immediate sensation. The opening of colonial ports to all nations happened soon after, and colonies began drafting state constitutions. On 4 July 1776 (244 years - to the day - on which I am writing this in 2020), the adoption of the *United States Declaration of Independence* took place.⁴⁷⁵ History buffs will know the official copy of the Declaration wasn't signed until the 2nd of August.



⁴⁷⁴ Stamp issued 4 April 1925 depicting the battle at Lexington modeled from a painting by Henry Sandham.

⁴⁷⁵ *Declaration of Independence* painting by John Trumbull, 1818, commons.wikipedia.com

The American Revolution lasted from 1776 to the final battle in 1781 at the siege of Yorktown. There, George Washington leading French and American troops, defeated and captured General Cornwallis and his British troops. On 3 September 1783, Britain signed the *Treaty of Paris*, recognizing American independence, and in November 1783, British troops evacuated New York marking the end of British rule. Washington triumphantly returned with the Continental Army.

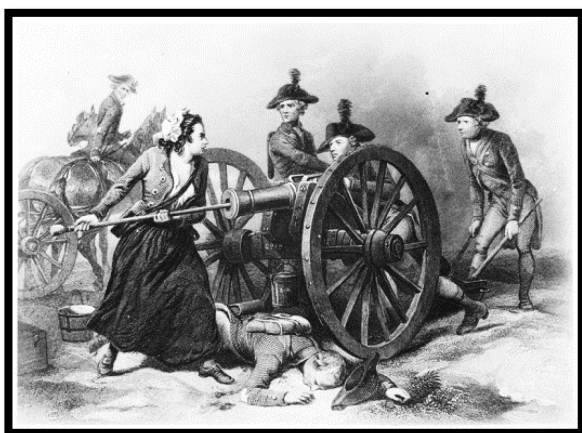
The Lives and Role of Women 1731 - 1817

In 1756, Lydia (Chapin) Taft of Uxbridge, Massachusetts, became the only colonial woman known to vote, casting a vote in the local town hall meeting in place of her deceased husband. From 1775 until 1807, the state constitution in New Jersey permitted all persons worth fifty pounds who resided in the state for one year to vote. Therefore, free black people and single women had the vote until 1807, but not married women, as their property ownership was invariably limited.

A powerful coercive tool the Americans used to protest British policies after 1765 was the boycott of imported British consumer goods. Women played an active role in encouraging patriotic sanctions and monitoring compliance. They refused to purchase imports while emphasizing the virtues of avoiding luxury by using homespun clothing and other locally made products. Since Ebenezer Terry was a doctor, perhaps the family had a higher income than the family of a farmer, but I don't know that they would have purchased many imported goods.

The Revolution had a profound effect on the philosophical underpinnings of American society. One aspect that was drastically changed by the democratic ideals of the Revolution was the roles of women. The idea of *Republican Motherhood* was born in this period and reflected the importance of Republicanism, the dominant and guiding political and social philosophy of America. *Republicanism* assumes that a prosperous republic rested upon the virtue of its citizens. Therefore, women had the essential role of instilling their children with values conducive to a healthy republic. During this period, the wife's relationship with her husband also became more liberal, as love and affection instead of obedience and subservience began to characterize the ideal marital relationship. Also, many women contributed to the war effort through fundraising and running family businesses in the absence of husbands.

However, whatever gains they had made, women still found themselves subordinated, legally and socially, to their husbands, disenfranchised and with only the mother's role open to them. Deborah Sampson was the only woman historians know of who fought disguised as a man in the Revolutionary War. In 1782, she disguised herself as a man and joined the 4th Massachusetts Regiment. Discovery of her gender led to an honorable discharge. Many women were attached to the Army to help their husbands and to handle cooking and cleaning. In 1776, Margaret Corbin fired her recently deceased husband's cannon; she was herself severely wounded in the battle. She received a pension from Congress to recognize her service, making her the first American woman ever to receive a government pension. At Monmouth's battle in 1778, Mary Ludwig Hays McCauley joined the fight by firing her wounded husband's cannon.



Her story became the *Molly Pitcher* legend, because she also carried pitchers of war to men on the battlefield.⁴⁷⁶

In March 1776, Abigail Adams⁴⁷⁷ wrote to her husband John Adams, a leader in the Continental Congress. She asked:

"In the new code of laws which I suppose it will be necessary for you to make, I desire you would remember the ladies and be more generous and favorable to them than your ancestors. Do not put

such unlimited power into the hands of the husbands."

Her husband wrote back, "As to your extraordinary code of laws, I cannot but laugh...Depend upon it, we know better than to repeal our masculine systems." Sadly, Adams, treated his wife's sentiment as a joke, demonstrating the limits of revolutionary liberty.

The opening of possibilities for women also engendered this sort of backlash that hindered the cause of women's rights and led to a greater rigidity, marginalizing women from political life. To learn more about Abigail and other pioneering women of this era, I recommend Cokie Roberts', *Founding Mothers*.

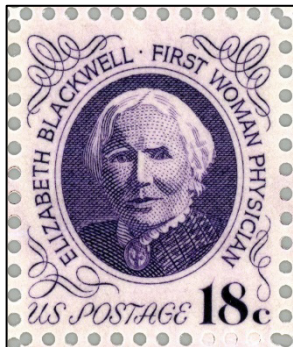


⁴⁷⁶ <https://www.biography.com/military-figure/molly-pitcher>, 10/8/2020; *Molly Pitcher at the Battle of Monmouth. June 1778*, Copy of engraving by J. C. Armytage after Alonzo Chappel, 1931 – 1932.

⁴⁷⁷ *Abigail Adams* by Gilbert Stuart. Mrs. John Adams felt that "if we mean to have heroes, statesmen and philosophers, we should have learned women." Stuart's portrait, begun when the first lady was 56, captures the patrician beauty of her straight nose and arched brows. The forthright painting also leaves little doubt about the force of character, intellect, and principles of this daughter of a Massachusetts' minister.

Women took a small but visible role in the public sphere after 1783. First Lady Martha Washington sponsored social events in the national capital. The socializing became known as *the Republican Court* and provided elite women with an opportunity to play a backstage political role.

A tipping point occurred with the *Petticoat Affair of 1830* in which President Andrew Jackson's cabinet members' wives humiliated the Secretary of War's wife, leading to a political crisis for the President.



In 1849, some thirty-two years after the death of Penelope (Terry) Abbey, Elizabeth Blackwell (1821–1910) graduated from Geneva Medical College in New York at the head of her class and thus became the first (official) female doctor in America.⁴⁷⁸ Her image is featured on this 1974 postage stamp.

Terry Family Ancestry

The surname Terry comes from the Norman personal name Therry, or Thierry, which in turn comes from the Germanic Theodoric. The meaning of the name in 17th century England, was “little deer” which caused much merriment as the years went by, for all the children down the line, were of strong build and one might say, there was nothing “little” about any of them.” (Edith May Read Ball, *Terry Island* (1944), 23.)

Among the descendants of Captain Samuel Terry (1661-1730), third Captain of the Enfield train band, were Major Nathaniel Terry, ranking officer of the company enlisted by Captain Abbey; General Alfred Howe Terry (1827-1890), of the Civil War and Reverend Roderick Terry, D. D., of Newport, Rhode Island, former governor of the New York Society of Mayflower Descendants.

Freeman, *Memorial of Thomas Abbey* reprint, 91.

⁴⁷⁸ https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/History_of_women_in_the_United_States, 10/8/2020

Penelope Terry was the daughter of **Ebenezer Terry**, b. Enfield, Hartford, Connecticut 31 Mar 1696 to Samuel and Hannah (Morgan) Terry.⁴⁷⁹ "Doct^r Ebenazar Terry, d. Enfield, Connecticut 2 Aug 1780, he being in his 85th year;"⁴⁸⁰ m. **Mary Helme/s**, South Kingston, Rhode Island 30 Nov 1721.⁴⁸¹ The marriage record states they were married by Rouse Helme, justice.

Children:

- i. EBENEZER TERRY JR., b. South Kingston, Washington, Rhode Island 29 Oct 1722; m. Elizabeth Geer; d. Enfield, Hartford, Connecticut 15 July 1817. Remaining children all born in Enfield, Hartford, Connecticut:
- ii. DORCAS TERRY, b. 2 Apr 1725; d. Coventry, Connecticut 31 July 1801; bur. Coventry, Silver Street Cemetery; m. (1) Macey Thropp; m. (2) as the second wife, David Hibbard.⁴⁸²
- iii. JOHN TERRY, b. 7 Mar 1726; d. Hardwick, Worcester, Massachusetts abt. 2 Aug 1780; m. Enfield, 11 Apr 1751 Lydia Dillis.⁴⁸³
- iv. MARY TERRY, b. 16 Apr 1728; d. Montague City, Franklin, Massachusetts 9 Sept 1824; m. Judah Nash Sr.
- v. **PENELOPE TERRY**, b. 5 Feb 1729/30; d. Enfield 2 Jan 1818; m. **Thomas Abbey III (Capt.)**.⁴⁸⁴
- vi. SELAH TERRY, b. 12 Mar 1732; d. 13 June 1803, (age 71 yrs, 3 mo); bur. Enfield Cemetery; husband of Michal (____) m. Enfield, 25 Mar 1755; parents of twelve known children.⁴⁸⁵
- vii. MEHITABLE TERRY, b. 5 July 1734; d. Enfield 9 July 1737 (age 3).
- viii. CHRISTOPHER HELME TERRY, b. 3 Mar 1736; d. Enfield, 12 Aug 1770.
- ix. HIRAM TERRY, b. 16 Feb 1738; d. Enfield 5 Nov 1782.
- x. MEHITABLE TERRY (second of the name), b. 6 Jan 1740; d. Enfield 31 Aug 1744 (age 4).
- xi. SAMUEL TERRY, b. 1742.⁴⁸⁶

⁴⁷⁹ Allen & Pease, *The History of Enfield, Connecticut*, Vol 2, 1588, (babel.hathitrust.org) 10/8/2020; Savage, Dexter, & Farmer, *A Genealogical Dictionary of the First Settlers of New England: ...* (babel.hathitrust.org), 269 (268-270), 10/8/2020.

⁴⁸⁰ Allen & Pease, *The History of Enfield, Connecticut*, Vol 2:1876, (babel.hathitrust.org) 10/8/2020.

⁴⁸¹ *The NEHG Register, 1847-2011*, <online database>, (Provo, Utah, Ancestry.com Operations, Inc., 2011), Vol 67, *Early Marriages of South Kingston Rhode Island*, 287, 10/8/2020; *Rhode Island, Vital Extracts, 1636-1899*, <online database>, (Provo, Utah, Ancestry.com Operations, Inc., 2014), 46, 10/8/2020.

⁴⁸² *The New England Historical and Genealogical Register*, Vol. 156: 37, 38, Justine Harwood Laquer, *Who Was Dorcas Throop, Wife of David Hibbard of Coventry, Connecticut?* (americanancestors.org), 10/8/2020,

⁴⁸³ <https://ancestors.familysearch.org/en/LZKQ-NV8/john-terry-sr-1726-1780>, 10/8/2020.

⁴⁸⁴ Freeman, *Memorial of Captain Thomas Abbey*, 39.

⁴⁸⁵ U.S. Find a Grave, Memorial #25778881, "By long experience have I known Thy sov'reign power to save: At Thy command I venture down Securely to the Grave" 10/8/2020.

⁴⁸⁶ Some online trees have Samuel, others do not. Most sources say there were 11 children and so I have included him.

Dr. Ebenezer Terry, 1696 - 1780, was the first native physician of Enfield. He first practiced, for some years, in South Kingston, Rhode Island, where he was married to Mary Helme. In about 1722, with his family, Dr. Terry settled in Enfield while the town was still in the colony of Massachusetts. He represented it several times in the Legislature, the General Court of Massachusetts. He was a man of wealth and prominence.

The 1790 Census lists the family⁴⁸⁷:

Ebenezer Terry (Herry) home in 1790, Enfield, Connecticut,

Free white persons, male, under 161

Free white persons, male, 16 and over2

Free white persons, females 4

Number of Household members7

The **1790 U.S. Census** shows the total population of the United States, exclusive of slaves, to be 3,231,533. Families averaged six people in twelve states. The U.S. was bound by the Mississippi River to the west, and Philadelphia was the capital. In 1790, there were few roads, bridges were almost unknown, town boundaries were often not defined, and semi-independent states resisted a harmonious nationality under Federal authority. Inhabitants were often afraid that some scheme for increasing taxes was underway and others opposed enumeration for religious grounds, believing a count could be cause for divine displeasure.

Dr. Ebenezer Terry, d. 2 Aug 1780 Enfield, Hartford, Connecticut.⁴⁸⁸ Sadly my photo of his headstone is in shadow. The one on *Find a Grave* is not much better. The photographer there has offered this transcription (to the best of her ability):

Ye living men see here your end.
To Jesus' voice pray you attend.
Your days your years how swift...
Be warn'd.... prepare to die."

I did not locate a Will.

⁴⁸⁷ 1790 U.S. Federal Census, Enfield, Hartford, Connecticut; Series: M637; Roll: 1: 423; Image: 614; FHL Film: 0568141, (ancestry.com), 10/8/2020.

⁴⁸⁸ CSL, Connecticut, Hale Collection of Cemetery Inscriptions and Newspaper Notices 1629-1934, Vol 15: 38, 110-1 Enfield Street Cemetery, Section A, 10/8/2020; The NEHGR 1847-2011, Vol 060 (1906) 307, *Inscriptions in Connecticut* (ancestry.com), 10/8/2020; U.S. Find a Grave, Memorial #25778118, (ancestry.com) 10/8/2020.

Mary Helme, b. 1700 Rhode Island⁴⁸⁹, was the daughter of **Samuel Helme** of South Kingston, Rhode Island, and **Dorcas (Lnunk) Helme**, and the great-granddaughter of Sergeant Christopher Helme, of Warwick, Rhode Island. Mary (Helme) Terry, d. Enfield, Connecticut 5 Apr 1762, some 18 years before her husband.⁴⁹⁰



In Memory of Mrs Mary
wife to Doc'r Ebenezer Terry
she died April 5th 1762; in
ye 62nd year of her age
Who live'd beloved and died lamented
In the fair Book of Life Divine
may God inscribe her name⁴⁹¹
their let it fill some humble place
beneath the slauter'd Lamb⁴⁹²

The top arch of her headstone - the *lunette* - bears an image of a cherub, a messenger of God.

⁴⁸⁹ *Rhode Island Births and Christenings, 1600-1914*, <online database>, FamilySearch.org, citing North Kingstown, Washington, Rhode Island; FHL film #908,270; *Rhode Island, Birth index, 1636- 1930*, <online database>, (Provo, Utah, Ancestry.com Operations Inc., 2000), 10/8/2020.

⁴⁹⁰ *Connecticut, Deaths and Burials Index, 1772-1934*, <online database>, (Provo, Utah, Ancestry.com Operations Inc., 2011), FHL film #3333; CSL, *Connecticut, Hale Collection of Cemetery Inscriptions and Newspaper Notices 1629-1934*, 110-1 Vol 15, Section A, # 38 (ancestry.com), 10/8/2020; U.S. *Find a Grave Memorial* # 25778033; there is another Memorial #5778118 for Mary, with incorrect information.

⁴⁹¹ Bob Clark, *Enfield, Connecticut: Stories Carved in Stone*, (West Springfield, Massachusetts, Dog Pond Press, 2006), 55, (books.google.com), 10/8/2020.

⁴⁹² Photo by Jack Jr. *Find a Grave* ID 47354182, used by permission. Sadly, by my visit the headstone was not readable.

18th century American Medicine

Unlike their English contemporaries, most doctors in early colonial America were not formally educated at universities. Instead, they learned their trade through apprenticeship or in hospitals, and then took on apprentices themselves.

Colonial physicians practiced medicine, surgery and apothecary, as needed. As the colonies grew and prospered, some physicians could afford to be trained at universities abroad and earn a formal medical degree. On the eve of the Revolutionary War, the colonies supported about 3,500 physicians; however, only 400 had undergone some sort of training, and only 200 held medical degrees. In early colonial times, at a time when midwives were considered physicians, 40 percent of physicians were women, including our ancestor, Penelope Terry.

As in Europe, colonial doctors, generally believed that the best cures had dramatic effects on the body. Medicines that caused vomiting and purging (including ipecac and jalap) were popular, as was mercury (to cause salivation) and cream of tartar (it's not just for baking!) Doctors also relied on bleeding, which might have the benefit of lowering a fever or even causing a suffering patient to lose consciousness. For those who trusted these doctors, the dramatic effect of their medicines testified to their strength. Skeptics argued that such powerful drugs could only weaken a sick person. One satirical poem summed up the remedies of the day:

"Piss, Spew, and Spit, Perspiration and Sweat;
Purge, Bleed, and Blister, Issues, and Clyster.

In early colonial times, physical illness was understood mainly within a framework of religious belief: disease as God's judgment. Prayer was the first of the healing arts, but it was not the only one. Consequently, when 17th and 18th century people suffered injuries or took sick, they called the minister and, if they could afford it, the doctor. Prayers and potions, and blessings and bloodlettings, complemented each other as bedside rituals.

The health of the colonial population varied by race and region. Epidemic diseases, like smallpox and measles, struck native Americans throughout the colonies. Africans and African Americans faced overwork, malnutrition, and a new disease environment. European migrants brought European diseases with them, but they also encountered conditions imported from Africa, including yellow fever and a deadly form of malaria. Cities were less healthy than rural regions, as crowding and improper disposal of wastes led to sickness. Street cleaning and inspection of foodstuffs were, at best, sporadic. As the population grew and trade expanded, diseases spread more quickly.

In the early 18th century, British "patent medicines" were imported. During the Revolutionary War, that supply of drugs from Britain ended. A 1778 alliance with France resulted in French medicine and other supplies being exported to America.

During my research, I ordered Laurie Krebs', *A Day in the Life of a Colonial Doctor*, for my granddaughters, whose mother is a cardiothoracic surgeon. Young readers can follow Dr. Benjamin Rush as he completes the tasks typical to a doctor in colonial times. From "bleeding" patients, to the kinds of medicines commonly used at that time, readers will understand what medical care looked like in America in the 1700s. The book discusses superstitions, lack of anesthesia, and remedies from Native Americans that are still in use today. Readers also get an introductory biography of Benjamin Rush, a signer of the Declaration of Independence, a delegate to the Continental Congress, a teacher, a protestor against capital punishment, and the founder of the first clinic for the poor in America.

For more info: <http://colonialnorthamerica.library.harvard.edu/spotlight/cna/feature/medicine-in-colonial-north-america>; Laurie Krebs, *A Day in the Life of a Colonial Doctor*, (New York, Rosen Publishing, 2004); <https://pubmed.ncbi.nlm.nih.gov/782235/>; Dr. John B. Beck, *Medicine in the American Colonies* (Horn & Wallace, Albany, NY 1850); <https://www.dosespot.com/medicine-in-the-revolutionary-war.html>

Dr. Ebenezer Terry was the son of **Captain Samuel Terry II**, b. Springfield, Hampden County, Massachusetts 18 July 1661;⁴⁹³ m. Springfield, Hampden, Massachusetts, (1) 17 May 1682, **Hannah Morgan**, daughter of Miles and Prudence (___) Morgan. Theirs was the first marriage recorded in Enfield,⁴⁹⁴ linking the two towns.

Children:

- i. HANNAH TERRY, b. 18 Nov 1684; d. 7 Oct 1759; m. Enfield 3 Mar 1706/7 William Bement, son of John and Martha (Dennis) Bement; they settled in the eastern part of the town near Buckhorn brook. William, d. 1728; seven children born in Enfield.
- ii. SAMUEL TERRY (REV.), b. Enfield 26 Mar 1690; d. Enfield 12 Dec 1730; m. Margaret (___).
- iii. REBECCA TERRY, b. Enfield 15 Nov 1692; d. aft. 1738, the date her last child was born; m. Enfield 15 Jan 1713 John Pasco, son of John and Rachel Pasco. (Several undocumented sources suggest her husband was John Haskell.)
- iv. TWIN SONS, b. 6 Jan 1694/5, d. 13 Jan 1694/95.^{495]}
- v. **EBENEZER TERRY (DR.)**, b. Enfield 31 Mar 1696; d. Enfield 2 Aug 1780; m. North Kingston, New Jersey 30 Nov 1721 **Mary Helme**.
- vi. Hannah (Morgan) Terry, died 17 January 1697, age 40,⁴⁹⁶ leaving a little flock motherless, a nine-month-old baby among them.⁴⁹⁷

Captain Samuel Terry II, m. (2) Wethersfield, Connecticut 4/6 January 1698 Martha Boardman, widow of Benjamin Crane.⁴⁹⁸ Benjamin was drowned in 1693 and left two little

⁴⁹³ *Massachusetts: Legislators of the General Court, 1691-1780*, <online database>, (*AmericanAncestors.org*, New England Historic Genealogical Society, 2002), (Orig. Pub. Boston, MA by Northeastern University Press, John A. Schutz, *Legislators of the Massachusetts General Court 1691-1780 A Biographical Dictionary*, 1997), 10/8/2020; *Massachusetts: Vital Records, 1620-1850*, Springfield V 1: 17, (*americanancestors.org*) 10/8/2020.

⁴⁹⁴ Allen & Pease, *The History of Enfield, Connecticut*, Vol 2: 1765, (*babel.hathitrust.org*) 10/8/2020; Henry Martyn Burt, *The First Century of the History of Springfield: The official records from 1636 to 1736, with an historical review and biographical mention of the founders*, (Springfield, Mass., H.M. Burt, 1899), Vol 2: 647, 648, (*babel.hathitrust.org*) 10/8/2020; *Massachusetts: Vital Records, 1620-1850*, Springfield, Vol 2, *The Pynchon Court Record, Marriages*: 1651; (*americanancestors.org*), 10/8/2020; *Massachusetts: Vital Records, 1620-1850 Springfield* Vol 2:1684 *Springfield Marriages*, (*americanancestors.org*), 10/8/2020.

⁴⁹⁵ *A history of the family of Morgan, from the year 1098 to present times*, <online database>, (Provo Utah, Ancestry.com Operations, Inc. 2005, search card catalogue) 218: XXVIII Hannah Morgan, 10/8/2020.

⁴⁹⁶ U.S. Find a Grave, Memorial #158100430, Enfield Street Cemetery, (*ancestry.com*), 10/8/2020.

⁴⁹⁷ <http://www.auntroma.com/terry.html> citing "Historical Papers read before the Penelope Terry Abbey Chapter of the Conn. Society, Daughters of the American Revolution" which included *The Terry Family of Enfield* read by Mrs. Leon Abbe on 29 March 1924, 10/8/2020.

⁴⁹⁸ Boardman Genealogy, 1525-1895: the English Home and Ancestry of Samuel Boreman, Wethersfield, Connecticut; Thomas Boreman, Ipswich, Massachusetts: With some Account of Their Descendants (now called Boardman) in America, Part II: footnotes: 210-211, 'The entry of her marriage in the Enfield town records reads,

children, Benjamin and Isaac. Benjamin, the little son, had died, but Isaac Crane, born 10 August 1692, was brought up in the Terry family.⁴⁹⁹

Children of his second marriage:

- i. BENJAMIN TERRY, b. Enfield, Hartford, Connecticut 13 Oct 1698; d. Enfield 20 Feb 1795; bur. Enfield Street Cemetery; m. Enfield 29 Mar 1721 Hannah Pease, daughter of James and Hannah (Harmon) Pease; eleven children; he was a blacksmith.
- ii. EPHRAIM TERRY SR. (MAJ. ESQ.), b. Enfield 24 Oct 1701; d. Enfield 14 Oct 1783; bur. Enfield Street Cemetery; m. Enfield 13 Sept 1723 Ann Collins, daughter of Rev. Nathaniel (first minister in Enfield) and Alice (Adams) Collins. Ann was also a great-great-granddaughter of William Bradford of the *Mayflower*. Ephraim was a tanner and a Major of Militia; he was chairman of the committee to relieve the sufferers from the passage of the Boston Port Bill, 1774; he served as Justice of the Peace of Hartford County, 1776. He is a Patriot of the American Revolution. They had nine children who survived to adulthood.
- iii. JACOB TERRY, b. Enfield 20 Feb 1703; d. Enfield 20 Apr 1799; m. Enfield 28 May 1730 Mary Pease, daughter of James and Hannah (Harmon) Pease; he was a farmer.
- iv. MARTHA TERRY, b. Enfield 18 Feb 1705; d. Enfield abt. 6 Mar 1706 (age two weeks).
- v. JOHNATHAN TERRY, b. Enfield 17 Nov 1707; d. 15 Sept 1793; m. 1738 Sarah Pease, b. 1710, daughter of James and Hannah (Harmon) Pease. Sarah, d., 14 Dec 1804. In his later years, Johnathan joined the Shakers in Enfield.⁵⁰⁰
- vi. ISAAC TERRY, b. Enfield 17 Apr 1713; d. Enfield 21 Oct 1782/3; m. Springfield, Massachusetts 18 July 1734 Margaret Downing, b. 23 Mar 1714, daughter of Nathaniel and Margaret (Pynchon) Downing, granddaughter of John Pynchon, twelve known children all born in Enfield; Isaac was a shoemaker.⁵⁰¹

In Springfield, Massachusetts, Samuel Terry Jr. held, at times, such local offices as constable and selectman. He was part of a group of Springfield residents who moved to Enfield, Massachusetts, which later became Enfield, Connecticut. In 1691, Benjamin Parsons, Samuel Terry Jr., and Isaac Morgan received a grant for a sawmill at Sawmill Brook (Terry Brook) at a site that the Gowdy distillery later used,⁵⁰² and in 1890, the Stowe Paper Mills. The men were to

"Samuel Terry and Martha Crean were Joyned in Merag jenawary [th]e 6, 1697-8, "the loop in the old way of writing the letter *e* giving it much the appearance of a *d*." (search card catalogue ancestry.com), 10/8/2020.

⁴⁹⁹ <http://www.auntroma.com/terry.html> citing the paper read by Mrs. Leon Abbe, 10/8/2020.

⁵⁰⁰ For more information: <http://www.enfieldhistoricalsociety.org/EHSShaker.html>

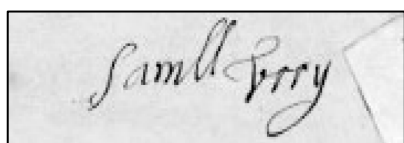
⁵⁰¹ Nathaniel Goodwin, *Genealogical Notes, or Contributions to the Family History of Some of the First Settlers of Connecticut and Massachusetts*, (Hartford, FA Brown, 1856), 221-222, (archive.org), 10/8/2020; Stephen Terry, *Notes of Terry families in the United States of America: mainly descended from Samuel of Springfield, Mass.*, (Hartford, Conn., S. Terry, 1887), 9-10, (babel.hathitrust.org), 10/8/2020.

⁵⁰² <https://www.newspapers.com/clip/40332876/hartford-courant/> 10/8/2020; Terry, Stephen, *Notes of Terry families in the United States of America: mainly descended from Samuel of Springfield, Mass.*, 8-10, (babel.hathitrust.org), 10/8/2020.

erect a sawmill by Michalmas tide some twelve months, saw boards for settlers' houses at 4s per hundred, and they had 20 acres of land near the mill or within one-half mile of it for a grant.⁵⁰³

Samuel Terry Jr. was several years the Ensign of the local militia and in 1716, became 3rd Captain of the *Train Band*, or Militia of Enfield. He was one of the first representatives to the General Court in Boston, often sustaining various town offices.⁵⁰⁴ Samuel was not active in the House of Representatives from 1717 - 1724, and in July 1720, they prosecuted him for nonattendance.⁵⁰⁵ Mr. Terry was a man of exemplary piety, prominent in the church, and is styled *gentleman* in the public record of his appointment as administrator of his father's estate. His primary occupation was that of a farmer.

Capt. Samuel Terry II, died 2 January 1730/1, age 70, Enfield, Hartford County, Connecticut; buried the same. He left seven sons, all but one settled in Enfield.⁵⁰⁶



He died with a Will signed 12 December 1730. In it his mentions his loving wife Martha, and as best as I can decipher, all living children. His sons Benjamin, Ephraim Johnathan were named as executors. It seems his estate was

probated from 9 March 1730/31 up to 1739/40, and included many Inventories and appraisals of land, and numerous pages of debts owed to the estate and expenses paid. In all there are twenty-three pages to be transcribed which I leave to future researchers.⁵⁰⁷



Here lies the Body of Capt.
Samuel Terry
Who deceased Jan'r 2nd
1730/1 in the 70th
year of His age.

⁵⁰³ <http://www.auntroma.com/terry.html>, 10/8/2020.

⁵⁰⁴ Allen & Pease, *The History of Enfield, Connecticut*, Vol 1, 40, (babel.hathitrust.org), 10/8/2020.

⁵⁰⁵ John A. Schultz, *Legislators of the Massachusetts General Courts 1691-1780, Biographical sketches of 3,131 State Representatives, and Essays on Early Massachusetts and Colonial America*, (Boston, Northeastern University Press, 1997), 356, (books.google.com), 10/8/2020; U.S. *Find a Grave*, Memorial 577709. (ancestry.com), 2/17/2023.

⁵⁰⁶ Allen & Pease, *The History of Enfield, Connecticut*, Vol 1, 40, (babel.hathitrust.org), 10/8/2020.

⁵⁰⁷ *Hampshire County, MA: Probate File Papers, 1660-1889*, <online database>, (AmericanAncestors.org, New England Historic Genealogical Society, 2016, 2017), (From records supplied by the Massachusetts Supreme Judicial Court Archives and the Hampshire County Court. Digitized images provided by FamilySearch.org), Case 146-2, 11/23/2020.

The top arch, or lunette, of his headstone bears the “winged death’s head,” a skull with wings. This was one of the earliest cemetery art forms in America. The Puritans viewed death in its stark reality: it was part of their daily lives, and they believed their salvation was never certain.

Martha (Boardman) (Crane) Terry, died Enfield 29 May 1743, age 77, having survived Mr. Terry about twelve years. Their gravestones stand together in Enfield Cemetery.⁵⁰⁸

Captain Samuel Terry II was the son of **Samuel Terry Sr. (Sergeant)**, b. Barnet, Greater London, England ca. 1632-34; d. Hampshire County, Massachusetts 1730; m. (1) **Ann Lobdell**; m. (2) Springfield, Massachusetts 19 November 1690 Sarah (Bliss) Scott.⁵⁰⁹

Samuel Terry Sr. was from a village called Barnet some eleven miles northward from the heart of London. He was probably an orphan and might have been born in 1634. This probability makes it unlikely that he was the son of Stephen Terry and his wife Jane/Joan Hardy, as claimed by so many online trees. More on this a bit further on. In 1650, Samuel Terry came to America in his youth as an indentured servant to William Pynchon, who founded the town of Springfield.⁵¹⁰

The earliest information on the founder of the Terry family in this country is an agreement formed in England by William Pynchon and Samuel Terry, 15 October 1650. In this agreement, Samuel is to receive a certain amount for his services and be taught the linen spinner’s trade, and he binds himself to be diligent in service. Signed by Samuel Terry, Benjamin Cooley (his mark B) , and William Pynchon, witnesses Richard Maund and John Benham.

The Hon. William Pynchon was in England in the spring of 1650, and there made the contract, and doubtless, it was then that he took into apprenticeship the boy Samuel Terry, who may have been of Barnet, a village eleven miles from London. Samuel Terry may have been an orphan whom Mr. Pynchon had known, and it is unlikely that he would have taken such a boy for less than the entire term of his minority. Accordingly, he was probably born about the year 1633 or 1634. Samuel Terry, with Pynchon, arrives in America about 1650, and was found in Springfield, Massachusetts, 15 October 1650.⁵¹¹

⁵⁰⁸ Boardman Genealogy, 1525-1895, 211, Search Card Catalogue on ancestry.com, 10/8/2020.

⁵⁰⁹ *Massachusetts: Vital Records, 1620-1850, Springfield, Massachusetts Vital Records, Vol 2, Marriages*, 1652; (americanancestors.org), 10/8/2020, 10/8/2020.

⁵¹⁰ *Genealogical and family history of northern New York: a record of the achievements of her people in the making of a commonweal*, <online database>, (Provo, Utah, Ancestry.com Operations Inc., 2005, search card catalogue), Vol III, 1167; Virkus, *Immigrant Ancestors*, 65.

⁵¹¹ *Our Colonial and continental ancestors: the ancestry of Mr. and Mrs. Louis William Dommerich*, <online database>, (Provo, Utah, Ancestry.com Operations Inc., 2005), search card catalogue, 176-178 for many of the references to Samuel Terry Sr.; David Sanders Clark, *Notes on the Terry family and related families*, <archive.org>, (Washington 1957), 1-3, 10/8/2020; *U.S. and Canada, Passenger and Immigration Lists Index, 1500's- 1900's*, Boston, Mass., 1650: 286, (ancestry.com), 10/8/2020.

When he returned to the colonies, Pynchon became involved in difficulties with the authorities because of the theological views outlined in a pamphlet he had published⁵¹². In 1652, Pynchon returned to England, and Benjamin Cooley⁵¹³, then of Springfield, assumed Samuel's indenture-ship (to learn the weaving business), for an additional "three years, six months, and some odd dayes" until 10 April 1654. "To this frontier community, separated by hundreds of miles of wilderness from Boston, a man who could make cloth was a valuable asset."⁵¹⁴ He was to receive food and lodging and fifty shillings for each year in good merchantable peas at three shillings per bushel, provided "he will be willing and careful to learn."

At the time of Terry's indenture to Cooley, William Pynchon remitted a year when Terry had been bound, and gave him 20s. Their relations remained very friendly, and as early as 22 May 1654, Terry opened an account and bought goods from Pynchon, some being "1 yd 1/2 of blew cotton and one sickle." Pynchon frequently employed him to take wheat to Enfield Falls, and to bring back merchandise for Pynchon's store, sometimes in connection with Miles Morgan.

On 7 January 1654, Samuel Terry Sr. was granted 10 acres of land by the town of Springfield on Chicopee Plain on the condition that he remain in five years. There was some difficulty about the land in 1658, whether because of conflicting grants or lack of surveys. There was a claim that by leaving town, he forfeited his title to the land.

He married **Ann Lobdell** in Springfield, 3 January 1660.⁵¹⁵ Ann Lobdell's ancestry is uncertain. There was a Simon Lobdell in Springfield at that time, who may have been her brother, or another relative, but he could not have been her father as his family was known, and all were under marriageable age.⁵¹⁶ Also, in this same year (1660), the town of Springfield settled with Samuel Terry Sr. for his claim to the land by making him a grant a little further north.

⁵¹² See text box William Pynchon.

⁵¹³ *U.S. Find a Grave*, Memorial #57503162. The information is posted by M. Cooley, perhaps a descendant of Benjamin Cooley, Samuel's first master of weaving, (ancestry.com), 10/8/2020.

⁵¹⁴ Clark, *Notes on the Terry family* ..., 1-3: <archive.org>, 10/8/2020.

⁵¹⁵ <http://mindrumfamilyhistory.com/getperson.php?personID=I16514&tree=mindrum>, 10/13/2020; *New England Marriages to 1700*, <online database>, (AmericanAncestors.org, New England Historic Genealogical Society, 2008.) Originally published as: *New England Marriages Prior to 1700*, (Boston, Mass., New England Historic Genealogical Society, 2015), 1498, 10/8/2020.

⁵¹⁶ Julia Ardelia Harrison Lobdell, *Simon Lobdell – 1646 of Milford, Conn. And his descendants*, (Chicago, The Windermere Press, 1907), 9-12, scans done at NEHGS June 2019, 11, she claims Ann was indeed a sister of Simon Lobdell, & <archive.org>, 10/8/2020.

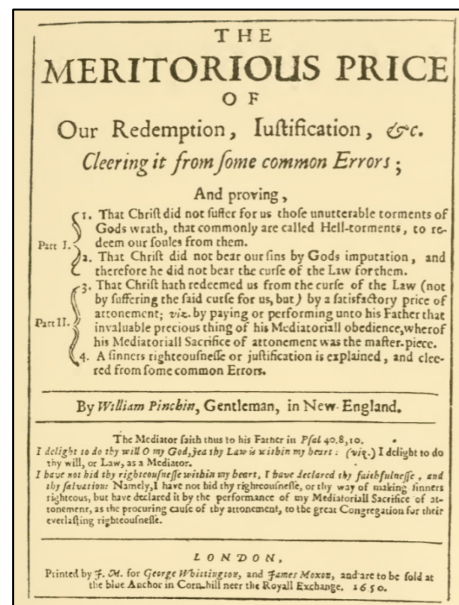
William Pynchon (1590-1662) was an English colonist and fur trader best known as the founder of Springfield, Massachusetts. He was also one of the original patentees of the Massachusetts Bay Colony. First settling in Roxbury, Massachusetts, he became dissatisfied with that town's notoriously rocky soil and in 1635, led the initial settlement expedition to The Connecticut River Valley where he found exceptionally fertile soil and a fine spot for conducting trade. This was land just north of the Connecticut River's first large falls, the Enfield Falls. In 1636, he returned to officially purchase its land, then known as Agawam.

Pynchon was a man of peace and very business-minded, and he advocated for friendship with the region's natives as a means of ensuring the continued trade of goods. Pynchon's stance led to Springfield aligning with the faraway government of the Massachusetts Bay Colony rather than that of the closer Connecticut Colony. However, in 1650, that changed. Pynchon published a book, *The Meritorious Price of Our Redemption*, and soon, the officials of the Massachusetts Bay Colony accused him of heresy and demanded that he retract his claim that obedience, rather than punishment, was the price of atonement. Instead of retracting his arguments, Pynchon stealthily transferred his land holdings to his son John Pynchon, whom we find in Enfield records, and who later became an equally large influence in Springfield. William Pynchon returned to England in 1652, where he remained for the rest of his life. *The Meritorious Price of Our Redemption* was the New World's first banned book!"

https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/William_Pynchon



Portrait of William Pynchon 1657
commons.wikimedia.com



Samuel and Ann (Lobdell) Terry Sr. had ten children, several of whom died in early infancy and childhood.⁵¹⁷

- i. **SAMUEL TERRY JR.**, b. Springfield 18 July 1661; d. Enfield 2 Jan 1731; m. (1) **Hannah Morgan**; m. (2) Martha Boardman.
- ii. EPHRAIM TERRY, b. Springfield 26 Aug 1663; d. Springfield 15 July 1670, drowned, age 6.
- iii. THOMAS TERRY, b. Springfield 6 Mar 1665; d. Springfield 9 May 1760; m. 21 Apr 1687 Mary Cooley; eight children.
- iv. MARY TERRY, b. Springfield 9 July 1667; d. Springfield bef. 10 Aug 1731; m. 5 Nov 1690 Jeremiah Horton; two children.
- v. REBECCA TERRY, b. Springfield 25 July 1669; d. Springfield 18 Aug 1670; age 1.
- vi. INFANT TERRY, b. Springfield 12 Dec 1670; d. Springfield 12 Dec 1670.
- vii. EPHRAIM TERRY (second of the name), b. Springfield 3 Feb 1672; d. Lebanon, Windham, Connecticut 7 Dec 1760; m. Enfield 25 July 1695 Hannah Eggleston.
- viii. REBECCA TERRY (second of the name), b. 15 Dec 1673; d. Lebanon, New London Connecticut 2 June 1745; m. Springfield 16 Sept 1691 Abel Wright.
- ix. ELIZABETH TERRY, b. Springfield 25 Mar 1677; d. Springfield 2 Apr 1677; a few weeks of age.
- x. ANNA/ANN TERRY, b. abt. 1678; d. Lebanon, New Haven, Connecticut 2 Feb 1732; m. 11 Jan 1693 John Bliss Jr.⁵¹⁸

In 1661 Samuel Terry Sr. was counted as a resident of the township of Springfield, Hampden County, Massachusetts.⁵¹⁹ In February 1662, he was seated in the ninth seat in the meeting house.

Between 1663 and 1665, Samuel Terry Sr. received grants from William Pynchon in Worrnoco, what is now Westfield, on the south side of the river; also, some land at "Askkanunksuck," by the north side of the Agawam River halfway to Worrnoco. In 1664, he was granted some land at Fresh Water Brook, now Enfield, Connecticut, releasing his Worrnoco grant. He still owned his land at Chicopee Plain, and his name appeared in a list of the allowed and admitted inhabitants of Springfield. In 1665, he received an additional grant in Springfield, Massachusetts, 30 acres of upland alongside his meadowland beyond Chicopee Plain. In this year, he contributed 6s towards the new mill.

He was one of the signers of a 1668 petition to the general court forcefully protesting against the *impost* (taxes or compulsory payments) on the river traffic established by the Connecticut Colony. In February 1669, he was constable of the town, which he held again ten years later, beginning 4 August 1679, and also in 1692 and 1693.

⁵¹⁷ Goodwin, *Genealogical notes or Contributions to the family history of some of the first settlers of Connecticut and Massachusetts*, 221-222, <archive.org>, 10/8/2020.

⁵¹⁸ U.S. *Find a Grave*, Memorial #112064625, John Bliss Sr. for notes on this Bliss family, (ancestry.com), 10/8/2020.

⁵¹⁹ *Massachusetts, Compiled Census and Census Substitutes Index, 1790-1890*, <online database>, (Provo, Utah, Ancestry.com Operations, Inc., 1999), pg. 083, 10/8/2020.

In 1670, he and several others were assessed two loads of firewood each for their pastor; a few were assessed one load and a few, three or four loads. He was fence viewer for the year. In 1672, he refused to mend his fence because he was required to maintain more than his share. The town meeting decided that the fence did to belong to him, and he was obliged to pay 8s 6d as a fine.

Samuel Terry Sr. was in Springfield in 1673. There is a record of an arrest he assisted in making while taking his turn as night watch. He was appointed surveyor of highways in January 1678. In December of that year, he was appointed appraiser of the town stock. His name and that of his son Samuel appear in a list of persons who took the Oath of Allegiance 31 December 1678, and 1 January 1679. As residents of Springfield moved to settle Enfield, Samuel Terry Sr. was among the first; he was allotted 40 acres on 1 December 1679 and in 1680 his home lot was on the west side of the upper end of town.

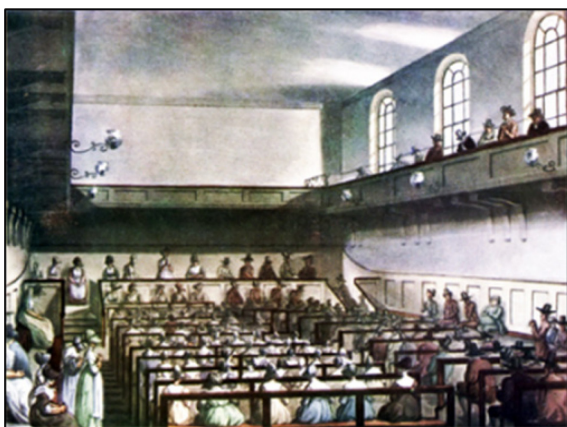
His trade was a linen weaver, and in 1681, he took an apprentice, John Matthews, an orphaned infant of 10 months, until 21 years of age. There is mention of him this year as a former constable of Springfield, and also this year, his son Samuel received a grant of 40 acres of land at Fresh Water Brook. In August of 1681, he agreed to pay six bushels of Indian corn to the town, "being overplus money in his Country Rates when he was Constable." In February 1680/81 and again in March 1681/82, he was absent from the town meeting and was fined 6d for the offense.

"He was a man about forty-seven years old, living in Springfield, on the west side of Main street, about thirty-five rods north of the present corner of Cypress street; by trade a linen weaver, but also something of a farmer, fairly well-to-do in life, and esteemed by his neighbors; his eldest son Samuel, was a young man of twenty, helping in his father's work, and courting Miss Hannah, the daughter of their neighbor Miles Morgan, whom he married the next year; his son Thomas was a youth of sixteen, his daughter Mary a lass of thirteen, Ephraim a lad of ten, his second daughter Rebecca in her eighth year, and his youngest child Anne large enough to run about and prattle, while little Johnny Matthews, a babe in arms, with Mrs. Ann Terry, the good mother, and housewife, completed the group."⁵²⁰

In 1682, his son Samuel Terry Jr. married Hannah Morgan and left the paternal home to make for himself a new home in Enfield, on the land granted him the year before. In 1683, Samuel Terry Sr. has seven additional acres apportioned to him in Enfield; three acres of meadows and four of fields. He was a surveyor of highways.

⁵²⁰ Terry, *Notes of Terry families in the United States of America...*, 8-10, (archive.org), 10/8/2020.

Enfield built its first meeting house in 1683, and Zachariah Booth and *Sejeant* Terry did the work. When finished, he and three others were appointed with the Selectmen a committee "to seat the meeting house before they meet in it."⁵²¹ From 1684 to 1686, he was a member of the committee to run the boundaries of the town.



Seating at the Meetinghouse

Seating at the Meetinghouse

Some members of the congregation were more concerned with the location of their seats than with the minister's sermon. People had assigned seats based on age and social status. At Newbury in 1669, Elizabeth Randall lost her long-term assignment, and although the new one was "equal in dignity", she didn't think so. The people who got her old seat renovated it, turning the bench into a fancy gated pew. Elizabeth really wanted to sit there, so she hiked up her skirts and just climbed over the partition and forced her way in. She, of course, ended up in the Essex County Court for that behavior, and the judges admonished her for "disorderly conduct unbecoming her sex."

Essex Genealogist, Vol 26 (2006):
americanancestors.org.

On 15 May 1684, Ann (Lobdell) Terry, died in Springfield, Hampden, Massachusetts. A few months later, Samuel Terry Sr.'s adopted child/apprentice Johnny Matthews also died.

In 1685, Samuel Terry Sr. was a member of the committee to establish boundaries between Springfield and adjoining towns, and records speak of him as Sergeant Samuel Terry. On 28 March 1687:

Samuel Terry Snnr desiring to shift his home lot and to take that near to his sone Samuel, which was then unoccupied, ... it is granted to him in the way of an exchange, he leaving the next lot to it which he had formerly to the Committee (to) dispose of.

In 1688, the first town meeting took place in Enfield, and Samuel Terry Sr. along with John Pease Sr., were chosen, Selectmen. There is a land record dated 22 May 1690:

Samuel Terry Senr also his grant forfeited, only he having given the home lot on the west side of the way to his son Samuel Terry jur being next to him who hath been according to order seven years and above on the place we do not confirm and grant said home lot to Samuel Terry jun that hath broke up most of it... Though forfeited by Samuel Terry Senr,

⁵²¹ Burt, *The First Century of the History of Springfield ...*, Vol 2: (644-648), 647, (babel.hathitrust.org), 10/8/2020.

yet he being one of the Petitioners to the General Court for the place, we do allow it and grant it to his son Samuel Terry junr at his desire as aforesaid, all the rest of Samll Terry senr his grant being hereby declared void, nun and forfeited, by reason of his not settling on the places according to grant."⁵²² Was this all to say the home lot he gave to his son was okay and he forfeited all the other lands?

On 5 November 1690, his daughter Mary, who we may presume had been the housekeeper since her mother's death six years earlier, married Jeremiah Horton⁵²³, born 22 November 1665; died Springfield 25 August 1738.

A fortnight later, on 19 November 1690, Samuel Terry Sr. married Sarah (Bliss) Scott, widow of John Scott, and daughter of Thomas and Margaret Bliss, whose age (52) was a year or two less than his own.⁵²⁴ No children of this marriage. John Scott was deceased less than a year at this time. Before marrying Samuel Terry, Sarah had him sign a premarital agreement that she would retain and manage the estate that John Scott had left her. The original disposition of the estate was haphazard, little more than jottings with many insertions.

In 1693, Samuel Terry Sr. agreed to teach the art of cloth weaving to his stepson Ebenezer Scott.⁵²⁵ The agreement indicates he was still practicing weaving himself. This year also saw him chosen again as constable, which office he held again in 1700.

His second marriage proved unhappy. He and his wife parted in 1694, for causes which do not appear. On 26 December 1694, Sarah (Bliss) (Scott) Terry petitioned the court to allow her to administer her former husband's estate because Samuel Terry had absented himself and left her in a distressed condition. She was subsequently allowed to do so and to use or dispose of any part of said *Terry's* estate. Whether they ever lived together again, or where his home was after this, is unknown. It is a tradition in the family that he lived in Enfield, and it may be that he spent his later years in the home of his eldest son.

On 27 September 1705, Sarah (Bliss) (Scott) Terry died.

"Sarah Terrey the wife of Samel Terrey was Sick & died Sept: 27: 1705."⁵²⁶

On 1, 1705/06, administration of the estate of Sarah (Bliss) (Scott) Terry of Suffield was granted to William Scott of Springfield, with John Nille surety, 1 Page. The first record of Sarah Bliss' first husband, John Scott, is 26 July 1659, when the couple married in Springfield, Massachusetts.

⁵²² *Our Colonial and continental ancestors: the ancestry of Mr. and Mrs. Louis William Dommerich*, 176-178, (ancestry.com search card catalogue), 10/8/2020.

⁵²³ *Massachusetts: Vital Records, 1620-1850, Springfield Vol 1, Book 1, Births, Marriages and Deaths*: 25, (americanancestors.org), 10/8/2020.

⁵²⁴ *Massachusetts: Vital Records, 1620-1850, Springfield, Vital Records, Vol II, Marriages*, 1652, (americanancestors.org), 10/8/2020.

⁵²⁵ *U.S. Find a Grave*, Memorial #112063614, Old Springfield Cemetery, bio confirms Ebenezer and 7 other children of her first marriage.

⁵²⁶ Clifford L. Stott, *Vital Records of Springfield, Massachusetts to 1850*, (Boston, Massachusetts, New England Historical Genealogical Society, 2001), 1:121, 9/30/2021.

Scott was granted land on 19 February 1661/2 and had other grants in 1664 and 1665. Like most Puritans, he was involved in small court cases.⁵²⁷

In 1730, the administration of Samuel Terry Sr.'s estate was granted to his sons Samuel Jr. and Thomas, and in the record of the matter, he is called "husbandman," formerly of Springfield." 1730 was doubtless the year of his death, though there are no records of his exact date of death.⁵²⁸ His estate was probated in Hampshire County, and images of the original documents cover fourteen pages and can also be found on americanancestors.org and familysearch.org.⁵²⁹

The 8 March 1730/31 *Inventory of Lands Owned* came to 36£ 18s with an addendum for a "tract of land lying up End Brook on ye East side of ye Great River in Springfield, 7£." Obadiah Cooley, John Burt and Thomas Stebbins were the Appraisers. The estate was settled 10 August 1731. By this time his son Samuel Terry Jr. had also died.⁵³⁰

Samuel Terry Sr. signed his name in a free hand, as one much in the habit of writing, so probably he was better educated than most of the men of his time. The *Terry Family* writer states, "Men who attain so great an age as he, are apt to be of good size, with long bodies, large features, and much physical strength."

Researchers believe that Samuel Terry, from the area of Barnet, was an orphan. Mr. H.K. Terry of London conducted diligent searches of parish and probate records in Barnet and elsewhere in England and failed to discover any trace of Samuel Terry before his appearance in New England in 1650.⁵³¹

Though many online trees indicate Samuel Terry Sr. is the son of Stephen Terry and wife Jane Hardy, there is evidence to the contrary:

- Robert Charles Anderson does not list Samuel Terry among the children of Stephen Terry and Jane (Hardy) Terry in his *Great Migration Series*.
- Samuel Terry's birthplace and birth date do not fit with the marriage date and location of Stephen Terry and his wife, Jane Hardy. Stephen Terry first sailed on the *Mary and John* in 1630 to become one of the founders of Dorchester, Massachusetts. He returned to Dorchester, England, after 3 April 1633, and at Synmondsbury, Dorset, England 19 March

⁵²⁷ Burt, *The First Century of the History of Springfield...*, Vol 2: 632 for John Scott, (babel.hathitrust.org), 10/8/2020.

⁵²⁸ *U.S. Find a Grave*, Memorial #112063577. The information is again posted by M. Cooley, perhaps a descendant of Benjamin Cooley, Samuel's first master of weaving, (ancestry.com), 10/8/2020.

⁵²⁹ *Hampshire County, MA: Probate File Papers, 1660-1889*, (americanancestors.org), Case 146-25, 11/23/2020. One day, I hope future genealogists will have this, and other Wills mentioned in this work, professionally transcribed, possibly through the NEHGS; *Probate records, 1660-1916; Index, 1660-1971*, Vol. 5-6 1729-1745, Vol 5 p. 72, Northampton, Massachusetts, familysearch.org, 2/20/2021.

⁵³⁰ Terry, *Notes of Terry families in the United States of America...*, 8-10, (archive.org), 10/8/2020.

⁵³¹ Terry, *Notes of Terry families in the United States of America...*, 7, (archive.org), 10/8/2020.

1634 married Jane Hardy. Stephen Terry then returned to the colonies on the *Recovery* sailing back to Dorchester, Massachusetts, 31 March 1634. A son of Stephen Terry, descendant of gentry and pastors, would not have been left behind in England to come to America (in about 1650), as an indentured servant to William Pynchon.

<https://www.wikitree.com/wiki/Terry-636> has a discussion of Y-DNA matches or lack thereof, strengthening the argument that Samuel Terry was not the son of Stephen and Jane Hardy Terry.

The American colonies, and later states, did not have the elaborate social welfare system that we have today. There were systems in place to help those in need, and **orphans** were among those assisted by those systems. In the 18th and 19th centuries, most children lost at least one parent, possibly both, before they became adults. At the time, the legal definition of orphan included children who had lost only their father. Without the influence of a father figure in their life, these children posed a future threat to the community. They were often bound out to other families in the form of apprenticeships. In these arrangements, children worked for their keep learning the value of labor and paying for their room and board. Binding-out wasn't the only option, but it was the most common. Other options for orphans, and the poor, included outdoor relief (cash, donated goods, and medical assistance) and almshouses in city settings. It wasn't until the era of the new American nation that orphanages first appeared and entered their formative stage.

Later in the 18th century, pauper auctions placed the poor with guardians who took a stipend in exchange for room and board. The lower the pay, the greater the possibility for abuse. Hosts worked their boarders hard in a form of indentured servitude. Older children, who became apprentices, had some advantages. Because they had education, the tradesman wouldn't have to teach them to read and write. Also, many trades, such as blacksmithing, needed the physical strength of older boys and teens. The interests and skills of a more senior apprentice were more evident, and the likelihood of an apprentice losing interest or running away was less. Life for a female orphan was very different from her male counterparts. Boys were more likely to acquire apprenticeships, while girls were often bound out to do housework under the wives of tradesmen, learning skills she might have learned from her mother, skills that might secure a good marriage.

*Lobdell Family Ancestry*⁵³²

The surname Lobdell or Lopdell, sometimes spelled "Lobden," first appears as a medieval place name in Sussex, England, during the 1200s CE. The name may also mean "spider dell" or "spider valley" from the Anglo-Saxon, *hloppa*, or lob/cob = spider/spiderweb. Lobdell could mean a dweller in the deep hollow infested by spiders. Eww!

In England, the "dell" and the "den" as in Lobdell or Lobden, were interchangeable. The name has appeared as Lobdel, Lobden, Bobdoll, Lobel, Lobdon and other variations. One possible ancestor was physician Mathew Lobel (Mattias de L'Obel), b. 1518 Lille, France; practiced medicine in Germany, Italy and Switzerland. In London he became Physician to King James I and discovered the medicinal qualities of the plant Lobelia (as an expectorant). Warning: the FDA placed Lobelia on the Poisonous Plant Database as it is potentially toxic!

Samuel Terry Sr. m. **Ann Lobdell**, bapt. Northam, Devon, England 8 Mar 1634; d. Springfield, Hampden, Massachusetts 15 May 1684.⁵³³

Judy Jacobson, in her work, *Massachusetts Bay Connections*,⁵³⁴ covers the Lobdell family. books.google.com has the text. Here are some highlights:

Ann Lobdell may have been the daughter of **Nicholas Lobdell**, b. Devonshire or Kent County, England 1605; m. (1) England Jane ____⁵³⁵; she, d. 1641. Nicholas Lobdell, possibly m. Hingham, Massachusetts (2) Bridget Pierce, sister of Michael Pierce of Hingham;⁵³⁶ d. aft. 1645; estate Inventory 5 June 1662.

Children:

- i. ELIZABETH LOBDELL, bapt. Northam, Devonshire, England 21 Aug 1631; d. Springfield, Connecticut 11 Nov 1684; m. Springfield 20 Oct 1651 Johnathan Burt.
- ii. JAMES LOBDELL, d. Northam, 23 Sept 1632.
- iii. SIMON LOBDELL, bapt. Northam 23 Dec 1632; m. by 1669; d. Milford, Connecticut, 1717.

⁵³² <https://www.loc.gov/resource/hhh.de0167.photos?st=gallery>, Lobdell car wheel company, Christina Ave, Wilmington, New Castle County DE about 1968, *Library of Congress Photo Collection 1840-2000*, (Provo, Utah, Ancestry.com, 2007), 10/8/2020.

⁵³³ <http://mindrumfamilyhistory.com/getperson.php?personID=I16514&tree=mindrum> 10/8/2020.

⁵³⁴ Judy Jacobson, *Massachusetts Bay connections: historical and biographical sketches of the towns and communities of the Massachusetts Bay Colony*, (Baltimore, Maryland, Clearfield Co, 1992), 70-74, 158. Since I first found this book online, it is no longer searchable, though one books.google.com version offers 'snippets,' 10/8/2020; Julia Ardelia Harrison Lobdell, *Simon Lobdell – 1646 of Milford, Conn.* (Chicago, The Windermere Press, 1907), 9-12, scans done at NEHGS June 2019, and (archive.org), 10/8/2020.

⁵³⁵ Ancestry.com in their database: *Essex, Church of England Baptisms, Marriages and Burials 1513-1812* offers hints of a surname *Hovey*, I have not researched further.

⁵³⁶ http://dunhamwilcox.net/me/me_bio_lobdell.htm; U.S., *New England Marriages Prior to 1700*, 469, (ancestry.com), 10/8/2020.

- iv. ANN LOBDELL, bapt. 8 Mar 1634/4; d. Springfield 16 May 1684; m. **Samuel Terry Sr.** She is most likely the "unnamed daughter" mentioned in the church records.
- v. JOHN LOBDELL, b. Hingham, Massachusetts ca. 1639; lived in Hull, Massachusetts; his Will was proved Hull 7 Nov 1673; m. Hingham 19 July 1659 (1) Hannah, daughter of Deacon John Leavett; d. 23 Apr 1662; m. (2) Hull 21 Feb 1664 Mary Bosworth, daughter of Nathaniel Bosworth.
- vi. ISAAC LOBDELL, b. Hingham ca. 1637; d. 26 Apr 1718; m. Dedham, Massachusetts ca. 1656 Martha, daughter of Samuel Ward; d. 4 May 1708.

To date, the background and history of Nicholas Lobdell, an early settler of Hingham, Massachusetts, has remained all but obscure. A few facts are known: Lobdell emigrated from England in late 1635.⁵³⁷ He obtained grants of land at Hingham in 1635 and 1636. By 4 February 1636, he was already living at Hingham for on that date, Nathaniel Peck, a resident of Hingham, incurred a debt of 34£ to him.

In 1640, with John Mansfield, Nicholas Lobdell, witnessed the Will of Thomas Mussell, a seaman of Suffolk County, Massachusetts.⁵³⁸ Although Hingham town records do not say so, Lobdell had a wife with him, for *The History of Hingham* Vol 3:24, contains an entry which reads simply, "Goodman Lobdell's wife died March 1641 – *Hobarts Diary*."⁵³⁹

Aspinwall's *Notarial Records* establish that Lobdell was living at Hingham as late as 1648, for in that year, "Nicholas Lobdell of Hingham" issued a letter of attorney to Richard Shelton to collect the debt due him from Nathaniel Peck "of Barbados or St. Christophers, late of Hingham." After that, colonial records have no entries for Nicholas Lobdell; perhaps he died soon afterward at Hingham, intestate.⁵⁴⁰

In the 1650s, an Isaac and a John Lobdell appear in Hingham records. Most genealogists, including Julia Harrison Lobdell, author of the *Lobdell Genealogy*, have presumed that Isaac and John were sons of the earlier Nicholas Lobdell. Isaac and his wife, Martha, did name one of their sons Nicholas. This fact provides circumstantial evidence that Isaac and John were sons of the immigrant, Nicholas Lobdell. By 1673, Isaac and John moved with their families to Hull, Massachusetts, where John died in that year and Isaac in 1718.

A known contemporary of the two brothers was a Simon Lobdell, who appeared in 1655 as a resident of Milford, Connecticut. Julia Harrison Lobdell, *Simon Lobdell - 1646 of Milford, Conn, and his Descendants*, (8-9), supposes that Simon, "came as a young lad with one of a party from

⁵³⁷ Virkus, *Immigrant Ancestors*, 45.

⁵³⁸ Pope, *The pioneers of Massachusetts...* 289, (hathitrust.org), 10/8/2020/

⁵³⁹ Hingham, Massachusetts and various contributors, *History of the Town of Hingham, Massachusetts*, (published by the Town, 1893), Vol 3, George Lincoln Compiler, *Hingham Genealogies*, 24, (archive.org), 10/8/2020.

⁵⁴⁰ William Aspinwall, *A Volume relating to the early history of Boston, containing the Aspinwall notarial records from 1644 to 1651*, (Boston, Municipal Printing Office, 1903), 174, (archive.org), 10/8/2020; Pope, *The pioneers of Massachusetts...Additions and Corrections* 1902, 312a, (hathitrust.org), 10/8/2020.

Herford, England, (a shire in the West of England bordering on Wales) in 1645. In 1646, he was given by the 'first planters of Milford', a triangular shaped half-acre of ground as a house lot."

In 1657 Simon took the Freeman's Oath at Hartford, Connecticut, and was recorded as a taxpayer there in 1667. From 1666 to 1674, he was the prison keeper at Springfield, Massachusetts, but by 1677 he had returned with his family to Milford, Connecticut, where he remained until his death in 1717.

On the surface, there seems nothing that would connect Isaac and John Lobdell of Hull, Massachusetts, with Simon Lobdell of Milford, Connecticut. However, the *Lobdell Genealogy* contains the curious statement that in 1682 Simon Lobdell had land interests in Hull. There would seem little reason for Simon Lobdell to own land at Hull unless he had relatives in that town.

Genealogists generally credit Simon Lobdell with two sisters in the New World:

- Elizabeth Lobdell, m. Springfield, Massachusetts 20 Oct 1651, Jonathan Burt.
- **Ann Lobdell**, m. Springfield 3 Jan 1660/1, **Samuel Terry Sr.**

Both Elizabeth and Ann's husbands were prominent men in Springfield, and their presence there undoubtedly explains why Simon Lobdell settled in that town for a few years in 1666.

The evidence is slight, but the question arises: Could Simon Lobdell and his two sisters, Elizabeth and Ann, be the brother and sisters of Isaac and John Lobdell of Hull? Likewise, are these the five children of Nicholas Lobdell of Hingham? Searches through the parish records of Northam, Devonshire, England⁵⁴¹, produced the following entries about the Lobdell family:

- Elizabeth, daughter of Nicholas, christened 21 Aug 1631.
- Symon, son of Nicholas, christened 23 Dec 1632.
- Unnamed daughter of Nicholas, christened 8 Mar 1634/5. (Could this be Ann?)
- James, son of Nicholas, buried 23 Sept 1632.

These entries regarding four children of Nicholas Lobdell are doubtless the record of the New England Lobdell family before its departure for the New World in late 1635. The history of the family may be as follows:

Nicholas Lobdell (or Lobden as written in early records), b. Devonshire, England abt. 1605; m. probably near Northam, Devon by 1631, Jane (____).⁵⁴² They resided in Northam, Devonshire, until 1635 when they immigrated. By early 1636, they settled in Hingham, Massachusetts, where that year Nicholas received a grant of land.⁵⁴³ Jane died at Hingham in March 1641.

⁵⁴¹ *The American Genealogist*, Vol 54, (1978), 35 – 37, Douglas Richardson, *Nicholas Lobdell, Founder of the New England Lobdell Family*, (americanancestors.org), 10/8/2020,

⁵⁴² U.S., *New England Marriages Prior to 1700, Second Supplement to Torrey's New England Marriages Prior to 1700*, 40, (ancestry.com), 10/8/2020.

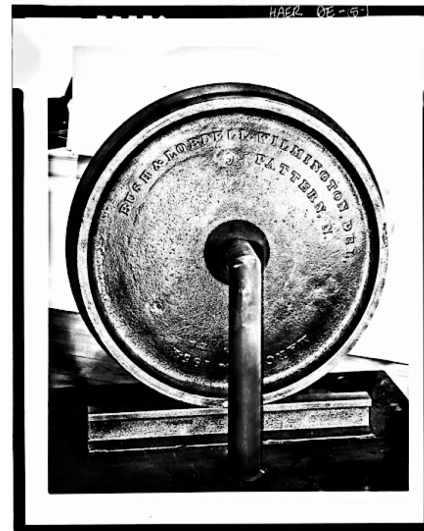
⁵⁴³ U.S. and Canada, *Passenger and Immigration Lists Index, 1500s-1900's*, Hingham, Massachusetts, 1635, citing Virkus, ed. *Immigrant Ancestors*, 45, (ancestry.com), 10/8/2020.

Nicholas, m. (2) Bridget Pierce. He died before 1647/48 when Bridget Pierce, m. Hingham, Massachusetts (2) Nathaniel Bosworth⁵⁴⁴, who left bequests in his Will to Mary, Sarah, John, and Nathan Lobdell. These, together with Isaac, are supposed to be the children of Nicholas Lobdell/Lobden.⁵⁴⁵ I will leave the research of the marriage and subsequent children of Bridget and Nathaniel Bosworth to others.

The parents of Nicholas Lobdell are unknown.



Lobdell Family Trivia



Bush & Lobdell, a partnership of machinist Charles Bush and his nephew George G. Lobdell, was formed in 1838. George is descended from Nicholas Lobdell (his 5th great grandfather) through his son Isaac. The firm started as a general machine shop and foundry, but in 1836 it began to specialize in the manufacture of cast railroad car wheels. The Lobdell Car Wheel Company was organized in Delaware in the spring of 1867, and became one of the largest car wheel factories in the world. The company went out of business ca. 1950.⁵⁴⁶ The Lobdell Wheel is a chilled cast-iron wheel. Library of Congress image above right.

⁵⁴⁴ Katherine Whitin Swift, *The Whitin family: Historical notes*, (Whitinsville, Mass., EK Swift, 1955), <online database>, (Ancestry.com Operations, Inc., 2005, search in card catalogue), 101, 10/8/2020.

⁵⁴⁵ Lobdell, Simon Lobdell, 1646 of Milford, Conn and his Descendants, Chapter: Nicholas Lobden (Lobdell) of Kingham, Mass. and some of his descendants, 353, 354, (archive.org) 10/8/2020 and scans done at NEHGS June 2019; *The Whitin family*, 101, (ancestry.com.), 10/8/2020.

⁵⁴⁶ <https://snaccooperative.org/ark:/99166/w6fn28z1>, 10/1/2021

I also found a website for a 1920's Lobdell Wooden Gaming Wheel made from a Lobdell, chromium plated armored wood rimmed bicycle wheel. The American Wood Rim company, of which EJ Lobdell was president, produced bicycle wheels and automobile steering wheels.⁵⁴⁷ I don't know the ancestry of EJ Lobdell but it seems 'wheel making' runs in the Lobdell family; an improvement, perhaps, on the legacy of being one who "dwells in the deep hollow infested by spiders," or promotes the use of poisonous plants!

Helme Family Ancestry

Helme was originally a name given to someone who worked as a herdsman. The surname is derived from the Old English word *helm*, which means a covering. In some later dialects, this word took on the which means of a roofed shelter for cattle. *Helme* may also be of German origin, a metonymic occupational name for a maker of hats, helmets, from the Germanic, "helm", helmet.

Penelope (Terry) Abbey's mother was Mary (Helme) Terry, b. 14 June 1700, North Kingstown, Washington County, Rhode Island.⁵⁴⁸ She was the daughter of **Samuel Helme**, b. 1675 Kingston, Washington, Rhode Island;⁵⁴⁹ m. South Kingstown, Washington, Rhode Island 1698, or by 1700 **Dorcus Lnunk**,⁵⁵⁰ b. ca. 1680 North Kingstown; d. abt. 1727 South Kingstown. Her name is consistently repeated but there are no sources online for her birth, her ancestry or her death.

Children:⁵⁵¹

- i. **MARY HELME**, b. 14 June 1700; d. aft 1717; m. South Kingstown, Rhode Island 30 Nov 1721 **Ebenezer Terry**.
- ii. **CHRISTOPHER HELME**, b. 30 Mar 1702/3; d. 1732 Kingstown, Rhode Island; m. South Kingstown Mary Dyer; he was a blacksmith.
- iii. **SAMUEL HELME II**, b. 21 Oct 1706; d. aft. 3 Sept 1727.
- iv. **DORCAS HELME**, b. 14 June 1710; m. Nathan Sheffield Sr., d. unknown; m. (2) Rhode Island 1 Dec 1748 Jospeh Irish.
- v. **WILLIAM HELME**, b. 12 Mar 1713/4; d. aft. 1727.

⁵⁴⁷ <https://onlinebicyclemuseum.co.uk/1920s-lobdell-wooden-gambling-wheel/>, 10/1/2021

⁵⁴⁸ *Rhode Island Birth Index, 1636 - 1960*, <online database>, (Provo, Utah, Ancestry.com Operations Inc., 2000), 10/8/2020.

⁵⁴⁹ *U.S. and International Marriage Records, 1560-1900*, birth year: 1675, marriage year: 1698, (ancestry.com), 10/8/2020.

⁵⁵⁰ *U.S., New England Marriages Prior to 1700, Second Supplement to Torrey's New England Marriages Prior to 1700*, 364, (ancestry.com) 10/8/2020; *U.S. and International Marriage Records, 1560-1900*, (ancestry.com), 10/8/2020.

⁵⁵¹ *Rhode Island: Vital Records, 1636-1850*, <online database>, (AmericanAncestors.org, New England Historic Genealogical Society, 2014), Originally Published as: James N. Arnold, *Vital records of Rhode Island 1636-1850: First Series: births, marriages and deaths: a family register for the people*, (Providence, RI, Narragansett Historical Publishing Company); Washington County Vol 5: 80, 10/8/2020.

- vi. JOHN HELME, b. 11 Feb 1703/4; named in Will.
- vii. THOMAS HELME, b. 3 Jan 1717/18; m. Newport, Rhode Island 1740 Mary James; named in his father's Will.
- viii. MERCY HELME, no information other than her name; named in Will; may have m. John Williams.

**The Will of Samuel Helme, South Kingstown, Rhode Island,
dated 3 September 1727, proved 12 February 1728**

To son Christopher, my homestead, farm, house & him paying legacies and to him, all movable estate in-doors and out. To son John, 100£; To son Samuel, 100£; To son William 70£ at age; To son Thomas 70£ at age; To daughter Mary *Perry*, (Terry), 10s she having had ____?; To daughter Dorcas Helme, 40£ at eighteen and a feather bed; To daughter Mercy Helm, 40£ and feather bed, riding beast and side-saddle. The town Council to be guardian to young children, and William and Thomas to learn to read, write and cipher and to be put out to a trade, and Mercy to learn to read the Bible.⁵⁵² Executor son Christopher.

Other information from his Will:

Father, Rowse Helme, deceased, testate.

Sons: Christopher, John, Samuel, William under age 21 and Thomas under age 21.

Daughters: Mary Terry, Darkas Helme under age 18, Marcy Helme under age 18.

Brothers: William Helme and Rowse Helme. Witnesses: Solomon Carpenter, James Helme and William Robinson.

In the Southern corner of Rhode Island, there lived, in the middle of the 18th century a race of large landowners called the **Narragansett planters**. Unlike other New England aristocrats, these people derived their wealth from the soil and not from success in mercantile adventures. Unlike their counterparts in Virginia, whose fortunes came from cultivation of staples like tobacco and cotton, these planters grew wealthy from the products of their dairies, their flocks of sheep, and their droves of splendid horses, the once-famous Narragansett pacers.

Edward Channing, *The Narragansett Planters: A Study of Causes*, Herbert B Adams, Ed., Johns Hopkins University Studies in Historical and Political Science, Fourth Series III, (Baltimore, Johns Hopkins University Press, March 1886), (archive.org), 30 pages total. An interesting read for background information. 10/13/2020

⁵⁵² John Osborne Austin, *The Genealogical Dictionary of Rhode Island: Comprising Three Generations of Settlers who came before 1690: with many families carried to the fourth generation*, (Albany, J. Munsell's Sons, 1887), 322-323 (back section), (archive.org), a very poor scan and difficult to read, 10/8/2020; Don Strahle, *Some North American Descendants of John Elmes of Lincolnshire, England through his Great-Grandson, Christopher Helme of Rhode Island*, (self-published July 2004), can be read on FamilySearch.org, 28, 11/23/2020.

Samuel Helme was the son of **Rouse Helme**, b. Warwick, Kent, Rhode Island 14 Nov 1644;⁵⁵³ d. 17 May 1712 North Kingstown, Washington, Rhode Island;⁵⁵⁴ m. Kingston, Washington, Rhode Island, 1676 **Mary Eldred**,⁵⁵⁵ b. Cambridge, Middlesex Massachusetts 15 June 1646,⁵⁵⁶ daughter of immigrants Samuel and Elizabeth (Miller) Eldred; d. 9 May 1712.⁵⁵⁷ Eldred may have been a topographical surname meaning "residence by an alder grove".

Children:⁵⁵⁸

- i. **SAMUEL HELME**, b. 1675; d. South Kingstown, Washington, Rhode Island 1727; m. **Dorcas Lnunk**, d. bef. 1727.
- ii. **ELIZABETH HELME**, b. abt. 1677; d. South Kingstown abt. 20 Sept 1727; m. Stephen Hazard, b. Portsmouth, Newport, Rhode Island 1665, son of Robert and Mary (Brownell) Hazard; d. 29 Sept 1727.⁵⁵⁹
- iii. **MARGARET HELME**, b. 1679; d. North Kingstown bef. 1727; named in her father's Will as wife of Lieut. Ichabod Potter (m. 1699), d. 1730, son of Ichabod and Martha (Hazard) Potter; five children.
- iv. **MERCY HELME**, b. Quidnessett, Washington, Rhode Island abt. 1680; named in her father's Will as wife of Samuel Watson (m. 1711), d. aft. 1740, son of John and Dorcas (Gardiner) Watson.
- v. **ROUSE HELME JR. (ESQ.)**, b. abt. 1682; d. South Kingstown 28 Aug 1751; Will dated 15 Apr 1748, proved 9 Sept 1751; m. 21 July 1709, Sarah Niles, daughter of Nathaniel and Sarah (Sands) Niles. Rouse Helme Jr. was Clerk of the State Assembly in 1720, Justice of the Peace, Judge of the Superior Court for over 20 Years, and served as Deputy and Assistant, as such he carried the title of Esquire.
- vi. **WILLIAM HELME**, may have been b. 1685, information unknown. As outlined in their father's Will his brother Rouse was charged with William's care. William may have had a physical or mental handicap.

⁵⁵³ *The New England Historical and Genealogical Register*, Vol. 98 (Jan 1944), 11-25, Richard LeBaron Bowen of Rehoboth, Massachusetts, *The Mother of Christopher Helme*, 24 for Samuel Helme, (americanancestors.org), 10/8/2020; *U.S. and International Marriage Records, 1560-1900*, (ancestry.com), 10/8/2020; https://www.wikitree.com/wiki/Helmes-28#_note-Yates, 10/8/2020.

⁵⁵⁴ *Rhode Island: Vital Records, 1636-1850*, Washington County, Vol 5: 80, (americanancestors.org), 10/8/2020.

⁵⁵⁵ *New England Marriages to 1700*, 364: Helme, Rouse (-1712) & Mary [Eldred/Eldredge] (1646-1712); by 1671?, by 1676?; Kingstown, RI., (americanancestors.org), 10/8/2020.

⁵⁵⁶ *Massachusetts, Compiled Birth, Marriage, and Death Records, 1700 – 1850*, Cambridge Births, 227, (ancestry.com) 10/8/2020; *Massachusetts Vital and Town Records 1620-1988*, Boston, Vol. I, Transcript of County Records, 1643-1660; Vol 1, Births, Marriages Deaths from 1630 – 1696/7; Cambridge, Massachusetts, 200 - 201, (ancestry.com) 10/8/2020.

⁵⁵⁷ *Rhode Island Death Index, 1630-1930*, <online database>, (Provo, Utah, Ancestry.com Operations, Inc., 2000), 10/8/2020.

⁵⁵⁸ *Vital Records from The NEHGS Register, The New England Historical and Genealogical Register*, Vol. 98 (Jan 1944), Bowen, *The Mother of Christopher Helme*, 24-25, (americanancestors.org), 10/8/2020.

⁵⁵⁹ Caroline E Robinson and Daniel Berkley Updike, *Hazard; The Hazard family of Rhode Island: 1635-1894, being a genealogy and history of the descendants of Thomas Hazard, with sketches of the worthies of this family, and anecdotes illustrative of their traits and also of the times in which they lived*, (Boston, printed for authors, 1895), 11-12, (archive.org), 10/8/2020; *Colonial Families of the USA, 1607-1775*, Vol 3: Hazard: 225-226, (ancestry.com), 10/8/2020.

Rouse Helme was one of Kingstown's early settlers, between 1658-1669, and obtained one of the original land grants of the Pettaquamscutt Purchase. The Pettaquamscutt purchasers granted Rouse two lots of land, one a "town lott" of 20 acres on the eastern slope of Tower Hill and the other a 250-acre site east of present-day Curtis Corners. Helme sold the "town lott" to Thomas Hazard in 1696. His home was on the 250-acre lot, near a main road to Pequot or New London, Connecticut.⁵⁶⁰

On 14 October 1662, William Harris presented a bill of indictment to the grand jury against Rouse Helme and ten others "for entering forcibly upon his lands and 'moeing' his meadows." The jury found this to be a true bill and indicted the mowers, but the court suspended judgment.⁵⁶¹

On 19 May 1671, Rouse Helme took an oath of fidelity in Kingstown, and in 1673 was admitted as a freeman of Rhode Island, "of Narragansett." A week later, on 28 May 1671, he took as an apprentice, Thomas Marshall, with the consent of the boy's father and mother Edward and Mary Marshall of Warwick.

There was considerable bloodshed between the colonists and the Indians beginning in June 1675 and ending in August 1676. The house of Jirah Bull, a neighbor living north of Rouse, was raided and burned by Indians, who killed fifteen men and women. English troops subsequently retaliated in a bloody battle known as The Great Swamp Fight, during which Thomas Abbe (of Chapter Three), was wounded. Rouse Helme and forty-one other inhabitants of Narragansett petitioned the King on 29 July 1679:

Praying that he would put an end to these differences about the government thereof, which had been so fatal to the prosperity of the place, animosities still arising in people's minds as they stand affected to this or that government.

On 27 October 1684, Rouse Helme took a receipt from Thomas Marshall, whose term of apprenticeship had ended. He paid taxes of 9s 11d on 6 September 1687 and this same year he served on a grand jury. On 30 January 1692, he sold James Carder of Warwick, 26 acres, 12 acres, a whole right of undivided land and a right in commons and all other interests there, for 50£.

On 9 May 1712, Kingstown, Rhode Island, Mary (Eldred) Helme died.⁵⁶² She is buried in North Kingston, Washington, Rhode Island, Elm Grove Cemetery. Just eight days later, in Kingstown,

⁵⁶⁰ <http://www.americanantiquarian.org/proceedings/44817382.pdf>: William Davis Miller, *The Narragansett Planters*, 49 - 115, p. 56 citing *South Kingstown Land Evidence* Vol III: 724: these men built before 1663, 10/13/2020.

⁵⁶¹ *The New England Historical and Genealogical Register*, Vol. 98 (Jan 1944), Bowen, *The Mother of Christopher Helme*, 23, (americanancestors.org), 10/13/2020.

⁵⁶² *Rhode Island Death Index, 1630-1930*, (ancestry.com), Kin 1 Rouse Helme, Kin 2 Dorcas Helme, 10/13/2020; *Rhode Island Vital Extracts 1636-1899*, <online database>, (Provo, Utah, Ancestry.com Operations Inc., 2014), 80, 10/13/2020; U.S., *Find a Grave Index, 1600's- current*, Memorial #101244053 Lot-53, no bio, (ancestry.com) 10/13/2020.

in 17 May 1712, Rouse Helme died.⁵⁶³ A “malignant distemper,” a contagious disease, most likely influenza, took many lives during this time in Connecticut and Massachusetts.⁵⁶⁴

**The Will of Rouse Helme
dated 14 March 1711 and proved Kingston, Rhode Island 9 June 1712**

To son Samuel half of a tract of land he had bought from Jireth Bull (the burning of whose house had precipitated the Great Swamp Fight about 36 years earlier), and the eastern part of his farm (reserving 30 acres to be for wife's maintenance for life and then to son Rouse, so long as my son William liveth and then to return to son Samuel. To son Rouse, the rest of above land and housing, orchards and other land, and negro Jack. To wife, half of the use of house barn, and orchard for life, and a Negro woman called Nan. To daughter Elizabeth Hazard 5£ paid by her brother Rouse and to her a negro girl. To son Samuel youngest negro boy. To daughter Margaret Potter negro girl named Moll. To daughter Mercy Watson, a heifer. To wife Mary, half of movables to dispose of to the children, and the other half equally to son Samuel and daughters, Margaret Potter and Mercy Watson and sons Rouse and William, but son Rouse to have William's part to keep him and if Rouse dies before William the part given for care of William, to go to those who take care of him and to find him in meat, drink apparel, lodging & c. All the children were 'strictly charged and commanded' to have a tender love & care of William, so long as he liveth.

A copy of his Will is said to be on file in Kingstown, Rhode Island. Executors were his wife Mary (now deceased) and son Rouse. Overseers were 'his trusted and well-beloved friends,' Thomas Eldred, John Eldred, William Knowles and Ephraim Bull all of Kingstown.

Inventory

284£, 17s, 1d; viz 77 sheep, 37 lambs, four oxen, five cows and calves, two three years, five two years, four yearlings, horse, five mares, four colts, negro Jack 30£, Nan 15£, stillyards,⁵⁶⁵ money scales, gun, four swine & c. ⁵⁶⁶

I'm not sure if Rouse, or his son Samuel would be considered a Narragansett planter, though Rouse did leave Negro slaves to his children. He also left large, though not huge, flocks of livestock.

On 21 October 1713, we find a declaration signed by Mary Coggeshall and Ezekiel Bull, that Rouse Helme's wife died before him and that he, considering his wife's care of son William, that she would have taken, d&c., desired her part given to his son Rouse.⁵⁶⁷

⁵⁶³ *The New England Historical and Genealogical Register*, Vol. 98 (Jan 1944), Bowen, *The Mother of Christopher Helme*, 23: father, Christopher Helme, mother's name Margaret, (americanancestors.org), 10/13/2020; *Rhode Island Death Index, 1630-1930*, (ancestry.com) 10/13/2020; *Rhode Island Vital Extracts 1636-1899*, (ancestry.com), 80, 10/13/2020.

⁵⁶⁴ <https://americanantiquarian.org/proceedings/44807204.pdf> 10/13/2020

⁵⁶⁵ <https://www.definition-of.com/stillyard>: an old instrument used for weighing. 10/30/2020.

⁵⁶⁶ <https://www.geni.com/people/Rouse-Helme>, 10/13/2020, source: Strahle, *Some North American Descendants of John Elmes of Lincolnshire, England through his Great-Grandson, Christopher Helme of Rhode Island*, (self-published July 2004), (familysearch.org), 22-23, 11/23/2020.

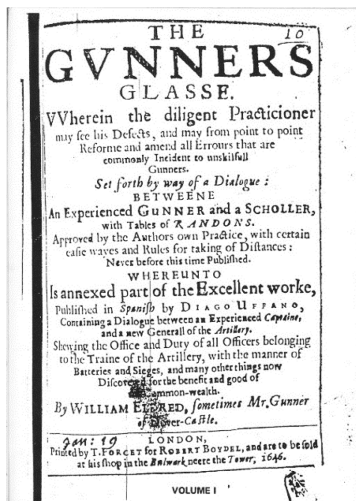
⁵⁶⁷ Austin, *The Genealogical Dictionary of Rhode Island: ...*, 322-323 (back section), (archive.org), 10/13/2020.

Many colonial Americans shunned people who suffered from physical and mental difficulties. Still, the less severe the affliction, the more accepted they were in the New World. Accidents, genetic diseases, and illnesses rendered many people disabled to different degrees. The majority made adaptations, living full lives within the community. Segregation and inequality fell upon those who suffered most severely from debilitating disabilities. Family members with **disabilities**, were often kept at home, hidden behind closed doors, particularly those who had a mental illness. At the time, many believed that demons possessed people who were mentally ill, and they were shunned and feared.

<https://news.stanford.edu/pr/91/910515Arc1373.html>

<http://www.amandahughesauthor.com/disabilities-in-colonial-america.html#.Xxig1S2ZNhE>

Eldred Family Ancestry



In 1066, a Saxon named Eldred was archbishop of Canterbury and crowned Harold II, King of England. Eldreds are an ancient Saxon family of England, always having lived in the south and the east. The Domesday survey of 1095, showed they owned lands in Wiltshire, Dorsetshire, Somerset, Devon, Gloucester, Shropshire, and York. They were mostly of the landed gentry and yeomanry. However, after the Battle of Hastings of 1066, the Saxon, Eldred included, were practically wiped out. Those surviving the conquest were made Norman serfs without any records.

In the 6th year of Henry VIII, we can find an Eldred in public land records and the registers of Bardwell co. Suffolk. Nicholas Eldred, b. abt. 1470; d. 1566 is perhaps the ancestor of today's Eldreds. Thomas Eldred sailed around the world with Miles Cavendish in 1586. William Eldred was the Master Gunner of Dover Castle. He wrote a book, *The Gunners Glasse*, which is the only complete treatise on artillery techniques as practiced in his day.

Mary Eldred, wife of Rouse Helme, b. Cambridge, Middlesex, Massachusetts 15 June 1646, daughter of Samuel and Elizabeth (Miller) Eldred⁵⁶⁸; d. Kingstown, Washington, Rhode Island 9 May 1712⁵⁶⁹; buried North Kingstown, Elm Grove Cemetery; m. Kingstown, 1673, **Rouse Helme** (1644 – 1712).⁵⁷⁰

Mary was the daughter of **Samuel Eldred Sr.**, b. 27 Nov 1620 Ipswich, Ipswich Borough, Suffolk, England;⁵⁷¹ d. ca. 1698 (age 77/78) North Kingstown, Washington, Rhode Island; buried Eldred Cemetery, North Kingston, Rhode Island;⁵⁷² m. Saint Mary at Kay's Parish, Ipswich, England **Elizabeth Miller**, b. Needham Market, Norfolk, England 1622; d. Kingstown, Rhode Island 1711; the daughter of Daniel Miller.

Children (first four born in Cambridge, Massachusetts):

- i. ELIZABETH ELDRED, b. 26 Oct 1642; no other information.
- ii. SAMUEL ELDRED JR., b. 26 Oct 1644; d. abt. 1720; m. abt. 1675 Martha Knowles, b. ca 1651, daughter of Henry Knowles of Warwick, Rhode Island; d. 1728.
- iii. **MARY ELDRED**, b. 15 June 1646; d. 9 May 1712 Kingstown, Rhode Island; m. **Rouse Helme**. There has been speculation that she was (also) the wife of Benoini Gardner, based on naming one of her daughter's Bridget, which was an uncommon name for the time and place. The more compelling evidence is that she m. Rouse Helme. Overseers of the 1711 Will of Rouse Helme were Mary's brothers Thomas Eldred and John Eldred; also, Mary (Eldred) Helme named her eldest son Samuel after her father, Samuel Eldred.
- iv. THOMAS ELDRED, b. 8 Sept 1648; d. North Kingstown, Rhode Island 1726; m. Susanna Cole, daughter of John and Susanna (Hutchinson) Cole.
- v. JAMES ELDRED, b. abt. 1655; d. by 1687.
- vi. JOHN ELDRED, b. Boston, now Chelsea, Massachusetts Aug 1659; d. North Kingstown Rhode Island 17 Sept 1724, aged 65 years, one (1) month; m. ca. 1685 Margaret Holden, b. Jan 1663, daughter of Randall and Frances (Dungan) Holden; d. 1740. John Eldred was active in civic affairs. In 1724, his widow Margaret Eldred was given administration of her husband's estate with an Inventory of more than 177 pounds. In 1740, her son James Eldred received the administration of Margaret's estate. Eldred was a veteran of King

⁵⁶⁸ *Massachusetts Compiled Birth, Marriage and Death Records, 1700-1850*, Cambridge: 227 (ancestry.com) 10/13/2020; *Massachusetts Town and Vital Records, 1620-1988*, Boston, *Transcript of County Records 1643-1660*, Vol 1, 200-201; *The New England Historical and Genealogical Register*, Vol 9 (1855), 168, (ancestry.com), 10/13/2020.

⁵⁶⁹ *Rhode Island Death Index, 1630-1930*, (ancestry.com) 10/13/2020; *Rhode Island Vital Extracts 1636-1899*, (ancestry.com), 80, 10/13/2020; *Rhode Island Wills and Probate Records 1582-1932*, <online database>, (Provo, Utah, Ancestry.com Operations, Inc., 2015), *Providence, Wills and Index*, Vol 14-15, (1836-1848), 105, (ancestry.com), 10/13/2020.

⁵⁷⁰ *New England Marriages to 1700*, (americanancestors.org), Vol 2: 740, 10/13/2020.

⁵⁷¹ https://www.amazon.com/Nelson-B-Eldred/e/B001K8PC8G/ref=dp_byline_cont_pop_book_1, 10/13/2020

⁵⁷² *U.S. Find a Grave*, Memorial #180610031, (ancestry.com), has bio based on Nelson B. Eldred genealogy, 10/13/2020.

Phillips War, according to his gravestone, which is now part of the large Elm Grove Cemetery in North Kingstown, Rhode Island.

- vii. DANIEL ELDRED (who spelled his surname Eldredge), b. Wickford, Narragansett County (later North Kingstown) abt. 1663; d. North Kingstown 18 Aug 1726; m. ca. 1687 Mary Phillips, b. ca 1655; living in 1726; ten children. Daniel has a grave marker in the Reynold Lot, Rhode Island Historical Cemetery NK #131.

In his father's 1640 Will, Samuel Eldred was given the great sea-chest which belonged to his grandfather, William Eldred of Bury. The chest had been given to William by his father Thomas Eldred, "the one who sailed around the world."

Samuel Eldred was a shoemaker, and he also farmed rented lands. He and his new bride must have immigrated immediately following their wedding because his name appears on the roster of the *Ancient and Honorable Artillery Company of Boston* in 1641. However, he seems to have been living in neighboring Cambridge.⁵⁷³ There may be records of Samuel, Robert, and William, most likely his two brothers arriving in 1641 on the *Rose*. I have been unable to locate them.

He was called Sergeant Eldred on 18 October 1659 when ordered to pay Edward Lane of Boston for two years rent of a farm and stock at Rumney Marsh, now Chelsea, Massachusetts. This is the last record of him in the Boston area. In 1660, he moved his family to the settlement of Wickford in the Narragansett County of Rhode Island.

Samuel Eldred is of record in Kingstowne on 4 May 1668, when he and eighteen others of Wickford signed a letter to the general court at Hartford, requesting the protection of their government. At the time, Kingstowne was in the disputed country west of the Narragansett Bay, and the colonies of both Connecticut and Rhode Island claimed the land. On 22 June 1670, Eldred took the constable's oath at Wickford under the appointment of Connecticut.

The Rhode Island authorities soon imprisoned him for calling a jury on behalf of Connecticut in the murder trial of Thomas Founders, who reputedly murdered Walter House. On 13 July 1670, Samuel Eldred wrote a lengthy letter to Thomas Stanton at Stonington concerning a jury for the trial, signing his name, *Samwill Eldredge*. Eldred was taken to Newport based on a 21 July 1670 letter from Connecticut to Rhode Island authorities. On 8 October 1674, he was granted a monetary award in the amount of "20 nobles" for his service and suffering for the Connecticut colony.

After King Phillips War erupted, Eldred, and one or more of his sons, were involved in some military activity when on 13 December 1675, "the Eldridges and some other brisk hands" met Richard Smith's garrison house, just before the Great Swamp Fight. Captain Benjamin Church said they were on a night mission and captured eighteen Indians.

⁵⁷³ U.S. and Canada, *Passenger and Immigration Lists Index, 1500s-1900s: Cambridge, Massachusetts, 1620-1650*, referencing Banks, *Topographical Dictionary of 2885 English Emigrants to New England*, (ancestry.com), 10/13/2020.

On 7 March 1676, the council at Hartford voted that Eldred and John Sweet, "have liberty to transport ten bushels of Indian corn apiece, for their distressed families." The conflict between Connecticut and Rhode Island concerning jurisdiction over the Narragansett lands was taking its toll on the local settlers. On 29 July 1679, Eldred and forty-one others petitioned the King:

To put an end to these differences about the government thereof, which hath been so fatal to the prosperity of the place, animosities still arising in people's minds, as they stand affected to this or that government. Ultimately, Rhode Island had jurisdiction. On 6 September 1687, Eldred was taxed 3s 4½d, a reasonably small amount. On 13 April 1697, he deeded to his son John a house and 160 acres," with a right on the other side of Pequot Path." Samuel Eldred died after 1697.⁵⁷⁴

According to *Find a Grave*, Samuel has no death or burial record. One family account says he was buried in a cemetery (½ acre in size), on his farm. The remains of his house were visible on this land into the 19th century. This is likely, though without proof, we can't know for sure. In 1697, Samuel conveyed his land and house to his son John. While his son appears to have built his own house, he kept his father's land, and when John died, he was buried in the existing cemetery on the land. There is a current grave marker in this cemetery for John.

Miller Family Ancestry

Miller is usually an occupational surname referring to a person who owned or worked in a grain mill. In ancient times the Miller surname originated from the *Molindinar* (mo-lynn-dine-are), a Scottish burn (rivulet) that still flows under the streets of modern Glasgow.

Elizabeth Miller, wife of Samuel Eldred, b. ca. 1622 Needham Market, Mid Suffolk District, Suffolk, England; d. Rhode Island 1711, age 88-89.⁵⁷⁵ Elizabeth has no sourced birth or burial records, only the Eldred family history published in the 1990s. She may be buried with her husband in the family cemetery.

Elizabeth Miller was the daughter of **Daniel Miller** of Needham Market, Suffolk, England. She m. Saint Mary at Kay's Parish, Ipswich, England 25 Nov 1640 **Samuel Eldred**, son of Thomas and Anna (Watson) Eldred of Ipswich. They immigrated soon after the wedding. The last record found with Elizabeth's name is the birth of her third child in Cambridge, Massachusetts, 1646. However, there is no reason to doubt that she was the mother of all Samuel's children.

⁵⁷⁴ Austin, *The Genealogical Dictionary of Rhode Island*: ..., 116, (archive.org), 10/13/2020.

⁵⁷⁵ U.S. *Find a Grave*, Memorial, #180610697, (ancestry.com), 10/13/2020.

Eldred Family Ancestry Concluded

Samuel Eldred was the son of **Thomas Eldred**, b. Ipswich, Suffolk, England abt. 1595; d. Ipswich, England 1 Dec 1640;⁵⁷⁶ bur. St. Nicholas churchyard Ipswich; m. 4 Feb 1616/17 **Anna Watson**, b. abt. 1590, daughter of Samuel Watson; d. Ipswich Suffolk, England 27 Dec 1642.

Children:

- i. JOHN ELDRED, no further information.
- ii. CHARLES ELDRED, b. 3 Oct 1619; may have d. Yarmouth, Barnstable, Massachusetts 16 Nov 1697; possibly m. Susan Bridges
- iii. **SAMUEL ELDRED SR.**, b. Ipswich, Suffolk, England 27 Nov 1620; d. 13 Apr 1697; m. (1) Elizabeth ____; m. (2) Mary at the Quay, Ipswich, Suffolk, England 25 Nov 1640 **Elizabeth Miller**.
- iv. THOMAS ELDRED, b. 1622, no further information.
- v. MARY ELDRED, b. 23 July 1626, no further information.
- vi. ROBERT ELDRED(GE), b. abt. 1627; d. Monomoit (today Chatham, Massachusetts on Cape Cod), Jan 1682/83; m. Yarmouth, Barnstable, Massachusetts,⁵⁷⁷ 31 Oct 1649 Elizabeth Nickerson.⁵⁷⁸
- vii. WILLIAM ELDRED, b. 4 Sept 1627; d. Yarmouth 16 Nov 1697; m. Yarmouth 3 Mar 1645/46 Anne Lumpkin; d. Yarmouth 1 Nov 1676.⁵⁷⁹

Thomas Eldred was a sailor. Ipswich records of 1625 mention a "Thomas Eldred in command of a ship lately come from Denmark."⁵⁸⁰ He also owned property in Ipswich and Barningham. He may have been the son of a William Eldred. I have not researched further.

⁵⁷⁶ *UK and Ireland, Find a Grave*, Memorial #180611700, (ancestry.com) 10/13/2020.

⁵⁷⁷ The site of Yarmouth, Massachusetts was first visited in 1621 by a ship in search of a lost boy. It was known as *Matacheese* from an Indian tribe living there. On 17 Jan 1639, Plymouth colony granted land for the founding of Yarmouth, https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Yarmouth,_Massachusetts, 10/13/2020.

⁵⁷⁸ <https://naltic.com/eldred-of-saxon-to-eldredge-in-america.html> 10/13/2020.

⁵⁷⁹ *The Eldred Family*, 11, <online database>, (Provo, Utah, Ancestry.com Operations, Inc., 2004), search in card catalogue, 10/13/2020; <http://massandmoregenealogy.blogspot.com/2013/04/william-eldredeldredge-ca-1622-ca-1679.html>, 10/13/2020; <http://www.olivetreegenealogy.com/ships/rose1637.shtml>, the *Rose of Yarmouth* - There is mention of her father William Lumpkin (Ludken), locksmith of Norwich, Elizabeth his wife and one child (Ann). Also named in this ship's passage is the family of Nicho. (Nicholas) Nickerson (child), whose daughter Elizabeth, m. Robert Eldred. One site indicated William and Robert also immigrated on the Rose, but I do not find their names on the manifest, 10/13/2020.

⁵⁸⁰ https://en.wikisource.org/wiki/Page:Dictionary_of_National_Biography_volume_17.djvu/181, 10/13/2020.

The Will of Thomas Eldred, dated 18 October 1640 and proved 4 December 1640

The Will provided that his wife Anna will receive his house in Ipswich for her lifetime use, and thereafter “will go to my eldest *childe* and namesake, Thomas Eldred, or his heirs if deceased.” The remainder of his estate in Ipswich was disposed of according to his instruction, as follows:

Give to my second childe Charles Eldred, on his twentieth birthday, 75 pounds; to my fourth children John Eldred, on his twentieth birthday 25 pounds; the remainder of my estate in Ipswich is to go to my fifth child Mary Eldred, on her eighteenth birthday, except that if it should amount to more than 25 pounds, that part more than 25 pounds is to go to my son Thomas Eldred. To my son, John Eldred, my three crofts of land in Barningham. To my third son Samuel Eldred, the great sea-chest that my father William Eldred of Bury had from his father Thomas Eldred, the one who sailed around the world.

There is a note attached to Samuel, son of Thomas and his wife, Anna. The message reads:

The compiler of these notes, believes, after many years of research and careful consideration of the evidence, that this Samuel is very probably the same person as the Samuel Eldred who appeared in Cambridge, Massachusetts in 1641, perhaps a little sooner.⁵⁸¹

There is no hard evidence that the Samuel Eldred, b. in Ipswich, is the same Samuel Eldred, who came to New England. However, the circumstantial evidence is significant as laid out by Nelson B. Eldred in his two books, and no genealogist has refuted this claim. These books are available in libraries in Texas, Connecticut, and at the NEHGS. Somehow, I missed researching the Eldred's before my Boston trip. For now, I will leave the information as I have found it online.

Helme Ancestry Continued

Rouse Helme was the son of **Christopher Helme**, an early immigrant to the Massachusetts Bay Colony and one of the founders of Exeter, New Hampshire. In my limited research, I found two noted genealogists who differ as to his date of birth and who his mother might have been:

- **Colket:** Christopher Helme, born 1616, Long Sutton, Lincolnshire, England, the son of William Elme and Grisill Spratt.⁵⁸² *The Lincolnshire Pedigrees*, from the *Lincolnshire Visitations*

⁵⁸¹ <http://www.wittmeyerfamily.com/capt-thomas-eldred-1595.html>, 10/13/2020.

⁵⁸² Meredith Bright Colket, Edward Nelson Dunlap, *The English ancestry of Anne Marbury Hutchinson and Katherine Marbury Scott: including their descent and that of John Dryden, poet-laureate, from Magna charta sureties with notes on the English connections of the settlers William Wentworth and Christopher Lawson of New Hampshire and Francis Marbury of Maryland*, (Philadelphia, The Magee press, 1936), 25-26, <hathitrust.org>, 10/13/2020; https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Christopher_Helme: b. 24 July 1603 without citation, though there is a marriage record for William Elme and Grisell Spratt 1601 Barney, Norfolk.

of 1666, published in 1902, give this as the accepted date of his birth. In his Will, his father William Elme names Grisill as Christopher's mother.⁵⁸³

- **Bowen:** If Christopher Helme was born 1620, Long Sutton, or Sutton St. Mary, co Lincoln, England, he could not have been the son of William Elmes' first wife Grisell Spratt, born about 1583; died about 1617. William Elmes, married (2) 9 July 1617 Anne Smith; died after 1618;⁵⁸⁴ William Elmes, married Waltham, Lincolnshire (3) Priscilla Wentworth, baptized Waltham, 14 June 1594; marriage license 28 Aug 1619, age 24; died before 1648.⁵⁸⁵

After the 1944 publication of Richard Bowen's, *The Mother of Christopher Helme*, most agree that Priscilla Wentworth holds that honor, including the Wikipedia article on Christopher Helme. But then there is the Will of William Elmes, which reads, "And if that Christopher Elme *my sonne by my first wife* be living..."⁵⁸⁶ The reader can research and decide if this information is decisive, or not.

A Christopher Helme is listed as emigrating from the parish of Southwark (S. Olave), county Surrey, England to Exeter, New Hampshire, and Warwick, Rhode Island between 1620-1650.⁵⁸⁷ Other records indicate Christopher's emigration was in 1637 to Boston, with his being in Exeter by 1639, removing to Massachusetts 1643, then to Warwick 1644.⁵⁸⁸

In July 1637, he arrived in Boston in the Massachusetts Bay Colony, part of a group associated with the Reverend John Wheelwright, a clergyman from Lincolnshire who came the previous year. According to a book by C.H. Bell,⁵⁸⁹ Wheelwright was a man of leading character, of advanced opinions, and bold speech; one who in those times might well look forward to being silenced, any day, for non-conformity.

Wheelwright was accompanied by his sister-in-law, Anne Hutchinson, a cousin of Christopher's stepmother, Priscilla Wentworth. Because of her Antinomian beliefs, Anne quickly became embroiled in religious upheavals, which caused considerable turmoil in the Colony. Governor

⁵⁸³ <http://healygenealogy.com/384.htm>, citing Strahle, *Some North American Descendants of John Elmes of Lincolnshire, England through his Great-Grandson, Christopher Helme of Rhode Island* (self-published, 2002), 13 - 14, <familysearch.org>, 10/13/2020.

⁵⁸⁴ Gary Boyd Roberts, *English Origins of New England Families, From the New England Historical and Genealogical Register*, Vol II: Bowen *The Mother of Christopher Helme* 312, (Baltimore, Genealogical Publishing Co, Inc., 1985).

⁵⁸⁵ *Ibid.*, 311, 312, 321.

⁵⁸⁶ *The New England Historical and Genealogical Register*, Vol 127: 214-215, Margaret Helms Browning, *The Will of William Elme*, 10/13/2020.

⁵⁸⁷ Charles Edward Banks, Elijah Ellsworth Brownell, *Topographical dictionary of 2885 English Emigrants to New England, 1620-1650*, (Philadelphia, Pennsylvania, The Bertram Press, 1937), (babel.hathitrust.org), 169; *U.S. and Canada Passenger and Immigration Lists, 1500s - 1900s*, New Hampshire, 1620-1650, 169, (ancestry.com) 10/13/2020.

⁵⁸⁸ Banks & Brownell, *Topographical dictionary of 2885 English emigrants to New England, 1620-1650*, 169, (babel.hathitrust.org), 10/13/2020; Frank R. Holmes, *Directory of the Ancestral Heads of New England Families 1620-1700*, cxv, (Baltimore, Maryland, Genealogical Publishing Co, 1964), (archive.org), 10/13/2020.

⁵⁸⁹ Charles Henry Bell, *Memoirs of John Wheelwright*, (reprint), (New York, Burt Franklin, 1967), (babel.hathitrust.org), 10/13/2020.

Winthrop gave the group permission to remain in the Colony for only four months. Banished from Massachusetts, Wheelwright, Christopher Helme, and thirty-four others went to New Hampshire.⁵⁹⁰

Antinomian is defined as one who believes that under the gospel dispensation of grace, the moral law is of no use or obligation because faith alone is necessary to salvation.

The Antinomian Controversy, also known as the Free Grace Controversy, was a religious and political conflict in the Massachusetts Bay Colony during the mid-1630s. It pitted the Colony's ministers and magistrates, against some adherents of the Free Grace theology of Puritan minister John Cotton. Among the most notable Free Grace advocates, were Anne Hutchinson, John Wheelwright, and one-term Massachusetts Governor Henry Vane.

Anne Hutchinson was a strong-minded woman whose father, Francis Marbury, was an Anglican clergyman and schoolteacher. In England, she embraced the religious views of dynamic Puritan minister John Cotton, who became her mentor; Cotton left England under duress, and Hutchinson followed him to New England.

In Boston, Hutchinson hosted women at her house for discussions on the weekly sermons. Eventually, men joined these gatherings, including Governor Vane. Hutchinson criticized the Colony's ministers, accusing them of preaching a covenant of works as opposed to the covenant of grace espoused by Reverend Cotton. In the fall of 1636, the Colony's orthodox ministers held meetings with Cotton, Wheelwright, and Hutchinson. No consensus was reached, and religious tensions mounted.

At the November 1637 court, Wheelwright was banished, and a trial was set for Hutchinson. She defended herself, but she claimed on the second day of her hearing that she possessed 'direct personal revelation from God', and prophesied ruin upon the Colony. She was charged with contempt and sedition and banished from the Colony. Her departure brought the controversy to a close in the Massachusetts Bay Colony.

Interestingly, Massachusetts honors Anne Hutchinson with a State House monument calling her a "courageous exponent of civil liberty and religious toleration".

⁵⁹⁰ https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/John_Wheelwright, 10/13/2020.

Helme Family Ancestry Continued

The group settled into winter quarters at Piscataqua, current-day Portsmouth, New Hampshire in November 1637. A year and a half later, the group established the settlement of Exeter, New Hampshire, through the signing of the *Exeter Combination* on 4 May 1639.⁵⁹¹ Christopher and ten others who signed did not receive shares in the original allotments of lands, perhaps because they were all single men or had moved from the area before the recording of the grants.

When the Reverend John Wheelwright arrived at the falls of the Squamscott River in March of 1638, he was an unlikely pioneer. A bookish minister from Lincolnshire, England, he had run afoul of both the Church of England and the strict Puritans of Massachusetts Bay Colony. After being banished from Massachusetts for teachings that appeared both heretical and seditious to the authorities, he decided to settle in the wilds of, what was to become Exeter, New Hampshire. To ensure that they had clear rights to the land, Wheelwright, with five other men (including ancestor Christopher Helme), made an agreement dated 3 April 1638 with Wehenownowit, the Sagamore of the local Squamscott Indian tribe. The agreement provided that the Squamscott retained all their planted fields, along with hunting and fishing rights.

Wehenownowit and another member of the tribe — identified only as "James" on the deed — signed the document with pictographs of themselves. Wehenownowit is seen with a raised tomahawk. There were few difficulties between the Natives and Englishmen during the years they cohabitated. Only minor skirmishes involving loose pigs are recorded in the town records.

This deed still exists and was purchased by the Exeter Historical Society in 1938 from the estate of William Randolph Hearst.

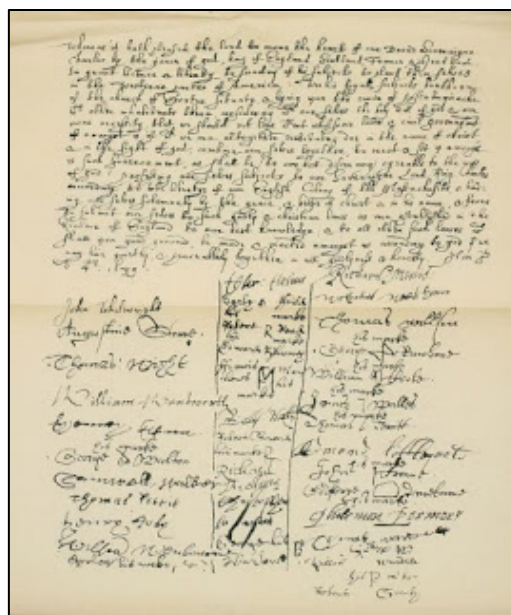
Having secured rights to the land, a town of less than 200 people was created. In the spring of 1639, a document called **the Exeter Combination**, sent notice from Exeter's population that they intended to govern themselves, while also pledging loyalty to the King and God. This clearly differentiated New Hampshire from Massachusetts, even though they intended to use Massachusetts laws as their model. This document was signed on "Mon. 5th, d. 4th 1639," which, is 4 July 1639 — a rather happy coincidence with our later national holiday.

⁵⁹¹ Charles Henry Pope, *The Pioneers of Maine and New Hampshire, 1623-1660*, (Boston MA, CH Pope, 1908), 93, (archive.org), 10/13/2020.

The Exeter Combination

Barbara Rimkunas, curator Exeter Historical Society
(info@exeterhistory.org), 29 March 2013.

Charles Henry Bell
History of the Town of Exeter, New Hampshire, 1888,
inside front cover, (archive.org), 17 July 2021.



Christopher Helme, m. Margaret ____ (possibly Rouse), abt. 1639; she died aft. 19 Dec 1650 and before 13 Jan 1661/2. Other records show Christopher, m. Exeter, Rockingham, New Hampshire 1638, Margaret (Rouse), possibly b. Long Sutton, Lincolnshire, England, 1620; d. Warwick, Rhode Island 1653.⁵⁹²

Children⁵⁹³:

- i. WILLIAM HELME, b. Warwick, Kings Town, Rhode Island abt. 1640; d. Warwick aft. 1673; m. by 1665 when his first child was born. William, the eldest son and heir of Christopher Helme and Margaret, late of Warwick, (deceased), confirms purchase made by Richard Carder from my loving Mother Margaret (late of Warwick), some eight years since. He also ratified a deed from Margaret and her attorney Ralfe Earle of Portsmouth, bearing the date 19 Dec 1650. William acknowledges himself satisfied for the land and house sold to Richard Carder.⁵⁹⁴ He purchased land in Misquamakuck on 22 Mar 1661. 20 May 1671, he took an Oath of fidelity there. By 1673, William had moved to Narragansett, Rhode, Island where he was recorded on a list of Freemen. The four Helmes brothers were admitted Freemen at the same time.⁵⁹⁵

⁵⁹² <http://healygenealogy.com/384.htm>, 10/13/2020; *New England Marriages to 1700*, Vol 2: 740, (americanancestors.org), 10/13/2020.

⁵⁹³ Strahle, *Some North American Descendants of John Elmes of Lincolnshire England Through His Great-Grandson Christopher Helme of Rhode*, 19, <familysearch.org>, 8/4/2021

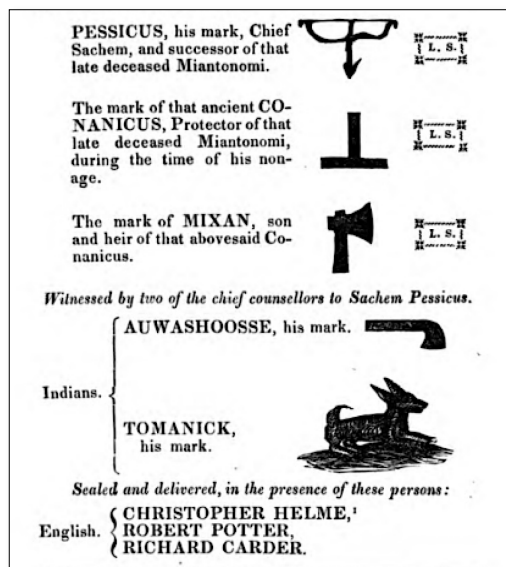
⁵⁹⁴ Roberts, *English Origins of New England Families*, 311 – 327: Bowen *The Mother of Christopher Helme*, 325: citing Rhode Island Historical Society, *The Early Records of the Town of Warwick*, (Providence RI, EA Johnson 1926), 224 for original sale, 274,275 (#395 has William's mark), (archive.org), 10/13/2020.

⁵⁹⁵ Strahle, *Some North American Descendants of John Elmes of Lincolnshire England Through His Great-Grandson Christopher Helme of Rhode*, 21, <familysearch.org>, 10/13/2020

- ii. ROUSE HELME, b. ca. 1641; d. 17 May 1712; m. **Mary Eldred**, d. 9 May 1712.
- iii. SAMUEL HELME; b. Warwick, Kent, Rhode Island, abt. 1645; d. Kingstown aft. 1690; Freeman Kingstown, 1673.
- iv. CHRISTOPHER HELME JR., b. Kingstown bef. 1649; d. aft. 1673; 19 May 1671 he took the oath of fidelity; Freeman 1673.

In 1642, Christopher Helme was in Piscataqua, Maine, where he was involved in a lawsuit.⁵⁹⁶ Wheelwright and some of his followers left Exeter for Maine, shortly after Massachusetts had taken over the government of New Hampshire. In 1643, Christopher Helme returned to Boston with Christopher Lawson, another of the signers of the Exeter Combination. In 1644, the Court ordered the money from the lawsuit sent to him.

On 3 November 1643, two of the people with whom Christopher Helme would be connected in the future, Samuel Gorton and Richard Carder, who was to become his neighbor in Rhode Island, questioned the formal rigidity of the Massachusetts churches. They were imprisoned for heresy and sedition by the Massachusetts authorities. In March 1644, Massachusetts banished the *Gortonists*.⁵⁹⁷ Christopher likely left Boston with this group. Gorton, Carder, and a few friends bought land in from the Narragansett Indians about twenty miles south of Providence, where they established Warwick and began the English settlement of Rhode Island.



The Narragansett Indians signed an act of voluntary submission to England on 19 April 1644. The three English witnesses were Christopher Helme, Robert Potter, and Richard Carder.⁵⁹⁸

Warwick, Rhode Island, 1 May __, being received a free inhabitant of the Towne of Warwick, Christopher Helme was granted land, a house lot containing six acres more or less: being bounded Northeast upon Richard Carder, Southeast upon the cove, also a creek on the Southwest, the front Northwest upon the common. Also, a parcel of land granted upon Quinnimocuk being the "fifth lot."⁵⁹⁹

⁵⁹⁶ *Maine Pioneers, 1623-60*, <online database>, (Provo, Utah, Ancestry.com Operations, Inc., 1999), 10/13/2020.

⁵⁹⁷ <https://www.newenglandhistoricalsociety.com/samuel-gorton-and-his-gortonites-create-a-church-among-the-jack-an-apes/>, 10/13/2020.

⁵⁹⁸ Rhode Island Historical Society, *Collections of the Rhode-Island Historical Society*, (Providence: The Society, 1827-1902), Vol II, 160, (babel.hathitrust.org), 10/13/2020; Roberts, *English Origins of New England Families*, Vol II: Bowen, *The Mother of Christopher Helme*, pages 322-324 cover Christopher's life in Warwick.

⁵⁹⁹ Rhode Island Historical Society, *The Early Records of the Town of Warwick*, 216, 217: #321, 322, (archive.org), 10/13/2020.

On 8 and 13 August 1647, he was chosen as one of four to layout lots and highways in Warwick. This same year he was chosen Town Sergeant, a role which required him to serve warrants, inform the town council of breaches of the law and civil disturbances, and to hold in custody those committed to his care. He was also appointed Sergeant of the train band.⁶⁰⁰

In 1648, the Court of Trials chose six men from each town in the Colony (Providence, Newport, Warwick, and Portsmouth) to be members. Christopher was one of the six chosen from Warwick. On 23 January 1648, he bound himself for "any damages by occasion of receiving into my custody Robert Andrews after the town had sent him back to master, and he escaped from the messenger."⁶⁰¹ And later that year, on 10 November 1648, he signed a list of Warwick inhabitants. (Early Town Records #73)

Several court cases involving Christopher Helme took place beginning on 23 January 1649 when he was disfranchised "for going about to undermine the liberty of the town," but subsequently, the censure was removed.⁶⁰² On 26 May 1649, at the Court held in Warwick, Christopher Helme is charged with the death of Rufus Baritin and in legal terms (which thankfully someone translated), he denied the charges against himself and put himself 'up the tryall verdict of the Jury... we finde hime not guilty.' Charges also included a "pretended purchase of some of Warwick land." The verdict of the Jury, in the second case, was guilty, and he was given a fine of forty shillings to be payed into the "publick tresuie" within XX days of the next session of the General Assembly.⁶⁰³

Helme's name is mentioned in the 1649 sale of land at Oyster River, Dover, New Hampshire. Valentine Hill, the prominent merchant of Boston and Dover, New Hampshire, sold 500 acres of land near Oyster River. Hill had purchased this land from Christopher Helme. After the sale, the land was then in possession of Darby Field, the Irishman, who was of Dover and the first white man to climb Mount Washington.⁶⁰⁴

Christopher Helme died in Warwick, Rhode Island, between his trial in May 1649 and 19 December 1650, when his widow Margaret sold the family home. He was about 47 years of age. A farmer who worked his land, he left a considerable personal estate of 1274£, including a still valued at 11£. His cattle and swine were worth 497£, and his four "negroes," 195£.⁶⁰⁵

⁶⁰⁰ Oliver Payson Fuller, *The History of Warwick, Rhode Island: from its settlement in 1642 to the present time: including accounts of the early settlement and development of its several villages, sketches of the origin and progress of the different churches of the town, &c., &c....* (Providence, Rhode Island, Angell, Burlingame & Co, 1875), (archive.org), 30, 10/13/2020; Rhode Island Historical Society, *The Early Records of the Town of Warwick*, 36: #77; 37: #78, (archive.org), 10/13/2020.

⁶⁰¹ Rhode Island Historical Society, *The Early Records of the Town of Warwick*, 200: #299 (archive.org), 10/13/2020.

⁶⁰² Fuller, *The History of Warwick, Rhode Island...*, 30, (archive.org), 10/13/2020.

⁶⁰³ Rhode Island Court of Trials, *Rhode Island Court Records: Records of the Court of trials of the colony of Providence Plantations, 1647-1670* (Providence, 1920-22), (babel.hathitrust.org), 6,7, 10/13/2020.

⁶⁰⁴ *The American Genealogist*, New Haven, Vol 20 (1943), 223-224, G. Andrews Moriarty, *Additions and Corrections to Austin's Genealogical Dictionary of Rhode Island*, (americanancestors.org) 10/13/2020.

⁶⁰⁵ https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Christopher_Helme, 10/13/2020.

Christopher Helme of Rhode Island owned four "negroes," valued at £195." This is the first mention in our ancestral history of **slavery**.

Native Americans enslaved members of their own, and other tribes, before and after Europeans arrived. They also enslaved some early European explorers and colonists, and were enslaved themselves by the colonists. However, when we think of slavery in the colonies, we think of the first recorded Africans in Jamestown, Virginia, arriving late August 1619. There was a need for labor in the sugar, rice, cotton, and tobacco fields of the southern colonies.

Slaves, African and Native American, made up a smaller part of the New England economy, which was based on yeoman farming and trades, and a smaller fraction of the population, but they were present. The first confirmed account of slavery in the Massachusetts colony was in 1638, when several Native Americans captured during the Pequot War were exchanged in the West Indies for African slaves. Such exchanges became common in subsequent Massachusetts Indian wars.

In 1652, Rhode Island passed the first abolition law in the Thirteen Colonies banning slavery, but by the end of the 17th century, the law was unenforced. By 1774, the slave population of Rhode Island was 6.3 percent, nearly twice as high as any other New England colony. In Rhode Island, farming was difficult for crops like wheat because of the poor soil, but they were able to raise corn, pumpkins, rye, squash, and beans. Slaves provided cheap labor.

During the later colonial period, Rhode Island was one corner of what has been named the "triangular trade," by which slave-produced sugar and molasses from the Caribbean were carried to Rhode Island and made into rum. The rum was then taken to West Africa and exchanged for slaves, to produce more sugar, more rum, and more slaves.

I realize these are but a few paragraphs about a brutal and immoral institution, a cruel and unavoidable ghost that haunts America. For information about ways in which descendants of slave owners, as individuals, and as a society, can work toward reparation, I found the following to be a helpful starting point:

John W. Miller, "My ancestor owned 41 slaves. What do I owe their descendants?" *AmericanMagazine.org* 11/28/2018; *ComingtotheTable.org* a non-profit which brings together the descendants of slave-owners and enslaved people; the documentary by Katrina Brown, *Traces of the Trade; A Story from the Deep North*.

Helme also left four young sons, William, Rouse, Samuel and Christopher. William, the eldest, was probably not yet of legal age, since his mother Margaret disposed of the family property. Margaret continued to live in Warwick with her children after her husband's death and is mentioned several times in the town records. One entry on 8 Aug 1648, contains the following notation:

Ordered that for Divers considerations moving the Towne thereunto they have accepted of Mrs. Helme to be an Inhabitant & to have equal privilege with the rest of the Inhabitants notwithstanding any former order to the contrary. (Early Town Records #1) It seems she needed permission to move into town.

In April 1660, land was:

Layd out to Richard Carder (who was guardian to the children of Mr. Helme), for Mr. Helms his children six acres laying on a little neck, beyond the horse neck bounded easterly by said Horse Neck on the south by a little neck, beyond the horse neck West and north by the Common.⁶⁰⁶

On 19 December 1660, his widow Margaret gave a deed of land in Warwick to Richard Carder,⁶⁰⁷ and on 13 January 1661/62, his son and heir William gave Carder a quitclaim deed of the same.⁶⁰⁸

Rouse Family Ancestry

The only record with the name **Margaret Rouse** that I could find was from ancestry.com:

Margaret Rouse, christening St. Dunstan in the West City of London, London England 19 Nov 1620; father **Richard Rouse**, mother **Elizabeth (___) Rouse**; ⁶⁰⁹d. Warwick, Kent, Rhode Island 19 Dec 1650/1653; m. Exeter, Washington, Rhode Island 1635 -1638 Christopher Helme. Other undocumented trees indicate she was born in Long Sutton, 115 miles north of London, but closer to the ancestral home of the Helme family.

There is no sourced data on Margaret's parents. Margaret's maiden name may have been *Rouse*. The surname comes from the nickname for one with a reddish complexion or red hair. This seems likely as her second son was named Rouse, "who was the ancestor of the Rhode Island, South County family." As a given name, Rouse was used for many generations in the Helme family.

⁶⁰⁶ *New England, The Great Migration and the Great Migration Begins, 1620-1635*, Vol 2 C-F, 9, (ancestry.com), 10/13/2020; Rhode Island Historical Society, *The Early Records of the Town of Warwick*, 257/8: #372, (archive.org), 10/13/2020.

⁶⁰⁷ Rhode Island Historical Society, *The Early Records of the Town of Warwick*, 224: #331, (archive.org), 10/13/2020.

⁶⁰⁸ *New England, The Great Migration and the Great Migration Begins, 1620-1635*, Vol 2 C-F, 8, (ancestry.com), 10/13/2020; Rhode Island Historical Society, *The Early Records of the Town of Warwick*, 274/5: #394, #395 William's mark, (archive.org), 10/13/2020.

⁶⁰⁹ *London, England, Church of England Baptisms, Marriages and Burials, 1538-1812*, London, London Metropolitan Archives; London, England; Reference Number: P69/DUN2/A/001/MS010342, <online database>, (Provo, Utah, Ancestry.com Operations Inc., 2010), 10/13/2020.

The Rouse family name was also in use early in Maine and Massachusetts, with ties back to England. A Nicholas Rouse of Wembery, England (the current Wembury, is located a mile or so southeast of Plymouth, on the south coast of Devon), came to Casco, Maine (in present-day Cumberland County) about 1630, and dwelt with Thomas Alger. Alger was from Newton Ferrers, about a half-mile away from Wembury. There is also a "ffaithfull Rouse" who appears in the Massachusetts Applications of Freeman on 29 May 1644.⁶¹⁰ The research of these men may offer additional Rouse family connections. I will leave it to others to explore.

Helme Family Ancestry Concluded

Christopher Helme was the son of **William Elme (Helme)**, b. abt. 1581/2, Long Sutton, Lincolnshire, England; d. same aft. 21 Mar 1648 (date of his Will); buried St. Mary, Long Sutton; m. Long Sutton (1) Grisill Spratt, possibly b. Long Sutton, Lincolnshire, England, buried the same. Or, b. abt. 1583, Barney, Norfolk, England. (This seems unlikely.)

Grisill Spratt was the mother of Christopher Helme, per his father's Will dated 21 Mar 1648 and he desired to be buried "under the blew stone where the body of my first wife was layed."

William Elme (Helme), m. (2) 9 July 1617 Anne Smith; m. (3) 1 Sept 1619 Priscilla Wentworth, daughter of Christopher and Katherine Marbury Wentworth. Here is the excerpt:

...and if that Christopher Elme my sonne by my first wife be living⁶¹¹ and come lawfully to demand that legacy which I give unto him I will that my sonne John Elme give five pounds a yeare unto him the sayd Christopher Elme during the term of the natuarall life of the sayd Christopher ...⁶¹²

This request seems irrefutable; however, Mr. Bowan makes a strong case for Priscilla Wentworth, daughter of Christopher and Katherine (Marbury) Wentworth, being Christopher's mother. I offered the two positions earlier in this text.⁶¹³ Many of Bowan's arguments and family relationships might also be applied if we consider Priscilla Wentworth to be Christopher's stepmother. If she were his birth mother, this would have offered another link to royalty, which was often a factor in early genealogy efforts.

⁶¹⁰ <http://healygenealogy.com/385.htm>, 10/13/2020.

⁶¹¹ William Elme did not know if his son Christopher who had emigrated, was then living or dead. At the time of this Will, Christopher Helme has been first at Boston; then Exeter New Hampshire 1639; Piscataqua Maine 1642; Boston 1643; Warwick Rhode Island 1644 – 1648/9. If, (and we are assuming he is), he was the missing son, no wonder William did not know whether his son was alive or not.

⁶¹² *The New England Historical and Genealogical Register*, Vol 127: 214-215, Margaret Helms Browning, *The Will of William Elme*, (americanancestors.org), 10/13/2020.

⁶¹³ Roberts, *English Origins of New England Families*, Vol II: Bowen, *The Mother of Christopher Helme*, 311-327; *NEHGR* 22:120-139 Joseph Lemuel Chester, *A Genealogical Memoir of the Wentworth Family of England....* This author states that Priscilla Wentworth, m. Waltham, 1 Sept 1619 William Helms, Gentleman of Long Sutton, otherwise Sutton St. Mary as his FIRST wife. She was living in 1628, but died and was buried sometime before 1648, 1/19/2021.

The Will of William Elme, 21 March 1648

In the name of God, Amen! I William Elme of Long Sutton in the part of Holland in the County of Lincoln, Gent. being sick in body but sound in mind & having my perfect memory praised be Almighty God for this his great mercy towards me, doe this one & twenty day of March in the year of our Lord God one thousand six hundred and forty-eight make this my Last Will & Testament in manner following ...

unto Almighty God my body, soul & spirit ... my body decently buried in the Parish Church of Sutton St. Maries under the blew stone where the body of my first wife was laid.

unto John Elme my eldest son my mansion house and all my free & copy-hold lands in Sutton St. Maries & Sutton St. Nicholas alias Lutton ...

unto James Elme my youngest son one messuage & five acres and an half of free-hold land lying & being in Sutton St. James ...

unto Mary ?Gyps my daughter five pounds,

unto my daughter Grissell Elme thirty pounds,

all the rest of my goods & chattels whatsoever undisposed of I give will & bequeath unto John Elme my eldest son ... sole executor ... John Elme my son would give unto my daughter Grissell Elme his sister a bed with that furniture belonging thereunto. And that he would also give unto James Elme my son a bed to lay his body upon.

And if that Christopher Elme my son **by my first wife** be living⁶¹⁴ and come lawfully to demand that legacy which I give unto him I will that my son John Elme give five pounds a year unto him the said Christopher Elme during the term of the natural life of the said Christopher ...

Item I will that the executor of this my Last Will & Testament doe within half a year after my decease bestow upon the impotent poor in Sutton St. Maries twenty shillings.

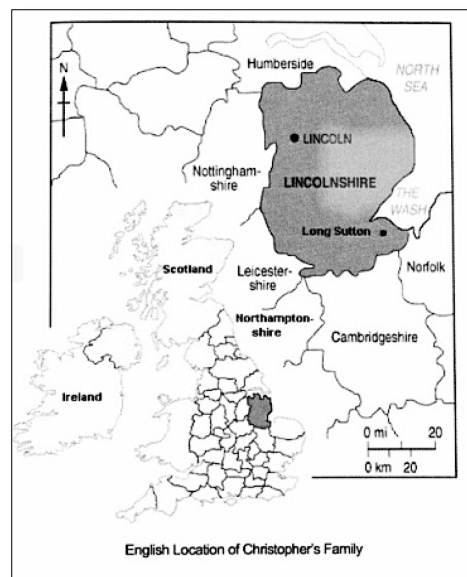
This is the Last Will & Testament of me the aforesaid William Elme, witness my hand & seale hereunto the day & year first above written vz. 21 Mar 1648."

Read sealed subscribed and delivered

In the presence of:

John Morden Richard Ankersall Thomas (illegible)

William Elme II was the son **William Helme (Elme/s)**, a yeoman of Long Sutton, Lincolnshire, England, b. abt. 1550 - 1585 (depending on the website); d. Long Sutton, 1662 about age 65; m. **Elizabeth Payne/Baynes**, b. Southwell, Nottinghamshire, England abt. 1557/8; she may have d. age 27 Long Sutton, Lincolnshire, England 1582 - 1585, her parentage unknown; m. (2) St. Mary, Weston, Lincolnshire, England 4 Dec 1597 Anne (____). His possible Children: William (Elme) Helme, Isabel Elme, Elizabeth Elme, Thomas Elme, Richard Elme, and John Elme.⁶¹⁵ I could not find primary sources for this generation (online) or how it might connect with any prior generations.⁶¹⁶



⁶¹⁴ William Elme did not know if his son Christopher who had emigrated was then living or dead. At the time of this will, Christopher Helme has been first at Boston; then Exeter NH 1639; Piscataqua Maine 1642; Boston 1643; Warwick Rhode Island, 1644 – 1648/9. If, he was the missing son, (and we are assuming he is), no wonder William did not know whether his son was alive or not.

⁶¹⁵ <https://www.geni.com/people/William-Helme-I>

⁶¹⁶ <https://www.familysearch.org/library/books/records/item/561778-some-north-american-descendants-of-john-elm-of-lincolnshire-england-through-his-great-grandson-christopher-helme-of-rhode-island>, 10, 10/13/2020.

William Helme (Elmes) may have been the son of **John Helme**, b. abt. 1525/1533; d. Northamptonshire, England bef. 4 Dec 1596; bur. 4 Dec 1595 Long Sutton; m. **Mary Cockson**, b. abt. 1525; d. Long Sutton aft. 1550; daughter of William Cockson 1500 - 1528, Long Sutton; m. (2) Margaret (____).⁶¹⁷ Possible Children: Isabel Elme, John (Eleme) Elmes, Robert Elme, Nicholas Elme, and Catherine Elme.⁶¹⁸

Although he lived at Long Sutton in the ancient Holland division of southeast Lincolnshire, John Helme was said to have been born in Northamptonshire. The northern tip of Northamptonshire is about 25 miles southwest of Long Sutton. His wife Mary's father, William Cockson, also lived in Long Sutton. *The Lincolnshire Pedigrees* contain entries for two Elmes families; those of Long Sutton, and those of Stamford, about 25 miles southwest of Long Sutton, and on the border with Northamptonshire. The two families may be related. Their coats of arms are almost identical:

- Stamford Elmes - Ermine, two bars sable, each charged with *five* elm-leaves
- Long Sutton Elmes - Ermine, two bars sable, each charged with *three* elm-leaves.⁶¹⁹

Additionally, there is a Stamford Will, mentioning the Elmes, which reads as follows:

Dame Margaret Browne of Stamford, late wife of William Browne, June 25th, 1489

My body to be buried in the Chapel of St Mary in the Church of All Hallows in Stamford. To John Elmes, my elder son, and Elizabeth his wife, a whole bed of linen cloth stained; to William Elmes, Katherine Elmes, John Elmes the younger, and Isabel Elmes; to Thomas Stock my brother; to every son and daughter of said John Elmes the elder, a board cloth and I appoint John Elmes and William Elmes, my sons, my executors;" proved 30 January 1489-90.

Dame Margaret and her children, obviously from a prior marriage to an Elmes, may well be related to this John Elmes. He is not, however, John, the younger son of John Elmes (ca. 1500 - 1545) of Lilford, who was living in 1564, at the time of the *Visitation of Northamptonshire*. He was endowed by his father the manor of Swinstead, and other lands in Lincolnshire. Proof that the John Elme of Long Sutton was not this son lies in the Will of John Elmes, of Stamford, Lincolnshire, gentleman, proved 8 August 1622, which bequeaths all his lands and tenements in Swinstead to his daughters Strange Hall and Mildred Castell.

The Wills of John Helme and John Elme, both of neighboring Lutton, South Holland, Lincolnshire, were proved in 1551, and in 1590, respectively, and may be those of his uncle and cousin. Paul Gifford, librarian and archivist at the University of Michigan Flint Library, has studied the *Bishop's Transcripts* and other records of Long Sutton and neighboring parishes. He feels that "our" John's son, William Helme, used the arms of the Northamptonshire family, and asserted that his grandfather came from that family, to claim his gentility. Whether this family are his ancestors is another question. Mr. Gifford thinks it is more likely that William's grandfather was related to the Elmes of Lutton, (a village in the South Holland district of

⁶¹⁷ *Ibid.*, 9, 10/13/2020; <http://healygenealogy.com/427.htm>, 10/13/2020.

⁶¹⁸ <https://www.wikitree.com/wiki/Helme-175>, 10/13/2020.

⁶¹⁹ *Ibid.*, 10/13/2020.

Lincolnshire, less than 2 miles to the north of Long Sutton), who were testators in the 1550s. John Elmes could be the son of **Thomas Elmes**, b. between 1460 and 1520.⁶²⁰

Morgan Family Ancestry

The surname Morgan is derived from the Old Welsh personal name, *Morcant*, which is composed of the Welsh elements *more*, meaning sea and *cant*, indicating circle. It traces its origin from the powerful Welsh family established ca. 1330 (more on them at the end of this section). It could also mean sea chief or sea defender. The Welsh term for water sprites is *morgans*. Morganna, or Morgan le Fey (Morgan the fairy), is a powerful enchantress in the King Arthur legends.

The Morgan Family from whom our ancestors descend also includes Daniel Boone of Kentucky Fame, Justin Morgan of the Morgan Horse fame, and Henry Morgan, the Famous Buccaneer, and is a much-researched family⁶²¹. To remind the reader, Penelope Terry, wife of Capt. Thomas Abbey of this generation was the daughter of Dr. Ebenezer Terry, son of Captain Samuel Terry II and **Hannah (Morgan) Terry**.

Hannah Morgan, b. Springfield, Middlesex, Massachusetts 11 Apr 1656, daughter of Sergeant Miles Morgan and Prudence (Gilbert) Morgan. "Borne the .11. day of the .2. mon: 1656"; many sources list her birth date in February - 2nd month - but remembering the former dating system, the correct month is April;⁶²² d. Enfield, Hartford, Massachusetts 17 Jan 1697; bur. Enfield, Hartford, Connecticut;⁶²³ "Here lies the body of Mrs. Martha Terry, relict of Capt. Samuel Terry." (if there is a date, it has sunk into the ground); m. 17 May 1682 **Samuel Terry II**,⁶²⁴ the eldest son of Samuel Terry Sr. As a young man of about twenty, Samuel helped in his father's work and courted Miss Hannah, the daughter of their neighbor Miles Morgan, whom he married the next year. In 1682, Samuel and Hannah left his father's home, "the paternal roof," to make for themselves a new home in Enfield, now in Connecticut, on the land that had been granted him the year before.⁶²⁵

⁶²⁰ Strahle, *Some North American Descendants of John Elmes of Lincolnshire England Through His Great-Grandson Christopher Helme of Rhode*, 9, <familysearch.org>, 8/4/2021.

⁶²¹ <http://ritaren.tripod.com/morgan.html>, 10/13/2020.

⁶²² Colonial Families of the USA, Vol II, 523, (ancestry.com) 10/13/2020; The New England Historical & Genealogical Register, Vol. 18 (1864), 144, *Springfield records*, (ancestry.com), 10/13/2020; *North America, Family Histories, 1500-200, James Morgan and his Descendants*, 18, (ancestry.com), 10/13/2020; Frank Farnsworth Starr, *The Miles Morgan family of Springfield, Massachusetts, in the line of Joseph Morgan of Hartford, Connecticut, 1780-1847*, (Hartford, Connecticut, 1904), 26, (archive.org), 10/13/2020.

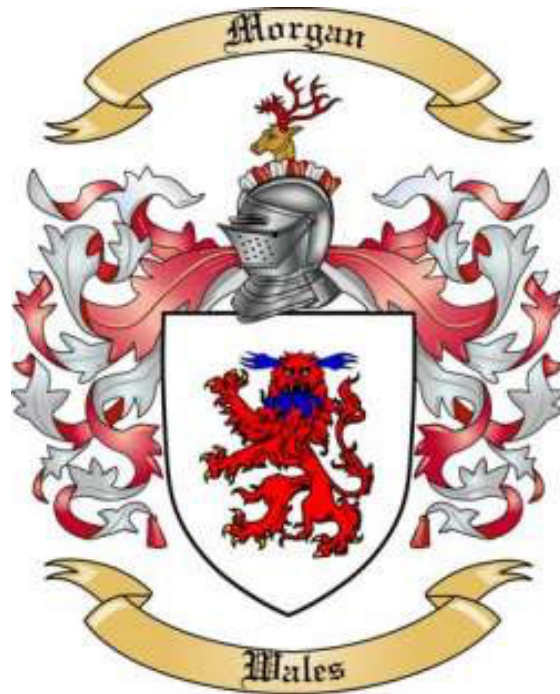
⁶²³ Allen & Pease, *The History of Enfield, Connecticut*, Vol 2: 1862, (babel.hathitrust.org), 10/13/2020; Starr, *The Miles Morgan family of Springfield, Massachusetts*, Flyleaf for 'Morgan Pedigree,' (archive.org), 10/13/2020.

⁶²⁴ Allen & Pease, *The History of Enfield, Connecticut*, Vol 2: 1765, (babel.hathitrust.org), 10/13/2020; *New England Marriages to 1700*, Enfield Connecticut, Vol 3, 1498, (americanancestors.org), 10/13/2020; *U.S., Find a Grave Index, 1600s-Current*, Memorial #158100430, (ancestry.com), 10/13/2020.

⁶²⁵ Stephen Terry, *Notes of Terry families in the United States of America*, (Hartford, Connecticut, Stephen Terry, 1887), 5, (archive.org), 10/13/2020.



Author's photo - June 2019



Sergeant Miles Morgan, was Hannah Morgan's father and this author's 8th Great Grandfather. His name at birth may have been Miles Morgain. He was a Welsh colonist and pioneer settler of what was to become Springfield, Massachusetts. He was that town's hero of King Philip's War 1675, and his statue still stands in the city's Court Square.

A bronze statue of Miles Morgan, was erected by one of his descendants. It was not necessarily a public tribute by Springfield, and yet, "he deserves our respect because he was an early settler and continued here more than half a century; a man who without making any pretensions to a capacity for public service, was content to act his part in the sphere of life to which he was called, faithfully and modestly responding to every call of duty and living the life of an honest man and irreproachable citizen, such a man is worthy of being remembered."

The bronze statue which shows him in huntsman's dress and cocked hat, heavy boots and belted Jerkin, with a matchlock rifle over his shoulder, was completed in 1882. It was the first important work of Johnathan Scott Hartley.

Connecticut Valley Historical Society, *Papers and Proceedings of the Connecticut Valley Historical Society*, 261, (archive.org), 10/13/2020.

Miles Morgan, b. Llandeuff, Vale of Glamorgan, Wales, abt. Apr 1615/16; alternately b. 1615/16 Bristol, England.⁶²⁶ This location is near the current day town of Cardiff in South Wales.

He arrived in Boston abt. 1636⁶²⁷ and removed to Springfield in 1644, residing there for 55 years until his death; d. Springfield, Hampden County, Massachusetts 28 May 1699 at age 83 of unknown causes;⁶²⁸ buried same, though the old cemetery has been moved.

He, m. abt. 1643, **Prudence Gilbert** of Beverly; b. Beverley, Yorkshire, England abt. 1616 and located in Beverly Massachusetts, with her family, a fellow shipboard passenger on the journey to the colonies in 1636. "Of this courtship and marriage and interesting account is preserved."⁶²⁹ Prudence Morgan, d. 11th mo. 14th day 1660 (old style).⁶³⁰

Children all born in Springfield, Hampden, Massachusetts:⁶³¹

MARY MORGAN, b. 14th day 12th mo 1644 - 14 Feb 1644; d. Springfield 2 Oct 1683; m. Edmund Pringredays, b. 1640; d. Springfield 11 Oct 1675; Mary, m. (2) Springfield 23 Apr 1678 Nicholas Rust, b. 1640; d. 9 Sept 1683.

- i. JOHNATHAN MORGAN, b. 16th day 9th month 1646 - 16 Nov 1646; d. Springfield 10 Apr 1714; m. Springfield 5 Jan 1679 Sarah Cooley; five children.
- ii. DAVID MORGAN, b. 23rd day 7th month 1648 - 23 Sept 1648; d. Springfield 30 May 1731; m. Springfield 16 Jan 1673 Mary Clark; ten children.
- iii. PELATIAH MORGAN, b. 17th day 5th month 1650 - 17 July 1650; d. 1675 Springfield, killed by Indians; unmarried.
- iv. ISAAC MORGAN, b. 12th day 3rd month 1652 - 12 May 1652; d. Enfield, Hartford, Connecticut 23 Mar 1705; m. Abigail Gardiner, six children.
- v. LYDIA MORGAN, b. 8th day 2nd month 1654 - 8 Apr 1654; d. 30 Jul 1737; m. John Pierce; four children.
- vi. **HANNAH MORGAN**, b. 11th day 2nd month 1656 - 11 Apr 1656, d. Enfield, 17 Jan 1697; m. Springfield, 17 May 1682, **Samuel Terry**; four children.
- vii. MERCY MORGAN, b. 18th day 5th month 1658 - 18 Jul 1658; d. Springfield 1660; no other information.

⁶²⁶ There are no primary sources for the birth of Miles Morgan. Nathaniel Harris Morgan, *Morgan Genealogy: A history of James Morgan, of New London, Conn., and his descendants; from 1607 to 1869 ... With an appendix containing the history of his brother, Miles Morgan, of Springfield, Mass.; and some of his descendants ...*, (Hartford, Press of Case, Lockwood and Brainard, 1896), 233, (archive.org), 10/13/2020.

⁶²⁷ U.S. and Canada Passenger and Immigration lists Index, 1500s-1900s, Boston, Massachusetts, 1636, 199, referencing Colket, *Founders of Early American Families*, (ancestry.com), 10/13/2020; Virkus, *Immigrant Ancestors*, 49.

⁶²⁸ Massachusetts Town and Vital Records 1620-1988, *Springfield, Deaths*, 191, 'miles morgan dyed the 28th day of may 1699,' (ancestry.com), 10/13/2020; U.S. Find a Grave, Memorial #62404974, (ancestry.com) 10/13/2020.

⁶²⁹ Morgan, *Morgan Genealogy: ...James Morgan and His Descendants...*, 5, (archive.org) 10/13/2020; *New England Marriages to 1700*, Vol 2: 1057, (americanancestors.org), 10/13/2020,

⁶³⁰ https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Old_Style_and_New_Style_dates, in the "old style" March is month #1, 10/13/2020.

⁶³¹ *Colonial Families of the USA, 1607- 1775*, 523, (ancestry.com), 10/13/2020; Appleton Morgan, *A History of the Family of Morgan from 1089 to present times*, (New York, 1902), (archive.org), 48, 10/13/2020; Nathaniel Harris Morgan, *Morgan Genealogy: ...James Morgan and His Descendants...*, appendix, 235- 236, (archive.org) 10/13/2020.

Prudence (Gilbert) Morgan, died in 1660, leaving seven children, ages two to fifteen. Mr. Morgan remained a widower for nine years until at age 52, he married (2) Springfield, Hampden, Massachusetts 15 February 1669 Elizabeth Bliss (1637-1683), daughter of Thomas and Margaret (Hulins) Bliss.⁶³²

There was one son born of this second marriage: Nathaniel Morgan, b. 14 June 1671, m. Hannah Bird. The great-great-grandson of Nathaniel Morgan, step brother to Hannah, John Morgan III, entered the financial industry, and his descendants continued in that field until J.P. Morgan, 1837 -1913.⁶³³ Today, JPMorgan Chase & Co. is an American multinational investment bank and financial services holding company headquartered in New York City.

With his two older brothers, John and James, Miles Morgan arrived 16 April 1636 in Boston, Massachusetts.⁶³⁴ Legend has it that the trio sailed from Bristol, England on the ship the *Mary*. They lived in Roxbury, Massachusetts for a time. Legend also tells us that along with a party of other emigrants, mostly from Roxbury, of whom Colonel William Pynchon was the head, young Miles Morgan, who was under the age of 21, undertook an expedition of exploration into the wilderness of this new land and settled the planation of Springfield on the Connecticut River, which they first called *Agawam*.

Suppressing the fact of his minority age, he soon became second-in-command, and was allowed to draw a house lot (minors were not usually privileged to participate) and afterwards built about the land a fortified block house, which in the years to come was to serve the community well.⁶³⁵

⁶³² *American Marriages Before 1699*, <online database>, (Provo, Utah, Ancestry.com Operations Inc., 1997); *Colonial Families of the USA, 1607- 1775*, 523, (ancestry.com), 10/13/2020; *The New England Historical and Genealogical Register*, Vol 123 (1969), 258, *Judge Pynchon's Marriage Record 1685-1711*, (americanancesstors.org), 10/13/2020.

⁶³³ Arthur Meredyth Burke, *The Prominent Families of the United States of America*, (London, The Sackville press, ltd, 1908), 85-86, (babel.hathitrust.org), 10/13/2020; Ezra S. Stearns, William F. Witcher, Edward E. Parker, *Genealogical and family history of the state of New Hampshire: a record of the achievements of her people in the making of a commonwealth and the founding of a nation*, (Chicago, Lewis Pub. Co, 1908), 55-56, (babel.hathitrust.org), 10/13/2020; https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/J.P._Morgan_%26_Co., 10/23/2020.

⁶³⁴ Connecticut Valley Historical Society, *Papers and Proceedings of the Connecticut Valley Historical Society*, 251, (archive.org), 10/13/2020; Appleton Morgan, *A History of the Family of Morgan ...9*, (archive.org), 10/13/2020; Nathaniel H. Morgan, *Morgan Genealogy: ...James Morgan and His Descendants...*, 18, 233, (archive.org) 10/13/2020; *U.S. and Canada, Passenger and Immigration Lists Index, 1500s-1900s*, Boston, Massachusetts 1636, referencing Colket, *Founders of Early American Families*, (ancestry.com), 10/13/2020. Note: though many texts refer to their arrival, I have been unable to locate the ship on which they sailed, either through the Morgan or the Gilbert surnames, since they were to have travelled together.

⁶³⁵ Morgan, *A History of the Family of Morgan from 1089 to present times*, 43, 47, (archive.org), 10/13/2020; Morgan, *Morgan Genealogy: ...James Morgan and His Descendants*, 18, 232-23, marriage story 234-235, (archive.org), 10/13/2020.

However, there is this:

The story that Miles Morgan accompanied the Roxbury pioneers to Springfield is utterly untrue.”⁶³⁶ He was an early settler, but not one of the pioneer band. The group comprising the first party of settlers, included twelve men, and their names are known ... and these twelve received allotments of land on 16 May 1636. There is no mention of the Morgan name. Nor is it mentioned in Springfield records, until the birth of his eldest child Mary recorded in March 1644/45. It would appear that his first settlement in Springfield took place between April 1643 and March 1645, some seven or eight years after Pynchon had come. Miles Morgan arrived after considerable progress had been made in the settlement. Boundaries had been surveyed, houses built, a sawmill had been in operation for four to five years.

The second legend surrounding Miles Morgan has to do with the courtship of his bride, Prudence Gilbert:

The story that John Alden fell in love with Pricilla Mullins while the Mayflower lay at Southampton, finds its duplicate in the tale of young Miles Morgan, who in January 1636, while wandering about on the wharves at Bristol, beheld the fair Prudence Gilbert, set to sail with her parents for America. Miles thereupon hastily determined to embark in the same ship. He decided at such short notice to sail with the ship on which she was going, that he did not even have time to send word to his parents.

The story continues:

No sooner had the youth received his allotment of land, he had a letter written to Prudence (some state he wrote the letter and counter with the inability of Miles to write) and proposed marriage, “to become his wife, and the sharer of his dubious fortunes in the wilderness.” She accepted, “with equal frankness, for coquetry it seems was not then in fashion,” and wrote him an explicit answer, avowing her willingness to comply with his wishes. In 1642, “with all convenient speed” he started back on foot with two friends and an Indian guide to Beverly, Massachusetts, where the Gilbert family had settled. There, he and Prudence were married. Miles brought her back, also on foot, with the Indian and a horse purchased in Beverly, both laden with the bride’s household goods. Going before, was Captain Morgan, with his match-lock (musket), to “put to flight the armies of the aliens who might molest them in their pilgrimages to and from the land of people in the East,” And so, with his bride by his side, they made their way across 120 miles of trackless forest to their new home in the wilderness.

One family historian wrote, “The 120-mile trip was the start of the couple's wonderful adventure.” Another writes, “surely these were Amazonian times, when women had strength, and were not too squeamish to exert it!”

⁶³⁶ Connecticut Valley Historical Society, *Papers and Proceedings of the Connecticut Valley Historical Society*, 251-254, (archive.org), 10/13/2020; Mason Arnold Green, *Springfield 1636-1886: history of town and city: including an account of the quarter-millennial celebration at Springfield Mass, May 25,26 1886*, (Springfield Mass, CA Nichols, 1888) 97, (babel.hathitrust.org), 10/13/2020.

These stories rest mainly in tradition and may, or may not, have some basis in fact. Despite this, it is often repeated as a parallel to the story of John Alden and Priscilla Mullins, whom we will meet in Volume 2. There were no roads across the country; the route would have taken them through forest and swamp, and across rivers without bridges. This wedding jaunt must have occupied a good deal of time and have been filled with severe difficulties and dangers. But the men and women of that day were brave and hardy, and accustomed to endure hardship and to face risk.⁶³⁷

“Stern, sober Springfield records” make the first American reference to Miles Morgan in 1644: ‘*Mary Morgan, daughter to Miles Morgan borne 12 mon 14 day 1644, about 9 o clocke in ye morning.*’⁶³⁸

Miles Morgan and George Colton were commissioned in January 1646 to “to get a (black) smith for ye town.”⁶³⁹ A bargain was driven betwixt the towne of Springfield and ffrancis Ball for a shop for a Smith which is to be 12 foote wide, 16 foote in length, five foote stud betweixt Joynets, a chimney for the forge rung, to be boarded both roof and sides to make a doore and window in the end with a beam in ye midst.⁶⁴⁰

The open winter of 1646/47 was followed by terrible floods and the following autumn brought an epidemic of sickness. Also, during the previous summer, caterpillars had appeared in such numbers, to the great damage of the wheat, “that it may be called a plague.” The settlers had many natural enemies. Pigeons in overwhelming flocks assaulted the crops, and =wolves made free with the sheep. A bounty of 10d was paid for every wolf killed within five miles of town.⁶⁴¹

At the beginning of 1647, there were forty-two lot owners including Miles Morgan who is listed as owning thirty-four and one-half acres with a tax of 9s 6d. These taxes were to pay the expenses William Pynchon incurred through the purchase, of the land for the Springfield settlement, from the Indians.⁶⁴² In April 1647, Miles Morgan was surveyor for the upper part of the town. Special instructions, besides keeping the highways in condition, were to open “a horse way over the meddow to ye Bay path, and a “bridge over the three-corner brook into the plain.”⁶⁴³ In 1648, Miles was allotted two acres “on ye Mill River.”⁶⁴⁴

⁶³⁷ Connecticut Valley Historical Society, *Papers and Proceedings of the Connecticut Valley Historical Society*, 254, (archive.org), 10/13/2020.

⁶³⁸ E. H. (Edward Henry) Clement, et al... *Genealogical and Family History of the State of Connecticut: a Record of the Achievements of Her People In the Making of a Commonwealth And the Founding of a Nation*, (New York, Lewis Historical Publishing Company, 1911) Vol. III, 1243, (babel.hathitrust.org), 10/13/2020.

⁶³⁹ Green, *Springfield 1636-1886...*, 96, (babel.hathitrust.org), 10/13/2020.

⁶⁴⁰ *Ibid.*, 96-97, (babel.hathitrust.org), 10/13/2020.

⁶⁴¹ *Ibid.*, 94.

⁶⁴² Clement, et al...*Genealogical and Family History of the State of Connecticut ...*, Vol. III, 1243, (babel.hathitrust.org), 10/13/2020.

⁶⁴³ Green, *Springfield 1636-1886...*, 98, (babel.hathitrust.org), 10/13/2020.

⁶⁴⁴ *Ibid.*, 110.

On 6 February 1648, Miles Morgan took the Oath of Fidelity before Magistrate William Pynchon.⁶⁴⁵ He was assigned to important trust positions both in town and church, "speedily becoming one of the most valued men of the colony, a brave and intrepid Indian fighter, and a wise counsellor in the government." He served as a sturdy tiller of the fields and the community butcher for a time, when his farming duties allowed. He served one year as Constable and was chosen five times as a Selectman, holding the latter office in 1655, 1657, 1660, 1662, and 1668.

On 30 August 1652, he opened an account with John Pynchon by purchasing nine yards of Devonshire kersey at 9s, which amounted to 4£ 1s; 9 yards of Red Cotton at 3s 8d; 2 yards of Scots cloth 5s; several pairs of stockings and a variety of other family necessities, including two combs, four pairs of "sissars," four inkhorns, and a looking glass, the latter costing 2s. The last charge in the year was for "7 Pills: 14d."⁶⁴⁶ Other records indicate that Miles Morgan bought from time to time "shag cotton, calico, venison, razors, lace, raisins, sugar, one quart of Sack and gunpowder. The Sergeant struck a balance by caring for and slaughtering cattle, and selling produce. Miles killed as many as twenty hogs for Pynchon at one time."⁶⁴⁷

Accordingly, on the account books of Major Pynchon, containing the record of his extensive business as a trader in all the settled parts of the Connecticut valley, are to be found such entries to the credit of Miles Morgan as the following:

1652, Rece ^d by carriage corne down y ^e falls,	11, 1s, 8d
Rece ^d by carrying downe corne several voyadges to this 8 th July, 1653,	3, 1, 11
July 9, 1655, Rece ^d by a voyadge downe w th Sam Terry,	0, 7, 4
Rece ^d by carting down a load of corne,	0, 9, 0
March 19, 1655, Rece ^d by goeing down y ^e falls w th Sam Terry,	0, 15, 0
Feb. 24, '56, by killing 4 cattle,	0, 9, 6
Nov. 15, 1657, Rece ^d by killing an ox, G. Chapin & mine,	0, 2, 6
By killing 4 beasts this 27 th of Octob ^r 1660,	0, 9, 0
May and June, 1661, By 5 voyadges downe y ^e falls w th Ed Foster,	
when yo caryd w ^t at 4d. per bush., & brought up goods at	
22s. pr ton.	
All y ^e voyadges come to 20 l, & y ^e cannoe p ^d for w ^{ch} is 5 l, yr pt.	

Subsequently, he operated a boat on the Connecticut River, trading with other colonists and the Indians, and was known as Captain Morgan. Unable to read or write, his mark on the town records was the sign of an anchor. Many of the credits in his account with John Pynchon were for "voyages" down to the falls or to the "foote of the falls," referring to the falls in the Connecticut River at Enfield. "By carrying goods down & bringing up with Goodman

Merrick in July, 1663, your part is 1£ 14s 1d." He appears to have been a thrifty inhabitant and by killing "beasts," and carrying down "corne," and doing a great variety of work for Pynchon, he escaped the perils of owing too much at Pynchon's store, unlike other Springfield inhabitants. Miles Morgan's housing and lands do not appear to have been transferred to John Pynchon's possessions, who seems to have placed confidence in Morgan's accuracy in accounts, for he frequently enters in his book, "by worke as in Miles his Booke," and they were balanced accordingly.

His home lot, fronting eighteen rods on the highway, was on the south side of Ferry Lane, the present Cyprus Street, next to Main Street, on what was the land to the upper wharf on the bank

⁶⁴⁵ Clement, et al... *Genealogical and Family History of the State of Connecticut ...*, Vol. III, 1244, (babel.hathitrust.org), 10/13/2020; Starr, *The Miles Morgan family of Springfield, Massachusetts*, 11 citing Pynchon Court record, (archive.org), 10/13/2020.

⁶⁴⁶ Burt, *The first Century of the History of Springfield...*, 609, (babel.hathitrust.org), 10/13/2020.

⁶⁴⁷ Green, *Springfield 1636-1886...*, 97, (babel.hathitrust.org), 10/13/2020.

of the Connecticut river. These 3 acres were his homestead for life and that of his descendants for many years after. In 1845 the property was sold by the Brewer family to the Connecticut River Railroad Co; their tracks now covering the original lot and their repair shop standing upon the site of the old Morgan homestead.⁶⁴⁸

In 1654, he served on the board of townsmen.⁶⁴⁹ By 1658, Morgan is listed as a sergeant in the local militia. In 1660, Morgan was one of the selectmen of the town, apparently chairman of the Board. He occasionally served on the jury, but never as foreman. He was a law-abiding man and whenever a strong arm or a steady nerve was wanted, he was on hand.⁶⁵⁰

On 16 November 1660, Prudence (Gilbert) Morgan passed away. She was forty-three years old. There is some suggestion that she died as a result of complications due to the birth of her daughter, Mercy, born in May of 1658. Records indicate that both Prudence and Mercy passed away within months of each other.⁶⁵¹

In 1661, we find Miles S. Morgan in the Massachusetts Early Census Index.⁶⁵² (There is no explanation for the middle initial S.) And in 1662, Miles Morgan was ratified as *Second Serjeant* of the Trayned Band of Springfield.⁶⁵³ In this same year he was one of a committee appointed by the town to make an agreement with Elizur Holyoke regarding the grinding of corn at his mill.

In 1663, with a handful of others, he was given power to grant allotments of land, power taken from the board of townsmen and, "a brisk apportionment of lands followed."⁶⁵⁴ Also in this year he and his family were given the 3rd seat in the meeting house.⁶⁵⁵ In 1664, his name is among those names of the Townsmen who are allowed and admitted Inhabitants.⁶⁵⁶ In September 1665, he and John Dumbleton were appointed by the County Court to help resolve a land dispute between "the Indians" of Springfield and settler Samll Marshfield.⁶⁵⁷

⁶⁴⁸ Clement, et al... *Genealogical and Family History of the State of Connecticut ...*, Vol. III, 1243, (babel.hathitrust.org), 10/13/2020; *The New England Historical and Genealogical Register*, Vol 30 (1876), *Early Settlers of West Springfield*, 53 transcribed from the *Parish Records of the First Congregational Church*, (americanancestors.org), 10/13/2020.

⁶⁴⁹ Green, *Springfield 1636-1886...*, 126, (babel.hathitrust.org), 10/13/2020.

⁶⁵⁰ Connecticut Valley Historical Society, *Papers and Proceedings of the Connecticut Valley Historical Society*, 256, (archive.org), 10/13/2020.

⁶⁵¹ <http://thebuttermakerandthemidwife.blogspot.com>, query Miles Morgan, 10/13/2020.

⁶⁵² *Massachusetts, Compiled Census and Census Substitutes Index, 1790-1890*, 1661, #083, (ancestry.com), 10/13/2020.

⁶⁵³ Clement, et al... *Genealogical and Family History of the State of Connecticut ...*, Vol. III, 1244 citing: *Northampton Court Records*, (babel.hathitrust.org), 10/13/2020.

⁶⁵⁴ Green, *Springfield 1636-1886...*, 127, (babel.hathitrust.org), 10/13/2020.

⁶⁵⁵ *Ibid.*, 130.

⁶⁵⁶ Starr, *The Miles Morgan family of Springfield, Massachusetts*, 14 citing *Town Records* Vol 3, 38, (archive.org), 10/13/2020.

⁶⁵⁷ Connecticut Valley Historical Society, *Papers and Proceedings of the Connecticut Valley Historical Society*, 153, (archive.org), 10/13/2020.

On 15 February 1669, *Serja* Miles Morgan and Elizabeth Bliss were married by John Pynchon, the magistrate at Springfield. She was the daughter of Thomas and Margaret (Hulins) Bliss of Hartford, Connecticut.⁶⁵⁸

On 7 April 1669, "in consideration of love and favor," Miles conveyed to his son-in law Edmund Pringredays and Mary his wife, "six acres of land on the West side of the Great River below the plain called Chicopee Plain which had been granted to him by the town for a house lot."⁶⁵⁹

Also, on that date, records show:

Miles Morgan, along with Johnathan Burt, was appointed to sit in the balcony of the Springfield church during services and maintain order among the young men in the congregation. ("...up in ye gallery, to give a check to disorders in youth and young men in tyme of God's worship"). Considering the early settlers' piety, this was a position of some honor and also attested to his "force of personality."⁶⁶⁰

However, church did not take up all their time. According to the records, in 1673:

Hannah Merrick, unmarried daughter of Thomas Merrick, accused Miles' son Jonathan with the paternity of her child. Miles provided his son's bail, and Jonathan fought the charge. However, the court found him guilty, and ordered him to pay two shillings, sixpence towards the child's support for four years. Jonathan's second wife eventually got a full confession from Hannah (the records do not indicate how). Hannah had to pay a fine of seven pounds or receive twenty lashes as punishment for her perjury. Not letting matters lie, Jonathan then filed a suit charging slander against Hannah's father, but lost.⁶⁶¹

Eight years later, about 1681, Miles was again in trouble over a child:

His daughter Lydia worked in the household of the family of Samuel Gaines, who became the father of her child. Miles filed charges and won his suit. The court ordered Mr. Gaines to pay child support. The judges declared the "greate Cause to Lament and bewaile ye sore hand of God agst us in sufferin such vile inormityes to Breake out amongst us which as a Flood does threaten to overwhelm us." He was also given ten stripes for immoral conduct and living apart from his wife.⁶⁶²

On 5 October 1675, in the early morning hours, the town of Springfield was sacked and burned by the Indians in King Philip's War. Night posts had scattered the alarm that five hundred Indians skulked about Springfield with the intension of burning the town. They were met by two hundred soldiers, on whose appearance the *redskins* dispersed into the thickets, having fired the town. The conflagration crept from house to house until ultimately few were left standing.

⁶⁵⁸ Clement, et al... *Genealogical and Family History of the State of Connecticut ...*, Vol. III, 1244, (babel.hathitrust.org), 10/13/2020.

⁶⁵⁹ *Ibid.*, Vol. III, 1244 citing *Old Hampshire co Deeds*, Vol A, 5.

⁶⁶⁰ Green, *Springfield 1636-1886...*,132, (babel.hathitrust.org), 10/13/2020.

⁶⁶¹ Green, *Springfield 1636-1886...*,140-141, (babel.hathitrust.org), 10/13/2020.

⁶⁶² *Ibid.*,141.

Fallen houses, barns, and mills, with the settler's personal possessions and corn and grain for sustenance, augmented the debris and heightened the sighs of suffering. Pynchon's settlement resounded with the weird wail of forty destitute families, plaintively questioning the mercy of God.⁶⁶³

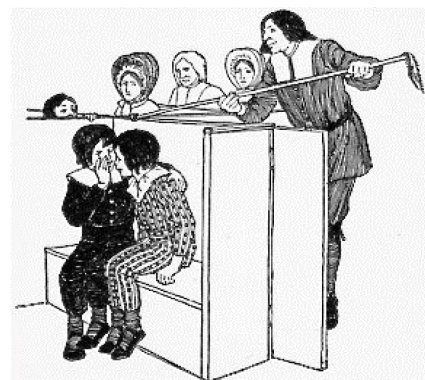
Thirty houses, besides barns and outhouses, were destroyed in the town. Two of the inhabitants, Mr. Pynchon and Mr. Purchase, sustained a loss of 1,000£ each. This was the first damage which the town had suffered since its founding.⁶⁶⁴ Legend has it that Captain Morgan's blockhouse became the fortress of the place.

A party of Indians attacked the house, but their fire was returned with such spirit and success by those within, several of whom were keen marksmen, that the assailants found it dangerous to appear in the sight of the windows and loopholes, and after some hours were glad to sheer off.⁶⁶⁵

What we do know is that the outer doors were very thick, and filled with nails to prevent the Indians from splitting it open with their tomahawks. After the settlement's burning, the colonists held out until an Indian servant who worked for Miles, left to carry word to Major Samuel Appleton at Hadley, 20 - 25 miles north. Appleton sent thirty-six men, who comprised the standing Army of the colony of Massachusetts Bay, as reinforcements. They arrived in time to save the lives of the besieged settlers. Sadly, among those killed was Peletiah, Captain Morgan's son.⁶⁶⁶

In February 1678, Miles Morgan was appointed on a committee to oversee the minister's house's fortification as prevention against further destruction of the town.⁶⁶⁷ In February 1680 and March 1692, he was appointed *Tithingman*.⁶⁶⁸ On 8 May 1683, he is among the freemen of Springfield.⁶⁶⁹

The tithingman keeping order in church. Unruly boys and men got a tap on the head; women who dozed off, got a tickle with the feather.



⁶⁶³ Clement, et al... *Genealogical and Family History of the State of Connecticut ...*, Vol. III, 1244, (babel.hathitrust.org), 10/13/2020.

⁶⁶⁴ Morgan, *Morgan Genealogy: ...James Morgan and His Descendants...*, 235, (archive.org), 10/13/2020.

⁶⁶⁵ Connecticut Valley Historical Society, *Papers and Proceedings of the Connecticut Valley Historical Society*, 259 indicates Miles Morgan's was not one of the fortified houses, nor it did not escape destruction, (archive.org), 10/13/2020.

⁶⁶⁶ Frank Farnsworth Starr, *The Miles Morgan family of Springfield, Massachusetts*, (Hartford, Connecticut, 1904) (archive.org), genealogist and family historian of Middle Connecticut, 18.

⁶⁶⁷ Starr, *The Miles Morgan family of Springfield, Massachusetts*, 20, (archive.org), 10/13/2020.

⁶⁶⁸ *Ibid.*, 13 citing *Town Records Vol 2: 150 and Vol 2: 149*.

⁶⁶⁹ *Ibid.*, 14 citing *The Official Records of William and John Pynchon*.

Most likely, in the fall of 1683, Miles Morgan's second wife, Elizabeth, died in Springfield. There is no record of her date of death, though there is a record of the Will of the Widow Margaret Bliss (Elizabeth (Bliss) Morgan's mother) made 25 June 1684, probated 30 September following. In it, she made a bequest of 3£ pounds to her grandson Nathaniel Morgan, the only child of her daughter Elizabeth (Bliss) Morgan. It seems likely Elizabeth had died by the time of the probate of her mother's Will; otherwise, she might have been mentioned or given a bequest.

Undoubtedly on account of his age, and perhaps because of some bodily infirmity, at the 25 May 1684 session of the Hampshire County court, Miles Morgan was "freed from military exercises" and at a session of the court held 28 September 1687, this exemption continued.⁶⁷⁰

On 25 February 1685, he gave his son Isaac 7 ½ acres of land at the upper end of Springfield bounded West by the Round hill.⁶⁷¹ In 1685, the license for the "fishing Places on Agawam River & Chickuppi River" was given to Deacon Burt, Miles Morgan, Thomas Mirrick, and several others.⁶⁷²

On 2 November 1696, Miles Morgan gave to his youngest son Nathaniel two pieces of land on the West side of the Great River; one of 40 acres in Chicopee field and the other of 7 acres in the House Meadow at Agawam, "in consideration of the sum of six (6) pounds per year during the life of Miles Morgan, paying in grain or money by Nathaniel Morgan."⁶⁷³

On 28 May 1699, at age 83, in Springfield, the town he founded and protected for sixty years, Captain Miles Morgan died. "Like many other of the early settlers, who were men of great worth as men, and useful citizens, he did not write his name but made his mark whenever his signature was necessary. His mark was rather a peculiar one, and uniformly the same. It resembles an anchor more than anything else."⁶⁷⁴

Miles Morgan was less of a Puritan than his fellow settlers and did not believe it was the alleged duty of the settlement to legislate for spiritual and theological, as well as temporal affairs. In 1650, he voted, as a minority of one, against devoting a considerable portion of the public funds to pay for the preparation and publishing of an answer by Mr. Norton of Ipswich, to Colonel Pyncheon's *Meritorious Price of Christ's Redemption*. Pyncheon's book had been published in England to combat the Calvinistic view of the atonement. When this heretical volume arrived back in the Colonies, Colonel Pyncheon, who up until that time had been chief magistrate of Springfield, was deposed, and his book sent to Boston and burned on the common.

⁶⁷⁰ *Ibid.*, 20 citing *Springfield Town Records*, Vol 3, 99.

⁶⁷¹ *Ibid.*, 20 citing *Old Hampshire County Deeds*, Vol 1, 63.

⁶⁷² Green, *Springfield 1636-1886...*, 188, (babel.hathitrust.org), 10/13/2020.

⁶⁷³ Starr, *The Miles Morgan family of Springfield, Massachusetts*, 20, 21 citing *Old Hampshire County Deeds*, Vol C, 24920, (archive.org), 10/13/2020.

⁶⁷⁴ Connecticut Valley Historical Society, *Papers and Proceedings of the Connecticut Valley Historical Society*, 256, (archive.org), 10/13/2020.

Capt. (*honorary title*) Morgan seems to fall in line with William Vassall and Christopher Helme as men who pushed back against the Puritan way of life. His ancestor, Thomas Morgan, was the Welsh monk who went to Rome, turned his name *More-Gana* (meaning Son of, or born by the sea) into Pelagius, and succeeded in avoiding hot coals even while claiming that there was no such thing as *original sin*.⁶⁷⁵

The Will and Inventory of Miles Morgan are on file with the Hampshire County Probate Court, Box 101, file 16.⁶⁷⁶ The administrators of his Will were his four sons, Isaac, Johnathan, David, and Nathaniel. The Inventory and debts of his estate; the division of lands and goods can also be found in Frank Farnsworth Starr, *The Miles Morgan family of Springfield, Massachusetts*, (Hartford, Connecticut, 1904), (archive.org), pages 21-26. His household goods (wearing apparel and bedding once again being the most valuable), including one little heifer – totaled 11£ 16s. His lands, which the sons Johnathan, David, and Isaac divided amongst themselves, had a value of 14£ 10s; Nathaniel having the land already given him.

Samuel Terry, husband of Hannah Morgan, agreed to accept half the movables worth 5£ 18s and requested that his daughter Hannah have “a good cow upon her marriage.” Daughter Lydia Pierce, not mentioned in the Will or Inventory, was allowed and also agreed to 5£ 18s of the Inventory of moveable goods. With that, the estate was settled.

The location of the graves of Miles Morgan and his two wives must forever remain a mystery. They were probably buried in the first graveyard of Springfield, located at the foot of an elm tree near the Connecticut River. The 1848 railroad between Hartford and Springfield was laid out through this cemetery, necessitating the exhumation of all the bodies, most of which were reinterred in the Springfield cemetery near Pine Street.⁶⁷⁷

Note: Miles' brother, James Morgan, moved to the Plymouth Colony and later settled New Haven, Connecticut, where he became a member of the Colonial Assembly of Connecticut and fought in the Pequot War. His other brother, John Morgan, grew disgusted with the Puritan's bigotry, superstition, and persecutions (including the witch trials) then taking place in New England and moved to Virginia.

⁶⁷⁵ *The New England Magazine*, (New England Magazine Co, Boston) Vol I, Sept 1889 – Feb 1890, John W. Bell, *An American Shakespearean*, 457, (books.google.com), 10/13/2020.

⁶⁷⁶ *Hampshire County, MA: Probate File Papers, 1660-188*, (americanancestors.org), 101-61:1 – 101-61:7, 10/13/2020.

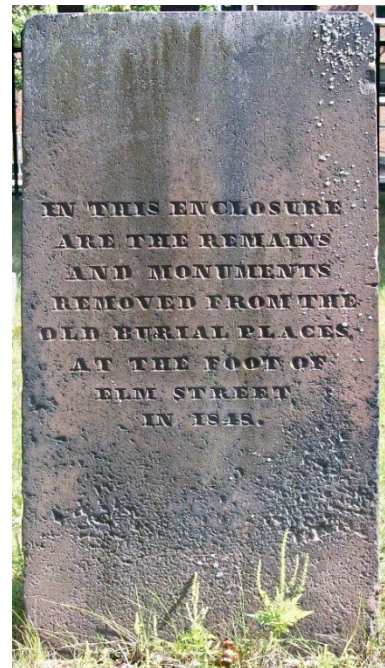
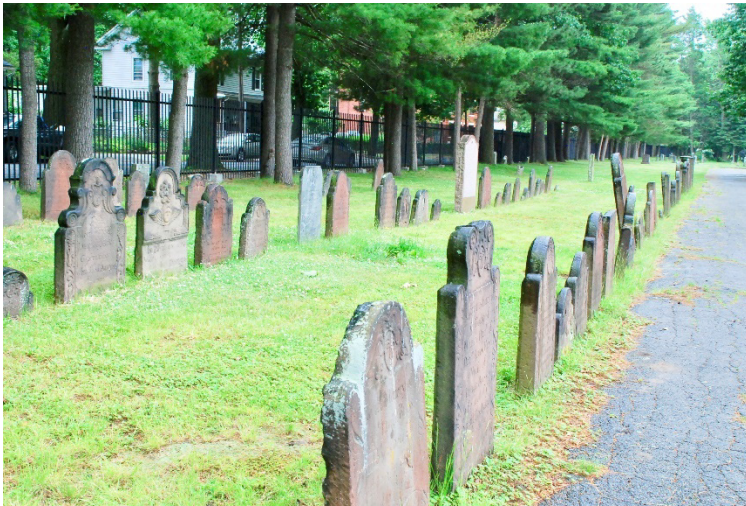
⁶⁷⁷ Starr, *The Miles Morgan family of Springfield, Massachusetts*, 21, (archive.org), 10/13/2020

Visiting Springfield, Massachusetts

I drove from Essex, Massachusetts west to Springfield on yet another rainy day. One of my goals was to find the graves of ancestors buried there. I knew from research that the railroad now went through the old Elm Street cemetery site, or *The Old Burying Ground*, and in 1848, graves dating from 1664 were moved to the Springfield Cemetery.



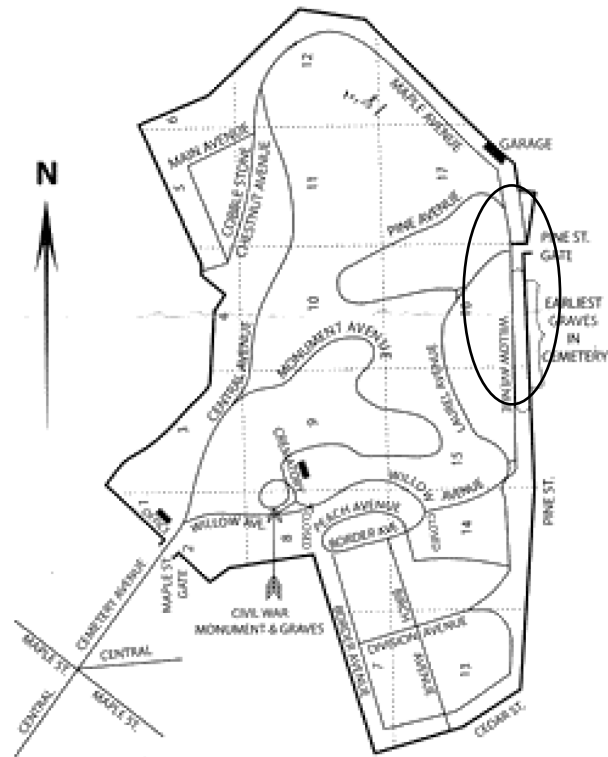
It seemed that the Pine Street entrance was the one to take as it was closest to the old section. The old stones along Pine Street are about four rows deep and rest in shadow. I felt a sadness for the graves that are lost. Many stones were crumbling and illegible. A mass grave holds 2000 unnamed ancestors. Unfortunately, the ancestors that I am researching are “gone with the ages.”



Unfortunately, the Pine Street entrance was locked up tight. I had to go around to the main entrance off Central, which changes to Cemetery Road. I couldn't find it. About the third time down Central St. I finally spotted the opening which looks like an alleyway except for the two brick pillars with urns at the top and the two wrought iron gates covered in green moss. Once inside, the park-like setting of graceful slopes, rolling lawns, and winding paths among ancient trees and plantings was soothing to my traveler's nerves. I made my way up a steep road to the back of the cemetery. The oldest known burial dates to 1657 and is that of Mary (Pynchon) Holyoke, daughter of Springfield's founder, William Pynchon.

SPRINGFIELD CEMETERY

171 Maple St
Springfield, MA 01105-1820



In Springfield I also found the statues of Samuel Chapin, Miles Morgan, visited the Dr. Seuss Museum and Gardens, and in honor of a daughter-in-law, who was a women's collegiate basketball player, the Basketball Hall of Fame. This last venue sits on the eastern bank of the Connecticut River near its confluence with three rivers: the western Westfield River, the eastern Chicopee River, and the eastern Mill River. The city was founded in 1636 by English Puritan William Pynchon as *Agawam Plantation* under the administration of the Connecticut Colony. In 1641, it was renamed after Pynchon's hometown Springfield, Essex, England. Trade disputes, as well as the Governor of Connecticut's hostilities toward native tribes, caused Springfield to join the Massachusetts Bay Colony.

During its early existence, Springfield flourished both as an agricultural settlement and as a trading post. However, its prosperity began to wane dramatically in 1675 during (and after) King Phillip's War. Three-quarters of the original settlement was burned to the ground, with many of Springfield's residents taking refuge in John Pynchon's brick house, the "Old Fort", the first such house to be built in the Connecticut River Valley. Also, as theirs was one of the few homesteads to survive the attack, heroic honors came to Miles Morgan and his sons.

The original settlement, today's downtown Springfield, was located atop bluffs at the confluence of the four rivers, and was the nexus of trade routes to Boston, Albany, New York City, and Montreal. It was also situated on some of the northeastern United States' most fertile soil. During the American Revolution, George Washington designated it as the site of the Springfield Armory, which eventually manufactured the Springfield Rifle. The city would also play a pivotal role in the Civil War, as a stop on the Underground Railroad and home of abolitionist John Brown, widely known for his raid on Harper's Ferry.⁶⁷⁸

As I attempted to trace the ancestors of Miles Morgan, there are a variety of leads; several men named William Morgan and many Welsh place names and surnames to add to the confusion.

The author of an article in *Worcester County, Massachusetts Memoirs*, Vol 1-11⁶⁷⁹ on the lineage of a Paul Beagary Morgan, writes that the genealogy of the Morgan family has *recently* been traced by George T. Clark, Antiquary,⁶⁸⁰ from remote Welsh ancestors, offering sixteen generations of Morgan ancestors. It is so seldom that English and American genealogies can be so successfully united that American Morgans may well take some satisfaction in their Welsh ancestry.

⁶⁷⁸ https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Springfield,_Massachusetts

⁶⁷⁹ Ancestry.com, *Worcester County, Massachusetts Memoirs, Vol 1-11*, 102 – 104, <online database>, (Provo, Utah, The Generations Network Inc., 2002), 10/13/2020.

⁶⁸⁰ https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/George_Thomas_Clark, (1809 – 1898). He published works on the medieval history of Glamorgan and on Welsh genealogy.

Though I am unable to account for the accuracy of his work (which took place in the late 1800s), I trust others can. There are a few romantic notions interspersed, such as the idea that Miles may have been named after Miles Morgan, a British Army Captain who perished with Sir Humphrey Gilbert, half-brother of Sir Walter Raleigh. It seems tales of romance and adventure followed Miles Morgan from the beginning.

In Nathaniel Morgan's, *James Morgan of New London and His Descendants*, we read, the name of his father is unknown, but there is some traditionary evidence that it was William.

William Morgan, b. 1693, son of John Morgan immigrant, ... said his father John (Miles' elder brother) had an ancient little book, in which was written the name of William Morgan of Llandaff, Wales and dated before 1600 CE, and said he was the father of our first James, the emigrant. Other circumstances strengthen the probabilities of this tradition. This William also had a pair of gold sleeve buttons of antique make and having W.M. rudely but plainly stamped on each, which were said to have come down as an *heirloom* from William of Llandaff... by a great effort, I discovered a trace of them soon after, but all too late to save them from the crucible of an innocent purchaser, by whom they had been melted with a common mass of old jewelry.⁶⁸¹

Tradition has the following: James, John, and Miles Morgan were the sons of **William Morgan**,⁶⁸² b. Llandaff, Glamorganshire 1582; merchant of Diveru/Dderw/Thurrow; m. 1606 **Elizabeth Morgan**⁶⁸³ (possibly a very distant cousin), b. Tredegar, Monmouthshire, Wales 1583; the couple moved to Bristol, England abt. 1616. Elizabeth Morgan, d. Bristol, England 18 June 1638 and William Morgan, d. Bristol Unitary Authority, Bristol, England, 19 Jan 1649;⁶⁸⁴ both may be buried at Bristol.

His father, **William Morgan**, b. abt. 1550, m. a woman named **Cwladis**. And that is the extent of the known ancestry of William Morgan, father, and grandfather of Miles and his brothers.

⁶⁸¹ Morgan, *Morgan Genealogy*: ...*James Morgan and His Descendants*...,33, (archive.org), 10/13/2020.

⁶⁸² <https://www.geni.com/people/William-Morgan> references a possible sister/daughter Blanche, but the information is unsourced. 10/13/2020.

⁶⁸³ *U.S. and International Marriage Records, 1560-1900*, Source number: 751.000; Electronic Database; Number of Pages: 1: William Morgan, b. 1585, spouse Elizabeth Winter, b. 1589, m. 1606, (ancestry.com), 10/13/2020.

⁶⁸⁴ *Global, Find a Grave Index for Burials at Sea and other Select Burial Locations, 1300's-Current*, <online database>, (Provo, Utah, Ancestry.com Operations Inc, 2012), Memorial #195959212 merged record - the bio refers to Sir William Morgan, not William Morgan, merchant, though the dates fit his life, not Sir William's. Also mentions daughter Blanche; Elizabeth, Memorial #62119985, no mention of Blanche. 10/13/2020.

However, there is another William Morgan! **Elizabeth Morgan** was the daughter of **Sir William Morgan**, b. 1560 Llandeud, Monmouthshire, (possibly at Pencoed, the family Castle), d. ca. 1653.

His Will was proven by probate, 13 Sept 1653⁶⁸⁵; buried Brecon Cathedral churchyard, Brecon, Powys; his obituary might have read:

Esquire of Y Dderw, Llyswen, Brecknockshire, and the Middle Temple, London. Steward and Justice of the Peace for Brecon. King's Attorney and Recorder for Brecon. Solicitor General for the Council in the Marches.⁶⁸⁶

This Sir William Morgan, m. (1) 1581 **Elizabeth Winter (Lady Elizabeth Winter Baroness Morgan of Tredegar)**, b. 1564, daughter of **Sir William Winter of Lidney**; m. (2) Bridget Morgan of Hayford.

Many genealogies confuse these various William Morgans, which is easy to do. Bear in mind that Sir William, lawyer and member of Parliament, was the father-in-law of William Morgan, *merchant* of Bristol. Then there is this:

Lacking legitimate heirs, Morgan, in his Will (dated 8 Aug 1568, and proved 27 June following) bequeathed the estate to Miles Morgan, son of his illegitimate child John. Miles perished at sea in the service of Sir Humphrey Gilbert, in 1578, leaving Tredegar to his cousin Thomas Morgan II. The name Miles caught my attention, but I have been unable to link the families.⁶⁸⁷

Morgan researchers in America have been well motivated to prove an ancestral connection for James, John, and Miles Morgan, by naming their mother as Elizabeth Morgan, daughter of Sir William and Lady Elizabeth, because of the rich royal ancestry going back for many generations. For example, famous descendants include: Millard Fillmore (13th U.S. President), John Robinson Jeffers (American poet, and icon of the environmental movement), John Pierpont (J.P.) Morgan (American financier and banker, a proven descendant of Miles's second marriage), General John Hunt Morgan (Confederate General from Kentucky), Archibald MacLeish (American modernist poet), Humphrey Bogart (stage and film actor, the most outstanding male star of Classic American Cinema), Thomas Lanier, *Tennessee*, Williams (one of the foremost American playwrights of the 20th century), and Princess Diana Spencer and her sons.⁶⁸⁸

⁶⁸⁵ <http://www.thepeerage.com/p47157.htm#i471570> citing: L. G. Pine, *The New Extinct Peerage 1884-1971: Containing Extinct, Abeyant, Dormant and Suspended Peerages with Genealogies and Arms* (London, U.K., Heraldry Today, 1972), 271. As this resource is not available online, I have been unable to confirm the information, 10/13/2020; [https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/William_Morgan_\(of_Tredegar\)#CITEREFWillis1750](https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/William_Morgan_(of_Tredegar)#CITEREFWillis1750), 10/13/2020.

⁶⁸⁶ *Global, Find a Grave*, Memorial #195959212 (merged record - the bio refers to Sir William Morgan, not William Morgan merchant (though the dates fit *his* life) and has "buried Becon Cathedral Churchyard, Brecon, Powys, Wales." (ancestry.com), 10/13/2020.

⁶⁸⁷ <http://www.historyofparliamentonline.org/volume/1558-1603/member/morgan-william-i-1569> may be a possibility, though dates don't 'fit', 10/13/2020.

⁶⁸⁸ <https://www.geni.com/people/Elizabeth-Morgan>, 10/13/2020.



Thomas Morgan (1534 - 1603) of Machen and Tredegar. In 1559, He Married Elizabeth Bodenham (b. 1538). He built **Pencoed Castle** (pronounced "Pen-koyd"), set in around 370 acres of rolling farmland about one (1) km. from the village of Llandeud in Monmouthshire (now the county of Gwent). The castle is a fortified Tudor manor house thought to have been built during the first quarter of the 16th century on the site of a moated Norman castle held in 1270 by Sir Richard de la More and in 1306 by Maurice and Walter de Kemeys. The statue in front is of Lord Tredegar, a Morgan who took part in Britain's most famous military tragedy – the Charge of the Light Brigade during the Crimean War. The manor house appears to incorporate parts of the earlier castle.

In 1485, the Battle of Bosworth ended the Wars of the Roses and it became possible to build a large family home without having to worry too much about arrow slits and gun ports. Pencoed reflects a peaceful (and for some) a prosperous period in Wales. Nearby Llanmartin Church once boasted a carefully wrought chapel with carved effigies of an ancient Morgan knight and his wife – but a later owner of the manor stripped the lead from the chapel roof and time and decay made this memorial less memorable. Today the entire estate has fallen into disrepair. But good news – the castle was “recently” bought by a local businessman named Mr. Peter Morgan, so it is Morgan-owned once more! Mr. Morgan says that respect for the integrity of the castle and its environs will govern all decisions in any repair work done on the castle.

On 17 September 2020, the castle was sold again, for 1,100,00£ (without the trailer!).

See CASTLEist.org and click on the Allsop Auctions link for additional photos and information. This older image from hausegenealogy.com/morgan, 10/2/2021.

Mr. Freeman in his *Memorial of Captain Thomas Abbey*, writes:

Miles Morgan's grandfather, Sir William Morgan of Tredgar in Wales, entertained Charles I for two days in July 1645, a month after the King's decisive defeat at Naseby. Then, four generations back in the line, he finds Thomas Morgan, of Machen, serving as esquire of the body to the first of the Tudor Kings, Henry VII. From Thomas Morgan of Machen the line is traced down to Sir Henry Morgan, the famous buccaneer who ravaged the Spanish Main, capturing entire Spanish squadrons and holding up large cities for ransom. He sacked and destroyed Old Panama in 1671, and though rebuilt, its ruins are still impressive. Despite his cruelty and looting, James II knighted him and made him governor of Jamaica. *Thankfully* he left no descendants.⁶⁸⁹



Front view of **Tredegar** (House)
from *The History of Monmouthshire* by David Williams, 1793;
Illustration by John Gardner.⁶⁹⁰

⁶⁸⁹ Freeman, *Memorial of Captain Thomas Abbey*, reprint: 104.

⁶⁹⁰ <https://europeupclose.com/article/scandals-tales-tredegar-house-wales/> for stories of the house.
<http://www.hausegenealogy.com/morgan.html>, 10/13/2020.

One can trace back through the Morgan ancestry in printed texts and online. The website I found most helpful and humorous is <http://www.hausegenealogy.com/morgan.html>. I am choosing not to reprint all the ancestral generations of Morgans, as they are in the ancestry of Elizabeth (Morgan) Morgan, *possible* mother to Miles, James, and John.

Another factor in all of this could be confusion about place names in Wales. While there is undoubtedly a town of Llandaff on the Glamorgan Peninsula of Wales, there are no modern places by the names Diveru, Divern, Ddrrw, Thurrow, or Llanfabon which I have been able to locate.

One researcher wrote:

It is a rather natural assumption to loosely reason something like this: The Morgan brothers sailed from Bristol. William of Diveru moved to Bristol. Diveru is an early spelling or a misspelling of Divern. Therefore, William of Divern is William, who married Elizabeth Morgan and by the physical association in Bristol, the father of John, Miles, and James Morgan. Of course, there are holes in this argument such that a tank could pass through them.⁶⁹¹

Another wrote:

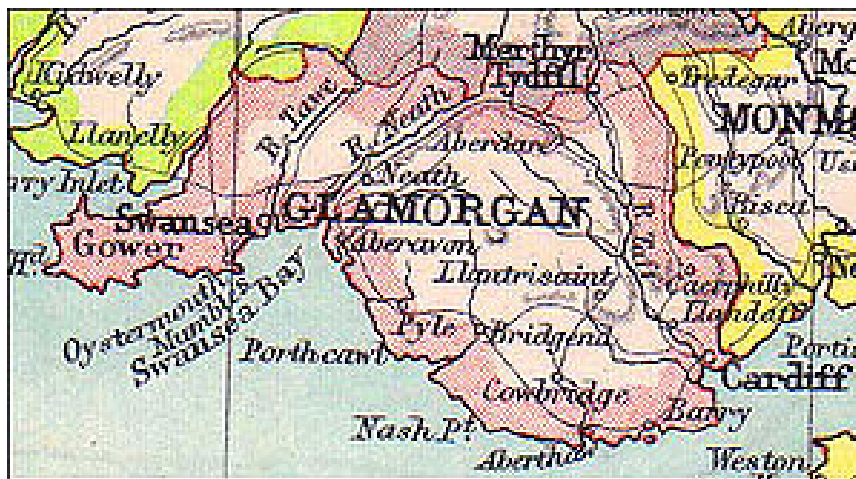
Though I am pleased to find information that proves or disproves, in this case, what has been traditionally handed down as fact; I would have enjoyed a study of the history of Wales, and other Morgans, including John Morgan, Knight of the Holy Sepulcher and the eldest son of Ieuan ap Morgan ap Llewelyn ap Morgan ap Llewelyn ap Ivor, of Tredegar, who married Angharad, daughter, and heiress of Sir Morgan Meredydd, last lord of Caerleon, 1333.⁶⁹²

At this point in my research, I am thankful that those before me have researched and found the conflicts in sourced data and made that information known. It does make the older texts of family histories a bit less "romantic," and even with current clarification of ancestors and descendants, many "stories" still may make their way through generations. My hope is the readers of this volume will have data to compare and come to their own conclusions.

One last note about the Morgan family line: If one follows back in time, it all begins with an ancestor named: Triffyn Farfog mac Aeda Brosc, Brenin Dyfed, b. between 380 and 434. Husband of Gwledyr ferch Clotri; father of Aircol Lawhir ap Triffyn, King Of Demetia.

⁶⁹¹ <https://www.geni.com/people/Elizabeth-Morgan>, 10/13/2020.

⁶⁹² Williams, Taliesin ab Jolo, and Williams, Edward cogn. Jolo Morgamog, *Jolo Manuscripts; A Selection of Ancient Welsh Manuscripts, in Prose and Verse, with English Transl. and Notes by ---*, (N.p., Rees, 1848), 612, (books.google.com), 10/13/2020. Note: Ap denotes "son of," and Ferch denotes "daughter of." These were used because there were no surnames in Wales until about 1400, so it was the only way you could tell people apart.



A thousand years ago in non-fiction history, Cærfyrddinshire, a province in South Wales, was inhabited by a tribe who the Romans called the Demetæ. I wondered if there was a connection with dementia (a memory disorder). I found this: “Demetae/Demntai/Demo(n)... etc., meaning *strong water, trading stream, and dementia* - demens, dement- 'out of one's mind.'” From Vampires to Dementia, genealogy has its demons!

Gilbert Family Ancestry

Gilbert is a surname of Germanic origin. The English-language name is derived from Giselbert, a medieval personal name composed of the following Germanic elements: *gisil*: pledge, hostage, noble youth, and *berth*: bright, famous.

Prudence Gilbert, first wife of **Miles Morgan**, b. ca. 1615 - 1620⁶⁹³; d. Springfield, Hampshire County, Massachusetts 14 Jan (the 11th mo *Old Style*) 1660; ⁶⁹⁴ m. Salem, Essex, Massachusetts, 1636 or 1643, Prudence (Prudens) Gilbert.⁶⁹⁵

Recounting the romantic story of Prudence Gilbert and Miles Morgan, “they met either on the docks in Bristol or aboard their immigrant ship, the *Mary*. When they landed at Boston, Miss Gilbert, with her parents, went to join the colony at Roxbury, while young Morgan made his way to the wilds of Western Massachusetts.” Some sources indicate her family settled at Beverly,

⁶⁹³ AGBI, Vol 62:406 referencing the Gen. Column of the Boston Transcript has a date of 1620, (ancestry.com), 6/13/2020; U.S. and International Marriage Records, 1560 – 1900, (ancestry.com), 10/13/2020.

⁶⁹⁴ Colonial Families of the USA, 523: m. 1636, (ancestry.com), 10/13/2020; New England Marriages to 1700, Vol 2, 1057, 1643? (americanancestors.org), 10/13/2020.

⁶⁹⁵ Massachusetts Vital and Town Records 1620-1988, Springfield Deaths, 177; (ancestry.com) 10/13/2020; U.S., Find a Grave Index, 1600s-Current, Memorial #120280145, incorrectly lists 14 Nov 1660 as the date of death; has bio and children, (ancestry.com), 10/13/2020.

Massachusetts, now a suburb about 30 miles north of Boston. Many of these same sources, as well as the family histories I have referenced for Miles Morgan, give her father's name as Thomas Gilbert.

I searched for immigration records for the Gilbert family, as well as for the Morgan brothers. Though there were ships named *Mary*, and other configurations of the name, I did not find either surname on any ships' passenger lists. I did discover a Thomas Gilbert and his two grown sons, Johnathan and Thomas Jr., listed in *Immigrant Ancestors* by Frederick A. Virkus.⁶⁹⁶ There is also a Deputy Governor Matthew Gilbert recorded, but he arrived in the colonies in 1628.

This Thomas Gilbert Sr., immigrated to Braintree, Massachusetts, having land granted in 1639/40, and may have removed to Windsor, Connecticut, then to Wethersfield. Extensive records exist from his life in Yardley, Worcester, England. He was b./bapt. Yardley, Worcester, England 25 Apr 1589; m. Aug. 29, 1610, Elizabeth Bennett. The *Yardley Parish Register* holds baptisms for six of their seven known children, as well as the burial of a previously unknown infant child. There is no daughter Prudence listed.

Thomas Gilbert Sr. died in Wethersfield before 5 September 1659, date of the Inventory of his estate. An entry in the medical journal of John Winthrop, Jr., doctor and former governor of Massachusetts, indicates that he cared for Thomas Gilbert Sr. in his final days, describing Thomas as a 77-year-old in 1659. His wife, whose name does not appear in colonial records, apparently died at nearly the same time, since the estate Inventory includes funeral charges for both Thomas Gilbert and his wife. On 6 February 1663/4, his estate was distributed to his heirs: his six sons, Jonathan, Thomas, Ezekiel, Josiah, Obadiah, and John Gilbert, and his daughter, Sarah Jenkins. Again, no mention of a daughter Prudence Gilbert/Morgan.

Her parents and ancestors remain a mystery. If you want to read the records and accounts, there is an article in *The American Genealogist*, by Douglas Richardson, Vol 67, 161-166⁶⁹⁷, which offers a thorough review of Thomas Gilbert Sr. and his family. It seems, Thomas Jr. was married to a woman named Lydia Ballat/Ballard, who sadly was persecuted and hung as a witch.⁶⁹⁸

⁶⁹⁶ Virkus, *Immigrant Ancestors*, 33.

⁶⁹⁷ *The American Genealogist*, Vol 67: 161 Vol 67, 161-166: Douglas, Richardson, M.A., *The English Origin of Thomas Gilbert of Braintree, Mass and Wethersfield Conn., with a note on Lydia Gilbert, Executed for Witchcraft in 1654*, (americanancestors.org), 10/13/2020.

⁶⁹⁸ <https://fischernarrative.wordpress.com/thomas-gilbert-1589-1659/> offers much the same information with images and links, 10/13/2020.

As I finish this generation in the Abbey family history and Captain Thomas Abbey III, the Revolutionary War patriot, whose life has been the most well-known to me; I am delighted to have learned more about Penelope (Terry) Abbey, a revolutionary woman in her work as a doctor and midwife. I remember all the women, though they may not have been recognized for some accomplishment, or targeted in colonial society for some offense. Born of immigrant ancestors, whose lives may have been ordinary, these women are vital to their descendants' very life and existence. It is a small hope that the act of writing down their names, of listing their vital statistics, as well as known facts about their lives; their parents, when known, and their children, will afford them recognition and remembrance.

*Remember, remember always, that all of us, and you and I especially,
are descended from immigrants and revolutionists.* Franklin D. Roosevelt



ENDING COMMENTS

To be Continued...

Join me as the story of the Abbey family unfolds in Volume Two, which features Peter Abbey, son of Captain Thomas and Penelope Terry Abbey, and his wife Hannah Alden. Later in his life, Peter, a widower, moves with his son and my ancestor, Seth Alden Abbey to New York State and eventually to the Western Reserve of Connecticut – modern day Ohio.

Hannah Alden Abbey's family tree extends back to John Alden of the *Mayflower* and the branches extend over seven generations in America and back in time to Great Britain. We will meet patriots, revolutionaries, Puritans, and those seeking religious freedom; Quakers and those persecuted for their beliefs; military men, and pathfinders, male and female, who made their way in this country between the time of the American Revolution and the eve of its Civil War.

Volume Three will then take the Abbey family from Ohio, across the United States. Allied families will again come from Great Britain, and also from Ireland and Germany. Beginning with Seth Alden Abbey, the five generations covered will conclude with my mother, Julia Abbey Ashman (1918 – 1985).

Volume Four will outline my Ashman ancestry and feature stories of England, Ireland and Scandinavia; the California Gold Rush, San Francisco's 1916 earthquake, the 1918 Flu and both World Wars. It will conclude with my father Col. Alfred Ashman (1911 - 1971), 1935 West Point Graduate and career U.S. Army Officer.

A**Abbe**

Abigail, 125, 210
 Benjamin, 213
 Elizabeth, 19, 61
 Francis, 18, 21
 Francisca, 21
 Hannah, 125
 Helen, 18
 Isabel (___), 17
 Jane, 21
 Joan (Smith), 18, 19, 26
 Joane, 18
 John, 17, 18, 61
 John & Hannah (Boardman), 61, 139
 John Jr., 36, 38, 39, 42, 58, 63, 67, 99, 100, 161
 John Sr. (Immigrant), 11, 15, 19, 21, 25, 33, 35 - 40, 42, 43, 44, 52, 58, 60, 63, 67, 78, 82, 213
 Mary, 18, 19, 36, 38, 124, 139, 161, 210
 Mary (___), 33, 35, 38, 40, 73, 210
 Mary (Pease), 126, 127, 190, 194, 209, 221
 Mercy/Marah (Mariah), 36
 Obadiah, 36, 39, 43, 52, 60, 62, 64, 66, 67, 133
 Rebecca, 36, 39, 42
 Rebecca (Pease/Pierce), 127
 Reginald, 21
 Richard, 61
 Robert, 17, 20, 21, 24
 Samuel, 36, 38, 42,
 Sarah, 36, 61, 124
 Sarah (Fairfield), 66 - 69, 70, 72, 106, 108, 113, 118, 119, 124
 Sarah (Fairfield) (Needham), 68, 81
 Tabitha, 61, 125
 Thomas Jr., 19
 Thomas Jr. (Lt.), 61, 64, 69, 124, 125, 127 - 129, 138, 139, 209
 Thomas Sr., 36, 38, 39, 42, 43, 58 - 67, 69 - 71, 116, 118, 124, 125, 127

Thomas Sr. of Roade, 18 - 20, 26
 William, 21

Abbey

Abigail, 210
 Henry Gilbert, 213
 Mary, 210
 Obadiah, 210
 Penelope, 210
 Penelope (Terry), 209, 219, 220, 226, 227, 247, 290
 Peter, 211, 213
 Seth Alden, 213, 291
 Simeon, 211
 Thomas III (Capt.), 64, 126, 209, 211, 213, 214, 218, 219, 227, 290
 Thomas IV, 2

Abell

Henry, 6

Adams

Anna, 180
 Eleanor/Ellen (Newton), 182, 183, 185 - 188, 189
 Frances (Vassall), 181, 192
 James, 139, 179 - 183, 185, 190, 192, 193, 198
 John (President), 225
 John Sr., 128, 179, 182, 183, 185 - 187, 192, 193
 Margaret, 139, 179, 180
 Mary, 180
 Nathaniel, 95
 Richard, 180
 Sarah, 95
 Susan, 183
 William, 180

Alden

Hannah, 211, 291
 John, 177, 187, 189, 273, 274, 291
 Joseph, 177

Alderman

John, 149, 150

Alger

Thomas, 266

Allerton

Isaac, 197

Allin

John, 181

Allis & Herrick

Dr., 105

Andrews

Edmund, 115
 Mary (Fairfield), 105, 106
 Nicholas, 105
 Paul, 105
 Peter, 204, 206
 Rachel (Vassall), 204
 Tabitha, 105
 William, 159

Appleton

John Esq., 42, 43
 Samuel (Maj.), 42, 58, 61, 101, 278

Artys

Joan, 170

B**Baker**

Samubel, 287

Balch

Freeborn, 95, 105
 John & Agnes, 92

Ballat/Ballard

Lydia, 290

Barber

John & Faith, 150

Baritin

Rufus, 263

Barnes

John, 185

Bartholomew

Henry, 84, 85

Batchelder

Esther, 95
 John, 162
 Joseph, 77
 Joseph & Elizabeth (Dickenson), 162

Beauchamp

Edward & Mary (Metcalf), 162
 Elizabeth, 162, 163

Bement

Benjamin, 61
 Dennis (Capt.), 124
 Edmund & Priscilla (Warner), 124

- John, 61
John & Martha (Dennis), 231
Mary (Abbe), 127
William, 231
- Benham**
John, 234
- Bennett**
Elizabeth, 209
Elizabeth (Goodell), 169
Henry (William), 162
Peter & Elizabeth (Fielder), 162
- Bertram**
Agnes, 117
- Besson**
John, 100
- Bicknell**
Ebenezer & Mary (___), 210
- Bicknell**
Josiah, 210
- Bird**
Hannah, 272
- Bishop**
Thomas, 62
- Blackwell**
Elizabeth, 226
- Bliss**
Elizabeth, 277, 279
John Jr., 237
Thomas & Margaret (Hulins), 240, 272, 277, 279
- Boardman**
Daniel Noyes, 61
Hannah, 61
Hannah Mary (Wright), 61
- Boone**
Daniel, 131, 269
- Booth**
Elizabeth, 142
Simeon, 64
William, 62
Zachariah, 62, 239
- Bosworth**
Mary, 244
Nathaniel, 244
Nathaniel & Bridget (Pierce) (Lobdell), 246
- Bourough**
Judith, 222
- Bradford**
Gov. William, 57, 95, 190, 198, 200, 212, 251
- Brewster**
Martha (Wadsworth), 137
- Bridges**
Susan, 256
- Bromley**
Mary, 204
- Brown/e**
Abraham, 111, 116, 118
Margaret (Dame), 268
Samuel, 195
William, 79, 268
- Buckett**
Marie/Mary, 186
- Bulfinche**
John, 150
- Bull**
Ephraim, 251
Ezekiel, 251
Jirah, 250, 251
- Bunker**
George, 76, 77
- Burr**
Esther (Edwards), 137
- Burroughs**
John, 64
- Burt**
Daniel J., 60
John, 241
Johnathan, 243, 245, 277, 279
- Burton**
Thomas, 196
- Bush**
Johnathan, 62, 210
Ruth, 210
- Byekinir**
John, 155
- C**
- Carder**
Richard, 261, 262, 265
- Carrell/Carroll**
Nathaniel, 148
- Cartwright**
Abraham & Joan (Ware), 203
Frances, 203
- Chapin**
Cicely (Penny), 134
Eliphalet, 127, 132
John, 126
Mary, 132
Nathaniel, 124
Samuel (Deacon), 124, 126, 283, 306
Thomas & Sarah (Wright), 124
- Chauncy**
Rev., 196
- Chester**
John (Col.), 211
- Child**
Dr. Robert, 196
Robert, 197
- Church**
Benjamin (Capt.), 254
Elizabeth (Vassall), 206
Henry, 204, 206
- Clark**
Mary, 271
- Clark/Clearke**
Fayth, 146, 155
- Clarke**
John, 37, 155
- Cobbett**
Rev. Thomas, 111
- Cockson**
Mary, 267
William, 268
- Coggeshall**
Mary, 251
- Cole**
John & Susanna (Hutchinson), 253
Susanna, 253
- Collier**
William, 196
- Collins**
Ann, 232
Daniel, 61
Eliphalet, 210
Nathaniel & Abigail (Pease), 210
Rev. Nathaniel & Alice (Adams), 232

Colton

George, 274
Josiah, 139

Conant

Roger, 90, 92, 94

Cook

John, 196
John & Mary (Roote), 161
Patience, 161

Cooley

Benjamin, 234, 235
Mary, 237
Obadiah, 241
Sarah, 271

Cooper

Mrs., 193

Corey

Giles, 134, 162, 163

Corwin

Elizabeth (Winslow), 188

Cotton

Rev. John, 73, 117, 146, 156

Cowper/Couper/Cooper

Alles, 22
William, 22

Coy

Richard, 76, 82, 95 - 97, 99

Craddock

Matthew, 197

Crane

Benjamin, 231, 232
Isaac, 232
Martha (Boardman), 234

Crowther

Maise, 163, 171, 174, 175

Crumpton

Francis, 43

Cummings

Ann, 142, 143
Isaac, 142
Margaret or Anne ___, 142

D**Dade**

Henry, 161

Dand

John, 196

d'Aubigne

William, 112

Davenport

Humphrey, 198

Davis

Deborah, 61
Kelly, 221
Rebecca, 180

de Burgh

Elizabeth, 115

de Clifford

John, Lord Clifford, 115
Mary, 115

de Everingham

Adam, Knight, 2nd Lord
Everingham, 117
Margaret, 117

de Hainaut

Philippe (Queen Philippa),
115

de Hastings

Hugh, Knight of Elsing, 117

de La See

Lady Joan (Jane), 115, 117
Martin, Knight, 115

de Lacy

John, 112

de Mortimer

Edmund, 3rd Earl of March,
115

de Pease

Sir Robert (the Smythe), 156

de Warenne

Ela, 117
Isabel, 117

d'Eiville

Joan, 117
John, Knight of Adlingfleet,
117
John, Knight of Egmonton,
117

Denis

Mary, 162

Dickenson

Anne, 204
Elizabeth, 162, 293

Dillis

Lydia, 227

Dinham

Muriel, 117

Dodge

Goodwife, 101
John, 100
Prudence (Fairfield), 95
Richard, 83
William (Lt.), 95, 100, 103, 105
Zebulon, 95

Douglas

John (Col.), 211

Downing

Margaret, 232
Nathaniel & Margaret
(Pynchon), 232

Dumbleton

John, 276

E**Eames**

Damaris, 187
Mark, 187

Earle

Ralfe, 261

Edward III, King of

England, 57, 108, 112 -
115, 117

Edwards

Matthew, 81, 82, 84, 85, 87,
92, 96
Rev. Johnathan, 71, 126, 127,
130, 136
Robert, 81
Robert Jr., 81
Thomas, 43

Eggleston

Hannah, 237

Eldred

Anna, 257
Charles, 256, 257
Daniel, 254
Elizabeth, 253
Elizabeth (Miller), 253
James, 253
John, 251, 253, 256, 257
Mary, 249, 253, 256, 257, 262
Nicholas, 252
Robert, 256

- Samuel & Elizabeth (Miller), 255
 Samuel Jr., 253
 Samuel Sr., 253 - 257
 Thomas, 251 - 254, 256, 257
 Thomas & Anna (Watson), 255
 Thomas Jr., 257
 William, 252, 257
 William of Bury, 254
- Eldred/Eldredge**
 Daniel, 254
 Robert, 256
- Eldredge**
 Samuel (Samwill), 254
- Elme**
 William II, 289
- Elme/Elmes**
 Catherine, 268
 Elizabeth, 267
 Isabel, 267, 268
 John, 266 - 269
 Nicholas, 268
 Richard, 267
 Robert, 268
 Thomas, 267, 269
 William, 257, 258, 266 - 268
- Elsworth**
 John, 62
- F**
- Fairfield**
 Abigail, 95
 Benjamin, 76, 82, 83, 85, 86, 92, 96
 Elizabeth, 60, 83, 86, 87, 95, 104, 105
 Elizabeth (*Knight*), 90, 91
 Elisabeth/Elizabeth, 295
 John, 75
 John (Sedley), 108
 John Jr., 76, 78, 87, 92, 97, 100, 108
 John Sr., 63, 73, 75 - 79, 81 - 84, 90 - 97, 106, 107, 223, 295
 Joseph, 95
 Mary "Marah", 95, 104 - 106
 Nathaniel, 95, 104, 105
 Prudence, 95, 105
 Samuel, 94
- Sarah, 36, 57, 60, 68 - 70, 94
 Sarah (Geare), 76, 100
 Sarah (Needham), 69
 Sarah (Skipper), 52, 68, 94, 99, 109, 110
 Skipper, 95
 Tabitha, 95
 Walter Sr. (Ens.), 43, 60, 63, 68, 69, 76, 90, 100 - 107, 109, 111, 116, 118, 125
 Walter III, 95
 Walter Jr., 95, 102, 105
 William (Deacon), 52, 95, 104, 105 - 107
- Farlow**
 Michael, 105
- Felmingham**
 Francis, 79
- Felt**
 Samuel, 61
- Ferman**
 John, 61
- Field**
 Darby, 263
- Fisher**
 Richard, 112
 Sarah, 94, 109 - 112, 116, 118
- Fisk/e**
 John, 79, 85
 Martha, 42
 Rev. John, 37, 82, 83
 Thomas, 42, 99 - 101
 William, 77, 85
- Fitz Thomas**
 Denise, 117
- Fitz William**
 Thomas, Knight, 117
 William, 117
- Founders**
 Thomas, 254
- Fowle**
 Thomas, 196
- Fowler**
 Joseph, 43, 63
- Franzius**
 Enno, 131
- Freeborne**
 John, 203, 206
 Judith (Vassall), 206
- Freeman**
 Alden, 209, 211, 213, 216, 220
- French**
 Ephraim, 62
- Friday**
 William (Bill), 65, 221
- Frost**
 Hannah, 95
- Fuller**
 Bridget (Lee), 186
- G**
- Gaines**
 Samuel, 277
- Gardiner**
 Abigail, 271
- Gardner**
 Benoini, 253
 Thomas, 92
- Gear/Geare/Geer**
 Elihu, 125, 127
 Elizabeth, 227
 Moses Maverick, 60
 Sarah, 76
 Sarah (Abbe), 61, 66, 67, 105, 125
 Shubael, 61
 Shubael & Sarah (Abbe), 125
 Thomas, 61, 62, 125
 Thomas Jr., 125
 William, 76
- Geoffrey Plantagenet,**
 Count of Anjou, 57, 108, 113, 117
- Giffard**
 John, 100
- Gilbert**
 Ezekiel, 290
 Gov. Matthew, 290
 John, 290
 Johnathan, 290
 Obadiah, 290
 Prudence, 271- 273, 276, 289, 290
 Sir Humphrey, 284
 Thomas Jr., 290
 Thomas Sr., 290
 William, 27

Gleason

Isaac, 62

Glover

Peletiah, 61, 63

Goldsmith

Hannah (?), 36

Mary/Marah (Perkins), 36, 38

Richard, 36, 38, 42, 43, 52, 63,
70

wife of Goodman, 81

Goodale

Abraham, 159, 161

Catherine (___), 158, 161

Catherine/Katherine (___),
159

Charity (?), 36

Elizabeth, 158, 161, 163, 169,
170

Hannah, 162

Isaac, 36, 143, 161, 171, 173

Isaac Jr., 143

Jacob, 162, 163

John, 163

Margaret, 161

Margaret (Lazenby), 168

Mary, 138, 141, 158, 159, 161

Mary (Abbe), 36

Nehemiah, 161

Robert, 147, 158, 159, 162 -
164, 167 - 171

Dr. Robert, 171

Sarah, 162

Thomas, 170, 171

Zachariah, 161 - 163, 169

Goodell

David Harvey, 157

Rev. William D.D., 157

Gorton

Samuel, 262

Gott

Charles, 99, 100, 101

Gray

Ruth, 89

Thomas, 92

Thomas & Ruth, 89

Greene

Dorcas, 146

Griswold

Josiah (Maj.), 211, 212

Guppi/Guppy

Reuben, 147, 167

H

Haggett

Henry, 101

Haines

Richard, 148

Hale

Thomas, 62

Hamelin, 5th Earl of

Surrey, 117

Harberd

Elysabeth/ Elizabeth, 19, 21,
23, 27

John, 19, 21, 23

Raffe, 22

Hardy

Jane/Joan, 234, 241, 242

Harmon

Hannah, 142, 232

John (Capt.), 211

Harris

William, 250

Hasteler

William, 215

Hastier

Thomas, 202

Hastings

Edward, Knight of Elsing,
117

Elizabeth, 117

John, Esquire of Elsing, 115

Haven

Hannah, 161

Richard & Susanna
(Newhall), 161

Hawes

Frances (Edwards), 82 - 84, 93

Robert, 81 - 85

Thomas, 82

Hayward

Nathaniel, 59

Thomas, 59

Hazard

Elizabeth (Helme), 251

Robert & Mary (Brownell),
249

Stephen, 249

Thomas, 250

Helme

Christopher, 247

Christopher Jr., 262

Christopher Sr. (Sgt.), 229,
257 - 259, 260 - 266, 280

Dorcas, 248, 258

Dorcas (Lnuck), 247

Elizabeth, 249

John, 247, 248, 267, 268

Margaret, 249

Margaret (Rouse), 261

Mary, 227 - 229, 231, 247

Mary (Eldred), 251, 253

Mercy, 248, 249

Rouse, 227, 249 - 251, 253,
257, 262

Rouse Jr., 249

Samuel, 229, 247

Samuel II, 247

Thomas, 247, 272

William, 247, 248, 250, 261,
266 - 268

Helme/Elme

John, 267

William, 267

Helme/Elme/Elmes

John, 248, 267, 268

William, 268

Hersome

Mary, 82

Hetherly

Mr., 193

Hibbard

David, 227

Hildyard

Katherine, 117

Lady Isabel, 116, 117

Peter, Esq. Knight of

Winestead, 115, 117

Robert, Knight of Winestead,
115, 117

Hill

Lion, 198

Valentine, 263

Hilles

Elin, 82, 93

Hobbs

Mary, 143

Holden

Margaret, 253
Randall & Frances (Dungan),
253

Holyoke

Elizur, 276
Mary (Pynchon), 282

Hooker

Rev. Thomas, 146

Horton

Jeremiah, 237, 240
Nathaniel, 62

House

Walter, 254

Houston

Sam, 157

Howard

Thomas, 62

Hubbard (Hobart)

Joshua, 193

Hulm

Obadiah, 150

Hutchinson

Anne (Marbury), 137, 258

Hutton

Richard, 43, 63, 100

Hyckes

Margaret, 154
Richard & Emie (Emma), 154,
155
Thomas, 155

I**Irish**

Joseph, 247

Isbell

Ann, 150
Robert, 150

J**James**

Jane/Joan, 183
Mary, 248

Jenkins

Sarah (Gilbert), 290

Jenny

John, 185

Johnson

John, 111, 116, 118

Jones

Ann/a (Vassall), 206
Benjamin, 62, 67
John, 204, 206
Thomas, 64, 65

K**Kent**

Humphrey, 198

Kibbe

Elisha, 140
Isaac, 216

Kilham/Killam

Austin/Austen, 162
Austin/Austen & Alice
(Gorball), 162
Henry & Alice (Goodale), 162
Lot, 162

Killam

Austin, 79
Catherine/Katherine (___),
159
Daniel, 36, 76, 100
Henry and Alice (Goodale),
159
Lot, 143
Mary, 43
Sarah (Geare) (Fairfield), 100
Tabitha, 211

Kimball

Henry & Mary (Wyatt), 36
Rebecca, 43
Richard, 36, 43
Solomon, 95
Thomas, 95

King

Francis, 153
Seth (Capt.), 211, 212

King/Kinge/Kynge

Abraham, 202
Anna/Anne, 198, 199, 200
Anne, 200
Christopher, 200, 202
Daniel, 200
Daughter, 202
Edward, 202
Elynor, 202
Emme, 202
Frances, 202

George & Joane

(Lorran/Lorraine), 200
George Jr., 199, 200
George Sr., 199, 200, 202
James, 202
Joan, 203
John, 202, 203
John by West, 202
Judith, 200
Mary, 200
Priscilla, 202
Richard, 203
Robert, 202
Susan, 200
Thomas, 191, 199, 202
William, 202

Knight

Elizabeth, 89
Walter, 89, 90, 92
Walter & Elizabeth (Gunne),
90

Knight?

Elizabeth (___), 76, 90, 92

Knowles

Henry, 253
Martha, 253
William, 251

Knowlton

Mary, 36

L**Lathrop**

Rev. John, 195, 196

Laud

William, Archbishop of
Canterbury, 145, 160, 161

Lazenby

Margaret, 168

Le Despenser

Anne, 117

Leavett

Hannah, 244
John (Deacon), 244

Legard

Joan, 116, 117, 119
Ralph, 116, 117
Robert, 116, 117, 119

Legro

Peter, 63
Peter & Eliza, 105

Lennox
Charlotte (Ramsay), 137

Lewis
Anna, 193
John, 193

Lionel of Clarence (of
Antwerp), Duke of
Clarence, 115

Lnunk
Dorcas, 229, 247, 249

Lobdell
Ann, 234, 235, 237, 239, 243 -
245
Elizabeth, 243, 245
Isaac, 244, 245
James, 243
John, 244 - 246
Mary, 246
Nathan, 246
Nicholas, 243, 244, 246
Sarah, 246
Simon, 243, 253

Lord
Jeremiah, 149

Loring
Mary, 40

Lorraine /Lorran
Joanne, 192, 199, 201, 202, 209

Lorran
George & Anna (Agnes)
(Stone), 201

Lorran/Lurron
John, 200

Lumpkin
Anne, 256

M

Manning
Nicholas, 167

Mansfield
John, 244

Marbury
Rev. Francis, 259

Marshall
Edward & Mary, 250
Thomas, 250

Massasoit, 58, 177

Massey
John, 169

Mather
John, 145
Rev. Cotton, 70, 71, 111, 136,
145
Rev. Increase, 38, 70, 71

Matthews
John, 238, 239

Maund
Richard, 234

Maverick
John, 111, 116, 118
Samuel, 196

Maxcy/Maxwell
Alexander, 36

McClester
Eleanor, 125
Jane, 210

Meacham
Isaac, 143
Isaac Jr. (Lt.), 62

Mentor
Jane, 142

Merrick
Goodman, 275
Hannah, 277
Thomas, 277

Metacom
King Philip, 58, 59

Miller
Daniel, 255, 256
Elizabeth, 249, 253, 255
Faith, 189

Mirrick
Thomas, 279

Morel
John, 100

Morely
Anne, 117

Morgan
Bridget of Hayford, 285
Cwladis, 285
David, 271
Elizabeth, 284, 285, 288
Elizabeth (Bliss), 272, 277
Hannah, 219, 231, 237, 238,
269 - 271, 280
Henry, 269, 287

Isaac, 143, 232, 271
J.P. (John Pierpont), 272, 285
James, 280, 284, 288
John, 280, 284, 288
John (Knight of the Holy
Sepulcher), 288
John III, 272
Johnathan, 293, 300, 303
Justin, 269
Lydia, 271
Mary, 271, 274
Mercy, 271
Miles & Prudence (___), 269
Miles (Capt.), 219
Miles (Sgt.), 59, 235, 238, 269 -
280, 283 - 285, 287, 289
Nathaniel, 272, 279
Pelatiah, 271
Prudence, 271
Prudence (Gilbert), 269, 272,
276
Sir Henry, 287
Sir William of Diveru, 285
Sir William & Lady Elizabeth,
285
Sir William of Tredgar, 286
Thomas the Monk, 280
Thomas II, 285
Thomas of Machen, 286, 287
William, 283, 284

Mortimer
Elizabeth, 115

Mullins
Priscilla, 273, 274

Mussell
Thomas, 244

N

Nash
Judah Sr., 227

Needham
Daniel, 69
Sarah (Fairfield), 69

Newman
Rev. Samuel, 37, 38

Newton
Eleanor/Ellen, 182, 183, 185 -
188
John & Margaret___, 189

Nickerson

Elizabeth, 256

Niles

Nathaniel & Sarah (Sands),
249

Sarah, 249

Nille

John, 240

O

Orne

John, 167

Orsborne

Samuel, 62

Osborn

Mindwell, 142

P

Page

Abraham, 153

Palfrey

Alice/Else, 94

Elizabeth (Fairfield), 92, 94,
96Elizabeth (*Knight*) (Fairfield),
87, 92Peter, 86, 87, 89 - 92, 94 - 97,
99, 100

Parkman

John, 95

William & Elizabeth (____), 95

Parsons

Benjamin Jr., 232

Deacon B(n), 60

Hezekiah (Capt.), 124

Mary (Pope), 69

Nathaniel, 69

Philip Jr., 69, 105

Philip Sr., 69

Sarah (Abbe), 127

Pasco

Hugh, 142, 143

John, 231

John & Rachel, 231

Payne/Baynes

Elizabeth, 267

Pease

Abigail, 143

Abraham, 142

Alice, 155

Ann/a, 155

Daughter, 150, 153

David, 138, 147

Edward, 155

Elisha Marshall, 157

Elizabeth, 153

Ephraim (Capt.), 125

Hannah, 232

Isaac (Deacon), 142

James, 61, 142

James & Hannah (Harmon),
142

James Sr. (Sgt.), 61, 67, 139

Joan, 166 - 168

John, 146, 147, 153, 155

John (the Clothier), 154, 155

John (the Smythe) Sr., 155,
156

John III, 139

John IV, 139

John Jr. (Capt.), 66, 67, 124,
128, 138 - 140, 142, 158,
161, 179, 180

John Sr., 64, 122, 128, 141 -

145, 148, 153, 158, 168, 239

Johnathan, 139

Joseph, 139

Lettis, 155

Lydia (*West*), 141, 145, 153

Margaret, 139, 150, 155, 156

Margaret (Adams), 124, 128,
139, 179, 190Margaret (King), 141, 144,
148, 150, 153, 154Marie (*Rodans*), 148, 149

Mary, 61, 64, 121, 122, 124,

125, 128, 132, 138, 139, 142,
148, 153, 154, 158, 179, 232

Mary (Goodale), 142, 158

Nathaniel, 148

Peter, 168

Richard, 164, 166

Robert, 128, 141, 142, 146,
147, 150, 154, 155, 156

Robert, Sir (the Smythe), 156

Robert (the Locksmith), 144,
153, 154

Robert Jr., 144, 145, 147, 148

Robert Sr., 144 - 149, 153, 155,
156Samuel & Elizabeth
(Warner), 125

Sarah, 139, 148, 232

Susan, 153

Tabitha (Abbe), 127

Thomas, 154

William, 153

Pease/Pierce

Rebecca, 127

Peck

Nathaniel, 244

Pepper

Johnathan, 105

Percy

Elizabeth, 115

Henry, Knight, 115

Petchy

Anne, 200

Edward, 200

Petchy (continued)

Johan, 200

John, 200

William, 200

Peters

Rev. Hugh, 77, 78

Phelps

Hannah (Abbe), 127

Israel & Rachel (Jones or
Clark), 125

Noah, 125

Philippe of Clarence, 115

Phillips

Mary, 254

Zachariah, 111, 116, 118

Zachary, 111

Pierce

Bridget, 243, 246, 294

John, 271

Lydia (Morgan), 271, 280

Michael, 243

Rebecca, 61, 127

Pool

Wellington, 109

Pope

Gartrid, 168

Porter

John, 105

Potter

Ichabod & Martha (Hazard),
249

Ichabod (Lieut.), 249

Margaret (Helme), 251

Rev. Elam, 212
 Robert, 262
Prence
 Thomas, 196
Pringredays
 Edmund, 271
 Edmund & Mary (Morgan),
 277
Prior
 George, 210
Purcas
 Susan, 200
Putnam
 Nathaniel, 169
Pynchon
 John, 60, 123, 232, 236, 275,
 277, 283
 William, 60, 126, 141, 195,
 219, 234 - 237, 242, 272,
 274, 275, 282, 283
 William (Col.), 272
R
Raleigh
 Sir Walter, 284
Randall
 Abigail, 142
 Elizabeth, 239
Raylings
 Goodman, 193
Rhodes
 Hannah, 161
Robinson
 Mary, 110, 112, 116, 118
 William, 248
Rogers
 Daniel, 42, 43
 John, 200
Root
 Timothy, 139
Roots
 Timothy, 65
Rouse
 Margaret, 265
 Nicholas, 266
 Richard and Elizabeth (____),
 265
Russell
 Anne, 192, 203

Rust
 Nicholas, 271
S
Sampson
 John, 143, 148
Scott
 Ebenezer, 240
 John, 240, 241
 Judith (Borough), 203
 Stephen & Joan (Borough),
 203
 Thomas, 203
 William, 240
Sexton
 Joseph, 66, 67
Shaflen
 Michael, 149
Shaw
 John, 59
Shaw/e
 Abraham, 59
 Mary/Marie, 108
 Thomas, 108
Sheffield
 Nathan Sr., 247
Short
 Elizabeth, 105
Simmons
 John Jr. (Capt.), 211, 212
Simons
 William, 62, 64
Skepper
 Edward (Gent.), 110, 112, 116,
 118, 119
 Elizabeth, 111
 Jane, 111
 John, 111
 Katherine, 111
 Mary, 111
 Richard, 116
 Richard II, 119
 Richard, Gent., 117, 118
 Theophilus, 111
Skepper/Skipper
 Rev. William, 110 - 113, 116,
 118, 119
 Sarah, 68, 76, 94, 110 - 112,
 116, 118

Skepper/Skipper Cont.
 Sarah (Fisher), 68, 94, 109 -
 112, 116, 118
Skerry
 Francis, 169
Slyne
 Alice, 202
Smith
 Anne, 258, 266
 John, 161, 163, 167 - 169, 196
 Richard, 254
 Richard & Mary (Weed), 161
 Samuel, 79
Sollis
 Myghel, 167
Soule
 George, 186
Spencer
 Elizabeth, 139
 Mary, 139
Spratt
 Grisill, 258, 266
Squire
 Thomas, 79
Standish
 Miles/Myles, 184, 196
Stanton
 Thomas, 254
Stebbins
 Lieut, 60
 Thomas, 241
Stephens
 Mary, 95
Stimson
 James, 161
Strelly
 Margaret, 156
Sweet
 John, 255
Swinerton
 Job, 169
Symonds
 John, 139
T
Tarbox
 Rebecca, 95
 Samuel, 95

Terry

Ann (Lobdell), 239
 Ann/Anna, 237, 238
 Benjamin, 232
 Christopher Helme, 227
 Dorcas, 227
 Dr. Ebenezer (Capt.), 219,
 224, 227, 228, 229, 231, 247,
 269
 Ebenezer Jr., 227
 Elizabeth, 237
 Ephraim, 237
 Ephraim Sr. (Maj. Esq.), 237
 Hannah, 231
 Hannah (Morgan), 227, 231,
 269
 Hiram, 227
 Isaac, 231
 Jacob, 232
 John, 227
 Johnathan, 232
 Martha, 232
 Martha (Boardman) (Crane),
 231, 232, 233, 234
 Mary, 227, 237, 248
 Mary (Helme/s), 209, 219,
 229, 247
 Mehitable, 227
 Nathaniel (Ens./Maj.), 211,
 212, 226
 Penelope, 64, 125, 194, 209,
 216, 219, 221, 227, 230, 269,
 291
 Rebecca, 250, 257, 258
 Rev. Samuel, 250
 Samuel, 246
 Samuel II (Capt.), 231 - 234,
 237 - 241, 269
 Samuel Sr. (Sgt.), 64, 140, 219,
 227, 234, 235, 237, 238 -
 241, 243 - 245, 269
 Sarah (Bliss) (Scott), 240
 Selah, 227
 Stephen, 194, 234, 241, 242
 Stephen and Jane/Joan
 (Hardy), 234, 241
 Thomas, 237

Thropp

Macey, 227

Tibbals

Sarah, 36
 Thomas, 36

Totman

Thomas, 200

Trask

William, 92

Tully

John, 92

Tyrell

Maud, 156

V**Vane**

Gov. Henry, 259

Vassall

Anna, 193, 204
 Anna (Kinge), 198, 199
 Elizabeth, 204
 Frances, 139, 179, 180, 183,
 190, 191, 193, 200
 John, 193, 203, 204
 John (Gent.), 128, 190 - 193,
 198, 203 - 206
 Judith, 193, 203
 Judith (Bourough), 203, 204
 Margaret, 193
 Mary, 193, 204
 Rachel, 204
 Samuel, 193, 194, 204
 Stephen, 204
 Thomas, 204
 William (Esq.), 28, 181, 190 -
 192, 194 - 198, 200, 203, 206
 William Jr., 209

W**Walden**

Edward, 38

Waldron

Edward, 37
 Nathaniel, 63

Ward

Martha, 244
 Samuel, 244

Ware

Nicholas, 198

Warner

Daniel, 61
 Elizabeth (Abbe), 125
 John, 61
 John Jr., 61
 Nathaniel, 61

Tabitha (Abbe), 66, 67, 105,
 125

Warren

William Fairfield, 75

Warriner

Elizabeth, 125, 139

Watson

Anna, 255, 256
 John & Dorcas (Gardiner),
 249
 Marcy (Helme), 251
 Samuel, 249, 256

Watson/Wadsson

Thomas, 141, 148, 150

Wentworth

Christopher and Katherine
 (Marbury), 266
 Elizabeth, 115
 Phillip, Knight, 115, 117
 Priscilla, 258, 266

Wesley

Charles, 71
 Rev. John, 71, 130

West

Benjamin, 62
 Edward, 204, 206
 Joseph, 60, 62
 Lydia, 141, 145, 153

Wheelwright

Rev. John, 258 - 260, 262

Whetcombe

Symon, 195

Whipple

Joseph, 103
 Sarah, 103

White

Agnes/Ann, 112
 Anne, 155, 156
 Judith (Vassall), 196, 198
 Resolved, 193, 196 - 198, 204
 Rev. John, 194

White (Continued)

Richard, 156
 Susanna, 193, 204
 Thomas, 100
 William (Pilgrim), 193

Whitefield

Rev. George, 130

Whitmarsh

John Jr., 59
John Sr., 59

Willett

Colonel, 214

Winslow

Edward, 186, 188, 193, 196,
197
Eleanor/Ellen, 187
Elizabeth, 188
Ellen (Newton) (Adams), 188
Gilbert, 188
Job, 187
John, 188
Josiah, 188
Kenelm, 179, 181, 185, 187,
188
Kenelm II (Col.), 187
Nathaniel, 187
Samuel, 44

Winter

Christopher, 193

Lady Elizabeth (Baroness
Morgan of Tredegar), 285
Sir William of Lidney, 285

Winthrop

John (Gov.), 49, 55, 78, 128,
194, 197, 259
John Jr., 290

Wither

Susan, 154

Witherall

Rev. William, 180, 196

Wood

Judith, 95
Samuel, 95

Woodbury

John, 92

Woodruff

Frederick Orr, 39

Woods

John, 95

Woodward

Ezekiel, 98
Marah, 99

Worden

Ellen, 185
Mary ___, 185
Mercy, 187
Peter, 185

Wright

Abel, 237

Wyllys

Samuel (Col.), 211

Y**Yale**

David, 196

